



GOD OF SLAUGHTER

BOOK 12

Ni Cang Tian

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

God Of Slaughter

(杀神)

by

Ni Cang Tian

(逆蒼天)

Synopsis

Growing up parentless, Shi Yan, who was left with a large amount of inheritance money, bore a general disinterest in life.

The only times he felt alive was when adrenaline coursed thorough his veins. He quickly found that extreme sports, bungyjumping, cave diving & skydiving, gave him the biggest kicks. The bigger the adrenaline kick, the closer he was to death, the more alive he felt.

Waking up in a pile of dead bodies in an unknown land, after a diving adventure had ended disastrously, he quickly realizes the body he now possessed was not his own.

Follow Shi Yan as he explores this new world where danger lurks around every corner, and death is only a breath away; a world in which Shi Yan could not feel any more alive.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Sigma @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Sigma @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1101: Hand in Hand

Shang Ying Yue didn't believe Shi Yan.

Her father Shang Chen, the one who cultivated Fate power Upanishad, had traveled through many big star areas. He knew many secrets that other people would never know. From her father, she knew the peculiar condition of the ancient continent, which didn't allow the Soul Consciousness to sense. In this place, they could only use eyes to observe.

She didn't doubt what her father had told her. After she had arrived, she had confirmed the magical features of this area. She figured out that her Soul Consciousness and the soul energy would be restricted.

However, she still went there to check...

Shi Yan's performance was extraordinary. He could use earth and heaven energy of the ancient continent, which gave Shang Ying Yue a feeling that he had fused with this ancient continent. Shang Ying Yue was hesitant, indeed.

As Shi Yan had pointed the direction, Shang Ying Yue quietly moved towards it, using her secret treasure to hide her figure, aura, and even her life energy fluctuation. She moved invisibly towards that area.

A group of five warriors was moving fast but relaxedly through the swamp.

The five of them were at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm and the group included four old men and one woman. The four old men wore the same uniform, which was a dark blue fighting costume with a badge that had thick bones weaved on their left shoulders. Apparently, the four of them belonged to one force.

The woman looked around twenty-seven or twenty-eight years

old. She had beautiful, smiling eyes and she was wearing a thin, cedar yellow dress to cover her graceful body. It seemed like she didn't come from the same force as the other four.

A bony old man was the leader of the other four. His cheekbones rose high on his face and showed his malicious, ruthless contours. His snake eyes raked around the area as if he was searching for something.

He suddenly rose his hand to make a gesture.

The three men wearing the same uniform as him halted and observed gingerly. The graceful woman chuckled, but she also stopped. She pried, "Old Bai, the fight that we've detected stopped. Is it necessary to go there and check?"

Bai Hao looked to the area further ahead of them. He contemplated, his face dark. "We will go there to see. With our powers, we don't need to be afraid of anything." Pausing for a while, he said, "Mia, the Seven-colored Demonic Flower we just got is really precious... it's... good for me."

Mia, the only woman in this group, grinned and spoke indifferently, "It's good for me too."

Bai Hao arched his brows and nodded. "Then never mind. Just keep it carefully."

"I don't want to bother you with my issues," Mia smiled softly.

The five of them were talking while walking towards the bog where Shi Yan was hiding deep underground. Along the way, they were very cautious and watching everything abnormal around.

They didn't know there was someone watching them silently.

Of course, that was Shang Ying Yue.

Shang Ying Yue had used the secret treasure to hide her body and any vital signals. Her eyes gazed on Bai Hao. Her murderous aura arose as if she had a deep grudge against him.

Shang Ying Yue looked at that group of five for a while and then ran as if she was flying.

A burning soul emerged from the bog and sent Shang Ying Yue a soul message. "Did you see them?"

An electric beam flashed by a dry tree. Shang Ying Yue appeared. She gritted her teeth, her face icy cold. "I saw them. They are from the Bai family of Dry Bone Star Area and there was one woman I didn't know." Her eyelashes twitched. "So you can really detect people in this ancient continent?"

"Didn't you just confirm that?" Shi Yan's soul message was indifferent. "If we continue to fight, they will come here and follow the energy fluctuations. The five of them can kill the two of us."

"If you return the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread to me, I'll leave quickly," said Shang Ying Yue persistently.

"Impossible!" Shi Yan was enraged. "If you want to court death, I'm not afraid to continue fighting you."

"You're hiding underground and using the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread to refine your Ethereal Extent. As long as I reveal your location, the Bai family will come to kill you." Shang Ying Yue beamed a faint smile.

"Then we have nothing to discuss more," said Shi Yan impatiently.

"No, we can negotiate if you agree with me on one thing. Our previous resentment will be erased," said Shang Ying Yue all of a sudden.

"What is that?"

"Help me deal with those five. Use your supernatural sensibility to locate them. Help me kill them!" said Shang Ying Yue

resentfully.

"Do you hold any grudge against them?"

"We have a grudge with the Bai family. The Bai family in Dry Bone Star Area is the archenemy of my mother's family. They killed my grandfather and grandmother!"

Shang Ying Yue's face was cold. "Fantasy Mist Star Area is adjacent to Dry Bone Star Area. We have battles year round. The Bai family is the overlord of Dry Bone Star Area. They have some dark business with the God Clan. They've been plotting against us for hundreds of years. My grandfather was killed in one of the Bai family's operations. We can't stand under the same sky as the Bai family!"

"Why has your father not destroyed that family yet?"

"The Bai family is domineering. It's famous for its intimidating presence in many star areas. It's not easy to deal with them, anyway."

"They're approaching. You should hide first. We will discuss this later."

Then, Shi Yan dropped their conversation. His co-soul sank into the ground and entered his soul altar.

Shang Ying Yue pondered for seconds. Her shadow faded and then disappeared into the void.

After a while, Bai Hao's team emerged.

Bai Hao frowned and assessed the area. He carefully checked the streaks and traces around the bog. He confirmed, "The competences of both sides aren't normal."

The three Ethereal God Realm experts of the Bai family came like a breeze. They stopped by Bai Hao and shook their heads, indicating that they didn't find anything special or anybody

engaging in a fight.

"Oh, this trip was in vain," said Mia with disappointment. "If I had known it earlier, I would have stayed and searched more in that exotic land. Perhaps we could have found another Seven-colored Demonic Flower. Ah, I shouldn't have gone here with you."

"There are no meaningless fights in the ancient continent." Bai Hao observed the murky puddle inside the bog and said coldly, "Once a battle takes place, it means one thing: two people found a precious material at the same time!"

Taking a deep breath, Bai Hao said, "Perhaps there's something precious not far from us. Also, the other two have found us and left earlier. Maybe they have left the precious treasure they had fought for behind."

The other three warriors of the Bai family had their eyes brighten.

Mia teased them. "The Soul Consciousness is restricted in this ancient continent. How could they detect us? Moreover, they were fighting. How could they have extra energy to observe around? ... I don't buy it. If you want to investigate, you do it. I don't want to waste my time with you guys."

Then, Mia left early and didn't bother to bat her eyes at Bai Hao's team.

After Mia had gone, one warrior of the Bai family asked in a cold and harsh voice. "Da-ge, who is that woman? Why do you have to treat her with care like that? Is it true that our Bai family has to be afraid of her? I think we should kill her to take the Seven-colored Demonic Flower!"

Bai Hao sighed begrudgingly. "Don't act rashly. We can't offend this woman at the moment. If it was that easy, I would have killed her already."

"Who is she after all? Why do we have to give her a Guiding Fruit

while bringing and protecting her here? Who could scare our Bai family?" said the man angrily.

"Don't ask too much. What you should know, I will tell you. I won't tell you what you shouldn't know." Bai Hao frowned and scolded, "If you have extra energy, search around carefully to see if you can find any precious herbs or grass. We should take the chance when that woman isn't here to get it done. If we find anything, we can keep it."

"Sh*t, we found the Seven-colored Demonic Flower first and she claimed it. She pissed me off!"

"Control yourself! Before we've come to the ancient continent, I got the order to try our best to protect that woman. You guys have to watch over her!"

"Da-ge, who gave you that order?"

"The family's Head!"

". . ."

The three Ethereal God Realm experts of the Bai family shut their mouths. They stooped and felt dispirited as they had to accept their mission begrudgingly.

The four of them walked around and found no shadow or any good materials. Eventually, they had to leave reluctantly.

Swoosh!

A swift current shot out of the bog. Shi Yan slowly emerged from that rapid current.

Taking a deep breath, Shi Yan felt refreshed. Divine light moved in his eyes. He flickered his mind and the three powers in his tier of power Upanishad flashed one after another. Within one breath, he had shifted his energy between three powers.

When he used the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread to train his Ethereal Extent, many disasters happened to his Ethereal Extent

with different natural powers. However, his three powers Upanishads had dissolved them all. Afterward, he knew more abilities of the three powers Upanishads, especially the Star power Upanishad. He vaguely felt that he had touched the door of the next breakthrough.

He must have a significant understanding of the Star, Death and Life, and Space power Upanishads to break to Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. He had advanced his Star and Space powers Upanishad. Now he needed to focus on his Death and Life power Upanishad.

People with more than one powers Upanishad would find it hard to break through once they reached Ethereal God Realm. However, after each breakthrough, their powers and realms would advance even further. If he could master his powers Upanishads, he could use them to support each other. When that happened, his true power was going to be much more tremendous and powerful than the warriors with only one power Upanishad.

It was also the reason why it was hard to make further progress in cultivating different powers at the same time. They still tried to practice them. A warrior who had mastered more powers Upanishads was unquestionably stronger than ordinary warriors.

Shang Ying Yue's graceful figure suddenly appeared, her eyes still cold. She asked, "What's your plan?"

"I'll help you," Shi Yan smiled brightly, "but I have one condition."

"What's the condition?"

"I want the Seven-colored Demonic Flower that the woman keeps!" One of the reasons why he went to the ancient continent was to take this kind of strange flower, which could help rescue Yang Tian Emperor.

"Deal."

Chapter 1102: The General Situation of the Sea of Stars

The Seven-colored Demonic Flower was the factor for Yang Tian Emperor's recovery. It was also his primary goal when Shi Yan came to this ancient continent. This kind of demonic flower was able to wash the Soul Rotting Aphis in Yang Tian Emperor's head. When he heard that Mia kept the flower, he had made up his mind.

Inside the wet swamp, Shi Yan and Shang Ying Yue concealed their auras, trolling like two departed spirits towards Bai Hao and Mia.

Shang Ying Yue sometimes explained it to him...

Shi Yan frowned, his face severe. From Shang Ying Yue, he knew more information about this universe.

Different from Fiery Rain Star Area and Agate Star Area, Fantasy Mist Star Area was one of the strongest star areas in this vast universe. At the same time, this star area had the most prominent feature; Fantasy Mist Star Area wasn't a closed galaxy.

Agate Star Area and Fiery Rain Star Area were high-level star areas with intimidating Incipient God Realm experts with generally outstanding competences.

However, due to some reasons, there were space barriers between those star areas. Most of the space passages that connected to the other star areas were blocked. The forces of the two star areas had proactively cut off the connection to the outer world. They produced the goods they needed to shut themselves.

Since they didn't have many connections with the outer world, they didn't know much of the vast universe and the intimidation of the God Clan.

Just like that, the other significant star areas didn't have a high evaluation of Fiery Rain Star Area and Agate Star Area. They

thought that the others were a bunch of freaks who didn't understand how to develop the star area.

But this Fantasy Mist Area was different.

This star area wasn't closed. It had a close connection to the other big star areas as it had many routes and passages leading to different galaxies. There was no space barrier between this star area and the others.

—— They did it on purpose.

Fantasy Mist Star Area was the real door that opened to the immense sea of stars.

Thus, Shang Ying Yue's understanding of outer space and the other powerful forces everywhere wasn't something that Shi Yan could imagine or compare to.

Through her introduction, Shi Yan's knowledge of the top powerful forces in this universe gradually got clearer.

The truth wasn't so much different from what he had known. Ancient God Star Area where the God Clan stayed was no doubt the strongest star area in this universe. The God Clan was also the strongest force. They were the immemorial beast that crouched in the universe and could bite any prey it considered suitable at a favorable moment.

The twelve great families of the God Clan had ruled some smaller star areas. Each family had many experts like clouds in the sky. The God Clan was formed by the twelve great families, which was like a horde of bloodthirsty lions always trying to showcase their invading instinct.

The God Clan was so mighty and Ancient God Star Area was acknowledged as the strongest star area in the universe. They ruled forces from everywhere.

Although the God Clan and their Ancient God Star Area was dominant and ranked first, they hadn't really claimed the entire

universe. There were still some smaller star areas and forces that the God Clan didn't dare to provoke or declare war with.

There were some star areas, some forces, and some solid experts in this vast universe.

Due to the existence of such forces and star areas, the God Clan couldn't invade most of the star areas in the vast sea of stars and turn them into its private territory to make many clans and forces its vassals.

Hollow Fearsome Star Area, Fantasy Mist Star Area, and Dry Bone Star Area were some examples. These star areas had super powerful forces with peerless warriors. Although one force of them couldn't resist the entire God Clan, it was enough to withstand one or more families of the God Clan.

Usually, if it was not a disaster that could destroy their clan, the twelve families of the God Clan didn't really unite. Thus, Hollow Fearsome Star Area, Fantasy Mist Star Area, and Dry Bone Star Area had a slot in this immense sea of stars.

If the influential star areas like Hollow Fearsome Star Area, Fantasy Mist Star Area, and Dry Bone Star Area with some other star areas could stand still in the flood of God Clan's invasion, it meant that they were brutal and powerful enough.

They didn't shut themselves out.

Those star areas connected to each other and they exchanged things. Sometimes, they would create chances for warriors to discuss their powers and competencies. They were like allies of the same star areas. However, this kind of ally wasn't officially defined. They wouldn't always get along well. Sometimes, they would have disputes, which could even accelerate to a war.

However, once the God Clan dared to let its mental problem expand to these areas and affect their benefits, those allies would unite.

The union of powerful star areas from everywhere in the vast universe could resist the entire God Clan. Thus, they could restrict the God Clan and make them invade star areas that aren't in the union.

Since Fiery Rain Star Area and Agate Star Area had defended themselves alone for so many years, they weren't members of this union. Also, as they didn't receive any help or protection, they were the delicious meat in the God Clan's eyes. Of course, the God Clan would spend their best efforts to swallow them.

Gu God Sect of Hollow Fearsome Star Area, the Bai family of Dry Bone Star Area, the Wu family of Prosaic Star Area, and the Drifting Fire of Fantasy Mist Star Area were some of the famous, dominating forces in this vast universe besides the God Clan.

Those forces were loose in the union. They had secret disputes and competitions. Perhaps they had caused grudges. When the God Clan wasn't a threat to them, they would have a lot of battles. But if the God Clan invaded one of these star areas, they would unite to counter it.

Of course, after several fierce wars with the God Clan for thousands of years, God Clan didn't show any intent to invade any of those allies anymore.

Since they didn't have a common enemy, the allies in this loose union had been continuously fighting each other, which accelerated after many years and got more furious.

The war between the Drifting Fire of Fantasy Mist Star Area and the Bai family of Dry Bone Star Area became so fierce that their core experts were killed. Shang Ying Yue's grandfather was one of the leaders of the Drifting Fire. He was killed in the fight against the Bai family. This kind of grudge would never be untied.

"Lately, the Bai family seems to join hands with the God Clan. We received intelligence. The battleships of Ancient God Star Area and Dry Bone Star Area have done business. We believe they should

have some agreement with the God Clan. Since we found something unusual in their operation, the Bai family has aimed at us. My grandfather's death is somehow related to a family of the God Clan."

Shang Ying Yue said through her gritted teeth.

"Doesn't your union consider the God Clan your enemy? Why does the Bai family have a connection with the God Clan?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"The God Clan is too powerful. At the same time, they are good at enticing people. They've offered the temptation that the Bai family couldn't resist. Perhaps the Bai family couldn't stand their desires, so they shook hands with the God Clan." Shang Ying Yue frowned and said, "For example, the God Clan could invite the Bai family to attack a star area together. After they have taken that area down, the Bai family could share all the benefits with the God Clan. The Bai family couldn't resist such a deal. Once they go on the same road as the God Clan, slowly, they will become the God Clan's henchmen. They will never escape. God Clan has many tricks to recruits strong clans and forces. Take the Dark Shadow Clan for example. That clan was really strong. However, they have become the watchdog of the God Clan. I still have many examples of you want to hear..."

Shi Yan grimaced.

The more he understood the general picture of the universe, the more he knew about the God Clan's intimidation. The God Clan had spread their forces to the entire universe like long tentacles tying down each star area in this vast universe that slowly pulled them into its hands.

If it kept going at this invasion speed, the forces that didn't belong to this union would become the vassals of the God Clan soon.

Sooner or later, even that loose star area union would be divided.

God Clan would swallow its members, one by one. This God Clan was like a bloodthirsty beast with endless desires. It wanted this entire universe.

"You say the Bai family and the God Clan have joined hands?" asked Shi Yan.

Shang Ying Yue nodded. "My father has a precise presumption. He said that the Bai family and the God Clan has been plotting against a star area called Agate Star Area. It's my father's homeland. The Bai family and the God Clan already have a plan. They will deploy their armies together. They even have a plan to divide that star area..."

Shi Yan had a dark face. "I'm from Agate Star Area."

Shang Ying Yue was surprised. She said faintly, "What a coincidence!"

Shi Yan didn't say more. He silently let his co-soul flow up and observed the surroundings like the Eye of Heaven.

Shi Yan knew the direction of Bai Hao and Mia. His co-soul could recognize their location and direction easily.

The different talents were all ineffective in this ancient continent like open eyes of the blind. Although the Soul Consciousness couldn't sense around, since Shi Yan's co-soul had the same origin as this ancient continent, he wasn't bound to this strict restriction. He could still sense the surroundings precisely.

They were waiting for a good chance to attack the others. As they weren't the opponents of that ground of five, they had to follow them closely and quietly. However, they hadn't attacked yet.

All of a sudden, Shi Yan furrowed his brows and halted.

Shang Ying Yue's graceful body also stopped. She swayed her delicate waist and turned around to look at him, her beautiful eyes confused.

Bai Hao's group and Mia were heading to the big hole that Shi Yan had dug up with his power where he saw a faint blue light that had sent a vibe to the star in his Ethereal Extent. It was possibly something precious. At this moment, Bai Hao and Mia seemed to have discovered something. They stood there silently.

"Are you going to take action now?" Shang Ying Yue exhaled quietly and asked, "If you're not sure, you shouldn't act rashly. If the five of them don't scatter, we won't be able to fight them."

Shi Yan nodded. He suddenly sat down cross-legged on the wet, muddy ground. He squinted and didn't say a word. His co-soul flickered like a ghost flame, releasing the clear soul energy fluctuation.

After a long time, Shi Yan's eyes flared with the frightening cold light. "I got it!"

"What?" Shang Ying Yue was surprised.

"Wait for the fun part!"

Shi Yan disappeared like a cold lightning and glided in another direction.

Chapter 1103: Upset a Plan

Shang Ying Yue couldn't guess Shi Yan's thoughts or his plan in mind. She couldn't check the commotions around like Shi Yan so she could only stay quietly here and wait for him.

Shi Yan had left for one hour.

She wasn't worried about anything unexpected happening or his situation. After she had confirmed that Shi Yan could still use his Soul Consciousness to sense around this ancient continent, people would find it hard to attack him unless he wanted to see trouble.

Of course, Shi Yan wasn't that kind of impulsive person.

She thought that Shi Yan had changed his mind. She didn't know how important the Seven-colored Demonic Flower was to Shi Yan. Thus, she just assumed that Shi Yan had fled because he knew that he couldn't resist Bai Hao and Mia. He had just made an excuse to ditch her here.

The more Shang Ying Yue thought about this possibility, the more likely it appeared to her. Her face gradually turned colder and harsher. She gritted her teeth and cursed.

The Bai family and her force were like water and fire. Through several hundred years, they had fought a lot. Her grandfather was killed in a raid led by the Bai family and the God Clan. Earlier, her mother had told her to be aware of the Bai family. If she had a chance, she should try her best to attack them.

She still remembered how her loving grandfather had treated her. After he returned home from the war every time, he would give her some gifts that would make her excited for a long time. When she was a little girl, her grandfather would hold her on his lap or his shoulder, play with her, and take her flying up to the blue sky with cotton clouds...

She'd been mourning for him since the day she knew he was

killed. At that time, she had cried for ten days. Her tears were a chain of broken pearls.

At that time, she was small and her realm wasn't profound. She was at King God Realm only. She didn't have the capacity to take revenge for her grandfather. However, right at that moment, she had crossed her heart that she would use all of her strength to smash the Bai family.

Years later, she knew how strong the Bai family was and the relationship between the Bai family and the God Clan. They used to fight the Bai family with victories and losses. One time, the Bai family had ambushed her and her brother, Shang Qiu. Also in that battle, Shang Qiu's soul altar got damaged after he rescued her...

Shang Ying Yue was grinding her white teeth, her beautiful eyes flaring with a cold aura.

She had made up her mind. Even if no one wanted to help her, she would hide and wait for the right chance to strike the Bai family hard.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

The fluttering sounds of clothes moving in the wind came together with a brutal aura that approached her.

Shang Ying Yue's bold brows slightly furrowed. She hid silently in the dark and waited.

Her eyes brightened as she retrieved a radiant light cage that was covering her body entirely. She appeared and exhaled, "What did you do?"

"Helped you deal with the warriors of the Bai family." A strange flame flickered above Shi Yan head as he was gliding like a ghost towards Shang Ying Yue. His thoughts changed and he retrieved the co-soul and his soul altar. He spoke to Shang Ying Yue, "Help me conceal my body. I'm going to take you to see something fun."

While talking, he didn't mind his manner in approaching Shang

Ying Yue. "I know you have a special secret treasure."

"I'm not sure I can hide two people."

Seeing him come close, Shang Ying Yue looked reluctant. She hurried to scream, "Stop!"

A part of her creamy hand flashed a light of beautiful jade. An emerald green color burst out a faint icy blue halo. It looked like a massive bowl set upside down to cover her graceful, sexy body. The blue light quietly became transparent and then disappeared.

Shang Ying Yue's aura and body disappeared altogether.

"There's still room for you, but you aren't allowed to stand too close to me," Shang Ying Yue said coldly from nowhere.

"Understood."

Shi Yan nodded and got inside the cage, his face natural and calm.

People couldn't see any difference from the outside. Inside the deep blue cage, touching the barrier of blue sea water felt like touching ice.

The cage wasn't huge. When Shi Yan got inside, he had to stand shoulder by shoulder with Shang Ying Yue. There was a narrow gap between them. He could inhale a faint orchid aroma from Shang Ying Yue's body. Also, he could feel her soft but slightly cold shoulder.

A blue electric arc flashed on Shang Ying Yue's shoulder. A blue electric arrow made a straight line that separated Shi Yan and Shang Ying Yue. "Don't stick to me!" hissed Shang Ying Yue.

Shrugging, Shi Yan mumbled, "Who's interested in you?"

"Hey!" Shang Ying Yue suddenly turned around, shooting him a glare. "What do you want me to watch that's so fun? If you lie to me, I won't leave you alone!"

She took several deep breaths in her anger, which made her

thrust out her mesmerizing, breathtaking breasts.

"We're just the audience."

Squinting and looking at the area ahead of them, Shi Yan's eyes were like ice sabers. He muttered, "I have no feeling for people who shake hands with the God Clan. If I get a chance to do evil deeds, well, I won't let it slip away. It's not just their team that will come to this ancient continent, anyway..."

"You mean... you found another team?" Shang Ying Yue's graceful body shook. Her mouths curved in fear. "You want to provoke a battle with them?"

"We don't need to provoke anyone," Shi Yan smiled evilly. "People will fight for benefits in this ancient continent. Strong warriors can't avoid disputes here. Especially when Bai Hao's team seems to have found something over there."

"You're despicable."

"Thanks for the compliment."

That deep hole was dozens of mu large, which looked dark and bottomless. Many dirty, discomposed leaves were swirling inside that hole.

It was caused by Shi Yan's attack when he was chasing after Sha Zhao. The deep pit was filled with filthy water and mud while grass and leaves were floating on the surface. There was nothing to appraise in this area.

However, there were five warriors standing and watching by the edge of the hole.

Bai Hao and the three warriors of the Bai family frowned. They didn't know why Mia wanted to come here or what she was doing.

A delicate, hexagonal crystal glowing in clear red light was held in her green onion-like fingers. She was fondling that crystal, her

eyes bright.

A long moment later, the glowing red lozenge crystal shot out a rainbow light from its six points. The six beams of light were straight like swords, but they all combined into one muddy point in that swampy hole. The energy of the rainbow light hit on that point. Something inside exploded.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

Strange noises started to hiss from that area, which was unpleasant to the ears.

The four people of Bai Hao's group were gloomy. They felt it was very grating and it made their scalps numb as if someone was using a sharp tool to drill into their soul altars. The four of them felt so uncomfortable.

However, Mia looked excited as her bright eyes lit up. "Something is there, indeed!"

A blue light suddenly shot out from the point that the rainbow light was illuminating and smashed the rainbow light. The hexagonal crystal in Mia's hand grumbled as if it was about to shatter.

Mia was both happy and frightened. She hurried to put her unique, energy-sensing device into her Fantasy Sky Ring. She was so delighted to gaze at that blue light.

The hexagonal crystal could sense strange crystals and other precious treasures that had strong energy. The stronger the energy that object had, the fiercer her crystal would react. Recently, her crystal started slowly breaking. She understood that no matter what it was, the thing deep in that muddy ground would have absolutely powerful energy.

Mia's eyes had a divine light that was as bright as a torch. She smiled happily, "You guys, go and check it out."

She turned her head and bent her body slightly to request Bai

Hao's group to help her investigate that area.

Bai Hao changed his complexion a little bit, but the other three were obviously enraged.

Exploring the unknown objects would be accompanied with unforeseen dangers. If she didn't do it herself, she knew that it was dangerous. She had ordered Bai Hao's team like a master to make them bear the danger for her.

"So? Didn't your family's Head tell you anything?" Mia was still smiling but her eyes were getting colder.

Bai Hao was shaken. He recalled what the family Head told him. He sweated and hurriedly replied, "Don't worry. We know what to do!"

He nodded to the other three.

The three of them had reluctant faces. They sighed inwardly before gathering their energy to investigate the area where the blue light shot out.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Ear-splitting noises came from another corner of the swamp. Wu Bai with the big hammer and the gold armor was running like an imposing mountain. Every time he stomped the ground, it sounded like they were creating earthquakes.

Wu Feng was like a ghost that smiled gently and waved his fan slightly while following his younger brother.

"We got good luck anyway. We just got the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread not long ago. Now, something good is coming up. Haha, da-ge, you say, what do we do this time?" Wu Bei shouted violently as if he wasn't afraid of anyone.

Of course, we have to identify what it is. Then, we will decide what to do," smiled Wu Feng.

While they were talking, they passed Shi Yan and Shang Ying Yue who were concealing their bodies. They dashed towards Bai Hao's group.

Inside the light cage that the others couldn't detect, Shang Ying Yue's delicate face had a gleam of surprise. "Why did you get them here?"

"They were the nearest group. And they're the strongest." Shi Yan explained naturally. "Those two brothers have the competence to fight against the four warriors of the Bai family. Although they are all at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, those two brothers are much stronger."

"Of course, the Wu brothers of Prosaic Star Area aren't the vagabonds." Shang Ying Yue's eyes were strange.

"The Wu family? Is this Wu family strong too? How is it compared to the Bai family?"

"One level stronger!"

Shi Yan was surprised.

"Are we just staying here or what?" Shang Ying Yue lifted her head. Her energy surged in her body as if she wanted to join the battle.

"I have no objection if you want to come close to watch the battle. Anyway, the precondition is making sure they don't detect you. Are you sure they won't?" Shi Yan looked placid. He spoke faintly, "We can join the battle too, but we have to wait until they determine the winner first. Can you do that?"

"Of course, I can."

"Alright, we're going there. I'm also curious as to what they have found."

Chapter 1104: The Brilliant Star Fruit Tree

Bai Hao pointed with his index finger. A green light shot out from his fingertip like a flexible rope that fell into the bottomless pit.

Swoosh!

His light beam suddenly shattered and turned into dots of lights that fell into the center of the pit like pieces of broken glass.

An energy fluctuation suddenly shot out of that bottomless pit. Something was emerging from the ground as if an invisible force was pushing something through the layers of soil and mud.

The three warriors of the Bai family squinted. A strange light flared in their eyes. They mobilized their energy discreetly.

Mia's picturesque eyebrows twitched. She pulled herself together and smiled. Her ten slender fingers fidgeted the hexagonal crystal and made it emit radiant divine light.

A green stone slowly emerged from the filthy swamp. That stone wasn't significant. It had the shape of a tree with many greenish halos covering the entire stone. The energy that the stone sent out was really sharp.

The tree-shaped stone had many cracks where there was even thicker green light. Drilling their line of sight through the cracks, they could see something inside the stone.

Under that tree-shaped stone, the beam of energy that Bai Hao had controlled slowly brought the stone out of the murky pit.

Bai Hao frowned and studied that matter for a while. He asked in astonishment, "What is this?" he looked at Mia.

The other warriors of the Bai family looked perplexed. They didn't know what that tree-shape stone was.

Mia didn't reply, her eyes focusing on the stone and her shoulder

shivering.

Boom!

She suddenly squeezed off a hexagonal crystal in her hand. A beautiful light dot flew out and barged on that tree-shaped stone.

Boom!

Waves of dazzling light shot out like the magnificent light of a broken star. The white and green lights became blinding like lightning. However, shortly after, the white light was subdued and it left only some greenish light.

In the center of the explosion, the tree-shaped stone had disappeared and left nothing.

A clean stream floated above the dirty swamp like a cotton cloud. The cool and pure aura emitted from the stream calmed people's souls.

The green stream looked like a green mirror floating above the boggy ground. It seemed to be a strange tree for this scenery.

Bai Hao's eyes brightened. He couldn't help but scream, "There's something inside!"

Inside that clear stream was a tree with many roots and moist, fresh, lush branches and leaves. That tree seemed to be made of flawless, exquisite green jade. It was so perfect.

The trunk of that tree was as big as an arm and it was as tall as an adult. People could see some chestnut-sized fruits hanging on different branches. Those fruits had many fine patterns on the surface as they were blinking brilliantly like real stars.

A strange tree grew inside a clear stream with some magnificent fruits. All of these details made Bai Hao's team astounded.

There were nine fruits on that tree. All of them marvelously twinkled like a star with a strong but strange energy.

Mia gazed at the clear stream and the fruit tree inside. Her face

was blushing charmingly. Her big breasts bounced slightly when she gasped. Evidently, she was so thrilled.

Including Bai Hao, the four experts of the Bai family discreetly swallowed their saliva looking at the woman. They were so mesmerized by her sexy glamor. However, they were actually screaming inwardly to wake up their mind.

"What is it?" Bai Hao took a deep breath and pretended to be calm.

He wasn't foolish. From Mia's complexion, he knew that the fruit tree in that stream was really precious. Although he was ordered to protect Mia, he also had the mission to collect bizarre but valuable items for the Bai family. He wouldn't ignore anything that appeared to be good.

"The Brilliant Star Fruit Tree!"

Mia's full lips curled, her beautiful eyes bright and her voice soft, "Help me take it out."

Bai Hao's group looked at each other. They appeared as if they had never heard of the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree, so they didn't take action immediately.

"Forgive my ignorance. I've never heard of the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree. I don't know how to take it. Please advise?" frowned Bai Hao.

Mia smiled warmly. She pointed at the green halo twirling around the stream, "First, let's break those halos. Can you use your power Upanishad?"

The four warriors of the Bai family nodded. They winked and signaled each other to approach the halos. They were cautious and didn't hurry to use their power Upanishad just yet.

Boom!

When the four warriors of the Bai family were about to take action, a massive hammer like a dazzling gold sun came from a far

distance with the power of a thunderstorm.

Bai Hao discolored. He said resolutely, "Kill them first!"

The other three warriors of the Bai family had malicious eyes. They put aside the fruit tree and detached. They looked at the massive hammer that was like a scorching sun.

The giant hammer radiated billions of gold beams, which were as sharp as a sword. The surging energy gushing out from that hammer was really frightening.

Bai Hao snorted and touched his forehead. A giant furry white ape stormed out from his glabella. That giant ape wasn't a real entity as it was condensed by energy. This white ape was dozens of meters tall. As soon as it appeared, it made people around look so small.

The giant white ape faced the sky and roared, releasing its murderous aura and energy.

The massive, mountain-like hands balled into fists as it shouted and punched that gold hammer. When it touched the hammer, its body emitted gold light as if it was walloped by the hammer.

Wu Bai's hammer looked like a windmill, which was tiny compared to that white ape. However, countless gold beams from that hammer acted like billions of sharp knives that cut the white ape into smaller pieces. It exploded instantly.

Bai Hao paled and snorted.

The smaller pieces of the white ape gathered one more time. After three breaths, the giant ape reappeared, screaming and roaring crazily above Bai Hao's head.

The three other warriors of the Bai family also urged their powers. Phantoms of beasts emerged above their heads. There was a demonic dragon, a lightning eagle, and a giant python that looked like a mountain range.

The Bai family's members had a peculiar power Upanishad. The giant white ape, demonic dragon, fighting eagle, and the massive python was created by their energy and power Upanishad. They weren't beasts, but they had the power of Bai Hao's team. Their bodies contained turbulent energy that wasn't less than the Bai Hao's team itself.

"The Bai family!"

A cold voice arose. They saw Wu Feng drifting towards them like a ghost with his feather fan in his hand.

Boom!

A muscular body landed from the sky, stomping on the ground and creating some tremors. The man rose his hand and the gold hammer fell into his hand.

"Da-ge!" Wu Bai looked so excited. He thundered, "Finally, we will have an exciting battle!"

Mia frowned.

Bai Hao's team quieted down, their faces getting stern.

When the two sides were observing each other, commotions happened in another corner. Inside the light cage, Shang Ying Yue's beautiful face was so cold as she glared at Shi Yan maliciously.

Shang Ying Yue acted as if she didn't see that.

Another energy shockwave swarmed over. The light cage twisted like a leather bag in the strong wind.

The force pressed on the light cage, pushing Shi Yan towards Shang Ying Yue. Their limbs touched. Sometimes, when the shockwave was too strong, Shi Yan would tremble, which allowed his legs and lower body to touch Shang Ying Yue's curvy, ample butt cheeks. Shang Ying Yue screamed like a stray cat.

This light cage wasn't wide. When the energy of the battle swept

over this area, it twisted, which gave the two standing inside some physical contact.

Wu Bai's and Bai Hao's energy impacted, sending away shockwaves far far away.

After a while, Shi Yan had touched Shang Ying Yue's white arms, slender, straight thighs, and breathtakingly round butt several times.

Although Shang Ying Yue knew that Shi Yan couldn't control this, she was still enraged. Her beautiful eyes flared up with cold light as she hated herself for letting Shi Yan enter this light cage.

In her cold eyes, Shi Yan was still calm and natural as if nothing had happened. He focused on watching the Bai family's warriors and the Wu brothers. He still had free time to take out the book that Shang Chen had given him. He started studiously reading as if he was searching something.

Shang Ying Yue felt her teeth get itchy.

"Found it!"

Shi Yan suddenly screamed, his face astounded as he read a page with the drawing and description of something called "Brilliant Star Fruit Tree."

Lifting his head, he took a deep breath, his eyes hot. "You know the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree, don't you?"

"The book you have is from my father. Of course, I know what the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree is. It's an Original Incipient Grade material. It has an unimaginable effect on the warriors who cultivate Star power Upanishad." Shang Ying Yue snorted, answering coldly.

"I cultivate Star power Upanishad." Shi Yan pulled himself together and beamed a faint smile.

Shang Ying Yue didn't change her complexion. "I knew it."

"Good then," he turned around and grinned, "I want the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree. Yeah, just consider it one of the conditions I want to help you deal with the Bai family."

In Shang Ying Yue's eyes, she had a sneer that she didn't want to hide. "I have no objection. But do you think you can snatch that tree from the Bai family and the Wu brothers? You dumb!"

"You don't need to care about this. You just need to agree on my conditions."

He looked at the two parties, his face stern and brave. She could see the determination in his eyes that showed that he wouldn't give up until he got it. "That Brilliant Star Fruit Tree must belong to me. Whether it is the Bai family or the Wu family, they shouldn't dream about taking my possessions."

Shang Ying Yue smiled disdainfully, "Well, low realm but high voice, eh?"

Chapter 1105: Awkward Exposition

Shi Yan felt his enthusiasm surging. He had only Shang Chen's introduction of the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree in his head. He didn't listen to what Shang Ying Yue was telling him.

It was hard to tell what the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree was. Shang Chen wasn't so sure if it was a plant or a kind of Inheritance.

It was really tough to create the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree...

It required an expert who cultivated Star power Upanishad to Incipient God Realm. This expert's soul altar had to have shattered when he died. His Incipient Extent could fuse with a life star while pieces of his shattered soul altar filled the corners of that life star, which made it turn into a meteor.

The meteor would then drift in the vast sea of stars and continue gathering the energy of the stars. After countless years, it would become the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree.

Thus, the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree could be deemed a shattered soul altar of an Incipient God Realm expert who cultivated Star power Upanishad. It was the energy crystallization of the Stars in the form of a tree.

The fruit of the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree was called the Brilliant Star Fruit. The energy accumulated inside a Brilliant Star Fruit was as much as what a level 3 life star could have. At the same time, the tree had the Essence of Star power Upanishad in its branches and roots...

It was the consolidation of the energy and Star power Upanishad, the soul altar of an Incipient God Realm who had gone to Nirvana. After different training times, it could collect star energy. Slowly, it became that tree with the knowledge of the Incipient God Realm expert.

Thus, it could be considered a Star power Upanishad's

inheritance too.

If ordinary people had the Brilliant Star Fruit, they could understand the Star power Upanishad in one step. At the same time, they could receive pure energy in that fruit. It was similar to picking up the inheritance of Star power Upanishad, which could help the warrior reach the realm of the deceased Incipient God Realm!

Without a significant bottleneck!

Also, even if the warrior didn't cultivate that power Upanishad, once he had the Brilliant Star Fruit, one day, he could enter the Incipient God Realm if he didn't get killed.

A Brilliant Star Fruit Tree could create an Incipient God Realm expert cultivating Star power Upanishad.

If a warrior got the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree, he could absorb the energy in the fruits to fill their Essence Qi Ancient Tree, which would help him have more God power to break through.

If the warrior who cultivated Star power Upanishad got the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree...

Not only would the warrior take in the energy, but he could also learn the essence of Star power Upanishad, which would advance his realm to a level that people had to admire.

If he could get that Brilliant Star Fruit Tree, Shi Yan didn't need to struggle with his Star power Upanishad anymore. He could absorb the knowledge of Star power rapidly to transform his Star power Upanishad. It was truly an Original Incipient Grade material that seemed to be customized for him. How could he let it slip away?

No wonder why his Ethereal Extent had had some strange vibes when he saw the blue light in that area. His Star power Upanishad resonated with that tree.

Shi Yan's eyes were as sharp as swords that gazed that Brilliant

Star Fruit Tree through the invisible light cage.

He had to get it!

"The Wu brothers?" Bai Hao frowned tightly.

The three warriors of the Bai family scattered and surrounded the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree. As soon as Wu Feng and Wu Bai had any strange commotion, they would attack immediately.

The demonic dragon, the fighting eagle, and the python were like three unreal mountains floating above their heads. As the three beasts were made of the energy, souls, and spirits of the three warriors, they were especially intimidating.

Bai Hao's giant white ape pounded its chest and roared. Its murderous energy shot up into the sky, which looked so real.

"Hey, Bai people. We are also interested in that Brilliant Star Fruit Tree. What do you say?" Wu Feng walked forward and smiled while waving his feather fan, his eyes dark and malicious. "If you let us take it, we won't trouble you. I know that you know how to behave."

Although Wu Feng and Wu Bai had come here alone, they were so arrogant and tyrannical when they asked the others to give up the treasure.

Bai Hao's team grimaced.

Inside the immense sea of stars, the Wu family of Prosaic Star Area was indeed famous. Their general competence was actually stronger than that of the Bai family. Everybody knew how intimidating the Wu brothers were. Although Bai Hao wasn't young and had the same realm, he knew that there wasn't any benefit from fighting those two.

However, they had four people here plus Mia...

"The Wu brothers?" Bai Hao sneered coldly. "I know you guys are

strong. I also know your family's intimidation. But in this ancient continent, haha..."

He looked at Mia.

Mia frowned, her face impatient. "Don't waste my time."

Bai Hao was shocked. He shouted abruptly. "Kill!"

The giant white ape roared crazily like thunderclaps. It bared its fangs and jumped over, falling like a pressing mountain on the Wu brothers.

At the same time, the demonic dragon, fighting eagle, and the python, the three beasts generated by energy, also flew out. While they were moving in the sky, they had even discolored the sky. The energy surging from them was so earth-shaking.

When the giant white ape landed, it created two deep holes on the ground. They couldn't see the bottoms. The demonic dragon rolled in the swamp, creating more ditches and sending mud into the air. Their energy magnetic fields burst off like an erupting volcano, stirring the entire area.

Wu Bai lifted his hammer. Dazzling gold light bloomed on his armor. He looked like a gold angel. He looked at the Bai family's warriors without fear.

Wu Feng had cold eyes. He had a mocking smile on his handsome face. The fan in his hand opened and closed from time to time. The rivers gushed out powerfully like ropes tying down the four massive beasts.

From that moment, the Bai family's warriors and the Wu brothers started to fight furiously. They stirred up the entire place. Dust rose. The ground cracked. If it wasn't an ancient continent, it wouldn't have been able to stand the furious battle of the four Peak of Ethereal God Realm experts.

Mia was like a fresh flower standing aside. She had a faint smile on her face and she didn't look like she would join this battle.

It seemed like the Bai family's warriors were all her servants in her point of view. Thus, they had to shoulder her troubles. This kind of battle task was the Bai family's responsibility.

Mia didn't hurry to take the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree. Her line of sight switched between the Bai family's warriors and the Wu brothers. No one knew what she was thinking.

As the light cage leaned from side to side, Shang Ying Yue's graceful body shivered. She gritted her teeth, her face grimaced.

The battle between the Wu brothers and the four warriors of the Bai family had risen earth-shaking energy shockwaves like tornadoes that expanded. They made many trees around burst off and the ground crack.

If they weren't far from the battle and the light cage didn't have a potent defense, Shang Ying Yue and Shi Yan would have to have used their energy to resist.

Inside the light cage, Shi Yan and Shang Ying Yue were pushed together as if someone was teasing them. They trembled as if they were drunk. Sometimes, their chests touched while other times, their waists and butts collided. It felt like they were sitting on a bobbing boat that couldn't be stabilized.

Shi Yan still looked calm, but he was actually amused.

After a while, his limbs had touched her ample breasts and her round butt more than ten times. After each time, he felt so amazed as if he received a light touch of electricity. The grudge that Shang Ying Yue had vented out like that.

The blue dress clung to her body. The soft and beautiful material of the dress showcased her generous contours. Her straight thighs were so mesmerizing in a pair of silver boots. Shang Ying Yue had snow-white skin and creamy exposing arms. She also had a slim waist and sexy legs. Shang Ying Yue's body indeed had a golden

ratio that people couldn't find any flaw to complain.

At this moment, her ice-like face was embarrassed and enraged. She hissed, "Die, you f*cking asshole!"

She stooped, looking at the space between Shi Yan's legs. At first glance, she knew that Shi Yan was pretending to be calm. The flame of anger in her heart burst out.

Something that looked like a one-horned dragon emerged in between his legs, bulging his pants like a small tent. It wanted to show its rough and brutal characteristics.

"It's a normal reaction. Don't be startled. You're a woman. I'm a man. We're this close... It's unavoidable." Shi Yan staggered and didn't look at her. Another fierce shockwave swarmed over them. Shang Ying Yue reluctantly trembled and leaned on Shi Yan.

The light cage sent them a furious shockwave like a powerful hand shoving her into Shi Yan's lap.

A rigid, hot shaft placed on her round butt. At that moment, Shang Ying Yue felt like she received an electric shock. Shame and anger flooded her. "Get lost!"

A flow of lightning energy shot out of Shang Ying Yue's shoulder and entered Shi Yan's body who was unguarded.

Boom!

Shi Yan emerged and staggered out of the light cage. However, his lower body was still sticking like an iron pole as if it could tear his pants to get out at any minute.

Her beautiful eyes had a strange light as Mia was planning something. She suddenly saw a young man with a grimace on his face and the short lance under his pants. He was standing on a rock on the left of the swamp. His lust posture was so obvious.

Mia was bewildered. She didn't know what was going on but she just kept staring at that young man.

Under her awkward look, the young man turned around and punched the light curtain behind him. A beautiful woman appeared with an embarrassed face and a red neck.

Mia was stunned for seconds. She felt so awkward when she said, "Well, you two have some special interest, I guess. You like to have fun when others are fighting fiercely. Did you move so fast that you broke your concealing equipment?"

She felt so funny as she teased the other two. She thought that it was interesting, indeed.

Shang Ying Yue hated that she couldn't dig into the ground and go underground immediately. Looking at Mia with an odd face, she was so angry that she almost fainted. She had never been in such a helter-skelter situation.

Shi Yan looked indifferent. He smiled and shrugged at Mia, "Well, you guys, keep fighting. We won't disturb you. We're leaving now. Bye."

"Oh please don't," Mia thinned her lips, her eyes sparkling. "You guys can continue your fun. Just consider it like no one's here. Ah, if you don't mind, I do want to watch. I heard that some people like others watching them when they do that. Since you have such a special passion... I'm interested."

Shang Ying Yue felt blood rise to her brain. She shivered and trembled as if she couldn't steady her body anymore.

Chapter 1106: Change Again and Again

The furious fight between Bai Hao's team and the Wu brothers halted all of a sudden. The Ethereal God Realm experts of different star areas gazed at Shang Ying Yue and Shi Yan.

As people were gazing at her, Shang Ying Yue's face became colder. She glared maliciously at Shi Yan, "It's your fault!"

Shi Yan snorted and said to her, "Our agreement is on hold temporarily!"

A deep flame shot out from his palm, making a gentle curve in the void. It strangely turned into a flaming arm that snatched the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree.

Everybody paused and wore a disdainful smile on their faces as they watched him.

A starlight rippled like waves of water in the lake with fierce energy fluctuation.

The flaming arm that Shi Yan had condensed was smashed. It turned into many sparks when it touched the first layer of starlight.

Shi Yan frowned slightly.

"If it were easy to take that Brilliant Star Fruit Tree, you think I would just stand here and watch?" Mia mocked, her bright eyes shifted to the other four people of Bai Hao's group with a glance. "Deal with those troublemakers first."

Bai Hao nodded. His team left the Wu brothers. Their cold eyes gazed at Shi Yan and Shang Ying Yue. Bai Hao was surprised. She stared at Shang Ying Yue for a while. He laughed strangely, "Haha, you're the daughter of that slut An Liya!"

Hearing him, the other three warriors of the Bai family grinned. Their murderous auras rose.

The Wu brothers frowned slightly.

Mia didn't care. She waved her hand and said simply, "Kill them all!"

"Well, it's good for her if we just kill her," Bai Hao clenched his jaw as lust flashed in his face. He screamed excitedly like a duck. "That slut has such a beautiful daughter. The Bai family's men should serve her well."

Mia seemed to not be bothered by this issue. She just talked faintly. "I don't care about the process. I only want the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree. I won't interfere no matter how you want to kill them."

The four Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm of the Bai family laughed evilly. Their eyes sparkled like a pack of hungry wolves.

The Drifting Fire of Fantasy Mist Star Area and the Bai family of Dry Bone Star Area had a grudge that was deep to the bone. The Bai family killed Shang Ying Yue's grandfather, but the Drifting Fire had also killed many warriors of this family. These two forces from the adjacent star areas had been fighting for hundreds of years, which caused the loss of many experts.

The resentment between them was as deep as the sea. Once they met, they would have a bloody battle that other warriors couldn't stop.

Bai Hao's team grinned fiendishly as they didn't mind the Wu brothers. They directly controlled their massive beasts and dashed towards Shang Ying Yue.

Thunder! Thunder!

The massive blue lightning strikes shot out of Shang Ying Yue's curvy body. Shortly after, countless electric snakes gushed out and filled the place where she was standing. They were frightened as they watched this scene.

The giant white ape, the demonic dragon, the fighting eagle, and

the python were gliding furiously like mountains with brutal and murderous auras. They roared and screamed maliciously. With one jump, they could cross several hundred meters and directly press down on Shang Ying Yue's head.

"I owe your father a favor."

Wu Feng's eyes were cold and harsh. The fan in his hand swayed and released many rivers that were as bright as the sky. The icy cold aura filled this area. Carrying the grumbling noise of the flowing water, they all headed to the fantasy beasts controlled by the Bai family's warriors.

"The Bai family is indeed despicable!"

Wu Bai laughed crazily and arrogantly. The gold armor on his body sparkled as he violently stormed towards the others with his big hammer.

The Wu brothers joined the battle on Shang Ying Yue's side to deal with the Bai family's warriors. As soon as they came, Shang Ying Yue felt much better.

Charming Mia was indifferent. She watched the Bai family's warriors fighting the Wu brothers and Shang Ying Yue, but she didn't seem to join. Quite the contrary, she walked towards the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree and she didn't even throw Shi Yan a look on her way.

He had only First Sky of Ethereal God Realm, but he dared to come and explore the ancient continent! He wanted to court death!

She thought to herself.

Shi Yan was also not interested in the battle between Bai Hao's group, the Wu brothers and Shang Ying Yue. He knew that as the Wu brothers were giving her hands, Shang Ying Yue's life wasn't in danger. It was good for him.

Just like Mia, his attention fell on the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree. Seeing Mia walking towards the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree, Shi Yan

didn't hesitate to glide towards the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree too.

"You court death!"

Mia's face was cold.

An intimidating gravity suddenly pressed from the sky and covered Shi Yan.

Boom! Boom!

As Shi Yan was gliding, he fell abruptly as if a big mountain had just knocked him down. He fell so dizzily.

The furious gravity swarmed over him and pushed him on the swampy ground, making him dirty. He felt as if a mountain was placed on his shoulder that prevented him from moving.

The terrifying gravity didn't stop there and it continued to rise. He felt like he was actually carrying the mountains on his back. He couldn't even wiggle his fingers.

Even though Old Orchid Star was a strange star with tremendous gravity, Shi Yan could still move on that planet. However, Mia was applying a horrible gravity on him that was hundreds of times stronger. If his body hadn't been much stronger than the others at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm, he would have been crushed in that strike.

Mia at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm cultivated Gravity power Upanishad. The sudden attack she had struck in just a blink had frightened him badly.

She didn't even look at Shi Yan when she took action. She just calmly dashed towards the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree, her graceful body drawing a beautiful curve in the air.

She disdained Shi Yan obviously.

Inside that crazy gravity magnetic field, Shi Yan's eyes were getting colder. His strong muscles shriveled shortly.

His hot blood exploded. Under the urge of his demon blood, each

cell in his body was shivering in thrill. An intimidating energy gushed out furiously. Shortly after, the murderous aura shot up into the sky.

Boom!

Shi Yan's face was pressed on the muddy ground. He got rid of the gravity field. His body was vividly red and different energies gushed out of his body, making people dizzy.

Mia turned when she was about to reach the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree. She was actually surprised. Her bright eyes scanned Shi Yan as if she was studying him. "Well, you weren't smashed yet. Seems like your body has been quenched and your attainment is not bad."

Mia nodded and her left hand touched the void, aiming at Shi Yan.

Just like a flood gushing or a tornado wreaking havoc, the extremely fierce energy surged and made the air exploded. Along its way, the ground cracked as if it was a long sword scratching the ground and creating bottomless ditches.

Shi Yan's face changed. When her small, white hand pressed down, he found that the space around him was squeezed until it was deformed. The furious energy could even be compared to a warrior at First Sky of Incipient God Realm. The God power accumulated in Mia's body was beyond his best imagination.

Unless he could transform to the Immortal Demon Body, he couldn't withstand this attack. The energy in Mia's attack could destroy the earth though!

"Crack!"

At the critical moment, Shi Yan was as calm as a majestic mountain. The energy of his entire body was urged. His Space power Upanishad was mobilized.

A narrow slit with many strange lights shooting out suddenly appeared in front of him. The gush of invisible energy furiously

overflowed into that slit and disappeared.

Mia was baffled. She looked at Shi Yan, "Space power Upanishad!"

"Take a look."

Shi Yan's face was as calm as water. However, his images suddenly shattered like a broken mirror as if he was minced by many space sabers. He disappeared shortly after.

The starlight dots abruptly emerged by the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree. Shi Yan's body congregated. He had traveled ten thousand meters and crossed Mia. Shi Yan extended one hand and snatched it. Starlight emitted dazzlingly from his palm as he grabbed the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree.

The starlight ripples protecting the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree didn't prevent him from touching it. He could finally grab the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree.

"Star power Upanishad!"

Mia's face became ugly. She couldn't help but shout.

Bai Hao, Wu Bai, Wu Feng, and Shang Ying Yue also turned around to look at this area. Bai Hao's face was restless anxious.

"Guys, goodbye."

Shi Yan held the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree in one hand. His body looked like pieces of a broken mirror that radiated light. He vanished before the beams of shattered light fell on the ground.

Under people's gazes, Shi Yan's body and aura disappeared completely as if he had fallen into some strange, unknown space.

The two parties which had just engaged in a battle were dumbstruck. Mia grimaced as if she had just swallowed a fly. She stared at the spot Shi Yan had just disappeared and shouted crazily, "Find him! Hurry up!"

The four warriors of the Bai family were startled.

"Even if he cultivates Space power Upanishad, he can't get out of the ancient continent as he pleases. No one can do that! He must be still around!" Mia took a deep breath to calm down. "At most, he could only use his Space power Upanishad to teleport. The distance should be limited too. Scatter and find him!"

She was wrong about Shi Yan.

The warriors who cultivated Star power Upanishad could pass the layers of starlight protection of the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree. Mia knew this. The others knew this.

After Shi Yan had appeared, he first used fire power, which was prevented by the natural barriers of the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree. This move had deceived Mia. It made her assume that Shi Yan was like them: he had only the typical powers Upanishad.

If she had known Shi Yan cultivated Star power Upanishad, she would have never let Shi Yan approach the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree! Never!

Too bad that Shi Yan had made use of her disdain and assumption. He had used the marvelous Space and Star powers Upanishads to break her defense and took the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree before she could react. He left without hesitating and left her with a mind full of the flame of rage.

"Are you guys on the same side?" Wu Feng glanced at Shang Ying Yue, his face dark and cold. "You want to make use of our brother? At least... you should have warned us, right?"

"No!" Shang Ying Yue spoke with a cold face, "I also want to kill him!"

Shang Ying Yue didn't wait for Wu Feng to answer or for Bai Hao and Mia to focus on her. She leaped and turned into a blue lightning strike. She dashed away shortly after.

"Go get them! Once you find them, kill them immediately!" said Mia with a malicious complexion.

Chapter 1107: Refine the Fruit Tree

A blue lightning strike flashed above a dark, wet swamp and disappeared in just a blink of an eye.

Shang Ying Yue ran rapidly. He didn't dare to stand there because she knew that there was no use lingering. Although she was arrogant, she knew that she wasn't equal to the four warriors of the Bai family. There was a need to mention that mysterious Mia.

Wu Bai and Wu Feng shot out energy like an ignited powder keg. A flame burned in their eyes as they left the place.

Mia stood by the place where the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree used to emerge looking at the bottomless pit. Her beautiful face was so cold as if it had a layer of frost. She flung her arms and said directly, "From this center spot, scatter and pursue them. That brat has only First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Any of you can kill him when you see him."

The three warriors of the Bai family seemed to have ignored Mia's instructions. They only looked at Bai Hao.

Bai Hao nodded and blinked at the three of them. He said faintly, "Go after them."

The four shadows shot out like four rainbows to four different directions. In just a blink, they were out of sight.

After everyone had left, Mia's eyes looked puzzled. She mumbled to herself as if something had disturbed her mind.

As soon as Shang Ying Yue had left the besiege of the Bai family's warrior, she disappeared. She used her special device to conceal her body and aura. Hiding inside a light case, she moved in a direction by herself.

All of a sudden, she found that this light cage was spacious. She

couldn't help but think about the beautiful moment that had just happened inside the light cage...

Something strange flashed in her eyes, but she quieted her mind quickly. The corners of her mouth curved coldly and resentfully. While her straight thighs moved, she had traveled a long distance.

When she thought that she should be pretty far away from the Bai family's warriors, she hesitated for a while before retrieving the light cage. Her beautiful figure reappeared, standing under the shade of a big tree and waiting for something.

One hour later.

A muscular man sauntered toward her with a cold face. He reached where she was but kept silent.

"You dare to come?" Shang Ying Yue bit her lower lips and said angrily.

She knew that Shi Yan could recognize life energy fluctuation within a specific area and this place was the location where they had agreed to meet. She came here and put away her invisible light cage to demand an explanation from Shi Yan.

However, she wasn't so sure that Shi Yan would show himself.

"Why wouldn't I come?"

Shi Yan was holding the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree in his left hand. That exotic fruit tree radiated silver starlight, which looked like fireflies falling on his arm. It made it a drawing of starlight with fulgent sparkling. "You should understand that if you hadn't struck me out of the protection, we wouldn't have been exposed. As long as we didn't get seen, I could have helped you attack the Bai family after the Bai family's warriors and the Wu brothers finished their battle. Too bad... you ruined everything."

"I ruined everything?"

Green veins bulged on Shang Ying Yue's forehead. She couldn't

help but shout, "If you hadn't harassed me, would I have struck you? If I didn't push you out, who knows what else you would have done?"

While screaming, she couldn't help but remember the scene she saw when she stooped her head and caught a glimpse of his surging lower body. She grimaced as she knew that Shi Yan was just pretending to be calm.

"It was unexpected."

Without being embarrassed or ashamed, Shi Yan said harshly. "Who f*cking would have known that your light case couldn't stand the shockwaves that badly? Alright, it stops right here!"

Then, he turned around and left, leaving her a cold utterance. "There's no way to cooperate with you. We shall terminate our agreement."

"You're despicable!" Shang Ying Yue gasped for her breath and said indignantly, "You got the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree. You seized the chance and got benefits. Now you turn your back to me. What kind of man are you?"

"I will try my best to kill the Bai family's warriors. But I won't do it with you. About the Seven-colored Demonic Flower... I will take it on my own. You don't need to bother." Shi Yan's figure left far away and he didn't turn once to look at her. After his voice vanished, his body had disappeared completely.

Shang Ying Yue stood there for a long time with her cold face. She leaned against the tree and felt so bitter and resentful.

Several thousand meters under a swamp with thick mud, an area was burned which made a solid, dry cave.

Space barriers that could prevent Soul Consciousness detection and sounds were set up around that dry space. Shi Yan sat cross-legged and studied the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree in front of him.

The roots, trunks, branches, and leaves of the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree looked like they were made of beautiful green jade. It felt cool in his palm. The nine chestnut-sized fruits were sparkling like stars, releasing surging energy. Blue halos rippled, which were strong defenses to other people. If they took risks and touched the tree, they would be damaged.

However, those blue halos weren't so threatening to him because he cultivated Star power Upanishad.

The Brilliant Star Fruit Tree was the soul altar of an Incipient God Realm expert who cultivated Star power Upanishad. It fused with a life star after he died completely. After different experiences, it became this tree. It didn't have the soul or cognition, but the truth of Star power Upanishad.

The patterns on the branches, roots, leaves, and the fruits of that tree had lines like a star map. Vaguely, they were following something mysterious in the sea of stars...

Shi Yan placed one of his fingers on the root of that tree. Squinting, he spun his soul altar and focused his mind and soul on the Star power Upanishad.

Slowly, his finger glowed and released countless starlight dots. They were glowing like small bacteria congregating in the roots of the tree.

At that moment, his soul and Sea of Consciousness were connected to the tree. Wisps of his Soul Consciousness flowed like small streams coming to the vast sea. They swam in a sea filled with starlight.

Countless fine, twinkling lines of starlight weaved and combined with each other and created a map of the sea of stars. Some looked like bows and arrows and some looked like screaming beasts or spoons. Some even looked like horses with wings...

These images were constellations made of different stars in the

galaxy. They held some meanings of Nature and they could connect to warriors who cultivated Star power Upanishad directly.

Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness flew in there and felt in silence...

Suddenly, his eyes brightened as he had grasped something...

The star map that looks like a spoon... wasn't it the Big Dipper with seven stars? From a distance, the Big Dipper did look like a spoon.

Shi Yan felt something blooming in his mind. He seemed to grasp something. He immersed himself into that gleam of recognition while his Soul Consciousness moved around the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree, searching in its roots or branches...

While his Soul Consciousness saw the mysteries of the tree, he was sinking and didn't recognize his condition. At the same time, one of the Brilliant Star Fruits was losing its brilliance and it shriveled as if the nutrients inside were drawn away.

He didn't know that his study of the mysteries of the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree required the massive energy inside the Brilliant Star Fruit.

Beams of starlight radiated from his body as the fruit was withering. It looked like he had billions of fireflies congregating at his body. They moved around and disappeared into his body in the end and turned into a beam of pure energy.

Time flew hurriedly.

After one fruit shriveled, another Brilliant Star Fruit bloomed with brilliance before its light was absorbed and taken away...

While he was studying the meanings of Star power Upanishad, his Soul Consciousness seemed to move around the vast universe with countless stars. He didn't recognize it, but the Brilliant Star Fruits were disappearing one by one. As their energy was used up, they had to return to Nature.

Shi Yan didn't know that. Under the swamp, he held the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree in his hand to comprehend the power Upanishad that was crucial to his life.

The Star power Upanishad was a strange power that was rare even in the Fountainhead of powers Upanishads. Also, it was the most difficult power to advance. However, this power of his was growing magnificently. It gave him unimaginable knowledge.

Staying in a small room, his body was filled with billions of starlight dots. If someone could see this, he would figure out that those starlight dots were actually forming stars of the vast sea of stars in the universe. It was a star map that was scaled several times smaller.

The Brilliant Star Fruit on the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree in his hand disappeared one by one. The branches and leaves were dried up and the roots were cracking. They all merged into the small-scaled universe and disappeared.

Shi Yan was immersed in the center of the universe. He sank into the marvelous sea of stars as if he was a rigid fossil that would remain still forever.

Time continued to fly.

The starlight in the sky all seeped into his body and circulated in his veins, bones, marrow, blood, and flesh. They moved to his Sea of Consciousness and jumped into his Ethereal Extent...

He stood still but his body was shivering as if something was quenching his blood and flesh. Dirty water oozed out of his pores and the roots of his hair eliminated specks of dirt. His hair became glossy and dazzling while his body was covered by the silky sheet of stars, and his bones the rigid jade.

This was a new transformation.

The great benefit that the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree brought him was the usage of the energy of the sea of stars to quench his body,

bone, blood, flesh, and his soul. It gave an excellent tonic to every corner of his body.

However, he hadn't woken up yet. His mind and soul seemed to wander around the immense galaxy as if he couldn't find a way back. Right under the swamp, he had stood there for several years without knowing the situation of the world out there.

The Brilliant Star Fruit Tree was a peculiar Original Incipient Grade treasure. It was really hard to create one tree. To the warriors cultivating Star power, it was a priceless treasure that existed only in legends.

Shi Yan had refined the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree and absorbed its energy completely. He had understood the essence of his power Upanishad, which also increased his spirit, soul, and body to another level. He had broken the threshold from First Sky of Ethereal God Realm to Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

When he got up, he had reached Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

Chapter 1108: The Five Great Territories

The vast universe was endless with many star areas scattering in every corner. Each star area had so many stars, life stars, mineral stars, dead stars, solar stars, and moons. They were as many as sand grains in a desert that couldn't be counted.

In the endless sea of stars, some influential star areas were very famous. Their reputation was well-known everywhere.

Legends said that when the universe had just begun, it gave birth to ancient continents first. There were five ancient continents in total. These five ancient continents were cradles of every creature in this universe. All the strong races came from the five ancient continents.

However, as billions of years had gone by, the mighty creatures had led countless clans and races to steal the energy of earth and heaven. Four out of five ancient continents had been used up. Slowly, they had to return to earth and heaven.

Only one ancient continent stayed the same since the dawn of the universe. It was smart and cunning. It didn't release its energy generously to bear any creature. It remained its status as a maiden.

It followed the rules it had set up as it had nurtured marvelous earth and heaven products. After every ten thousand years, it would open to receive a visit from other creatures.

This planet had considered itself a game that people from different clans and forces had to risk their lives to gain a spot.

After every ten thousand years, it would open for ten years. Warriors who had entered this ancient continent could fight or even kill each other to take its natural products. This ancient continent became a massive playground for those warriors to train themselves.

After ten years, there wasn't even one-third of participants

leaving alive most of the time. However, each of the survivors received the best treatment from their families, clans, or forces. Gradually, they became the leaders where their talents shone in this vast universe.

Today, although this ancient continent was closed, it didn't have a moment of peace.

It has been five years.

This ancient continent had drifted from the edge of Fantasy Mist Star Area to Prosaic Star Area. It was racing at the peripheral area and crushing the mineral stars and dead stars standing in its way like a sharp weapon that could break anything.

If someone could use their eyes piercing the layers of mist of this ancient continent or hovering in the atmosphere, he could see this massive planet divided into five parts: East, West, North, South, and Central. From a bird's view, people could see the situation of the four out of five territories.

One of them was a territory consisting of an endless swamp. Another had thick and continuous glaciers. Another was where dense forests grew with trees that could shade the entire sky. The fourth territory included the torrential ocean with many islets decorating it.

The pieces of territories were situated in the West, East, North, and South of the continent. And the area that the four territories surrounded was a world that was covered with thick energy. From a bird's view, it looked like there was a massive ice blue bowl covering the ground and sealing the center of the ancient continent.

The other territories of endless swamps, glaciers, thick forest and immense seas now had many warriors from different operating star areas.

However, four forces were dominating the four territories. They

were slowly invading and killing warriors from the other forces.

Inside the shoreless swamp area, a horde of people was walking. Mia led this group with four warriors of the Bai family following behind her with respect. The four warriors of the Bai family treated Mia gingerly and with respect.

In five years, they had witnessed many wicked deeds of Mia. Now, they knew how this woman killed her opponents one by one. She had stirred up this entire area.

Around twenty warriors at Second and Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, young and old, male and female, with gorgeous clothing and appearance, were following Mia and carrying out her orders. Bai Hao looked at those people regardless of their ages and they were all beautiful. He had more respect for Mia.

"It has been five years. We've killed more than thirty warriors of other big star areas. Still, some fish is missing." Mia was deliberate and looking to the area ahead of them. She spoke faintly, "It's almost time for the Center opens. We must have precise timing. We shouldn't give those fish any chance."

"Mia jie-jie, I believe when our two families join hands, we can enter the Center when the seal is lifted. We can kill all those people."

A teenager who looked around eighteen or nineteen years old at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm said with a smile.

He looked really handsome.

"Haig sent the news. He has cleared all the fish in the North glacier. If we can't finish our area soon, he said he would come here and help us personally. We've lost, but we shouldn't have lost too much," frowned Mia.

"That Haig is a psychopath. We can't beat him. The superior has announced that he's the leader of this operation. I heard that he could use the Soul Consciousness to sense the creatures in this

ancient continent despite the restrictions," said the teenager in fright.

Mia sighed and nodded to him, "Haig is a true talent. If nothing unexpected happens, he can confirm his Chief position of the Bradley family after this operation."

"They rumored that Haig got the Origin of our ancestral star. Is that true?" the teenager lowered his voice.

Hearing him, most of the beautiful people behind him and Mia were startled. Apparently, they were afraid of the man called Haig a lot.

"I heard that, too." Mia nodded. "If nothing unexpected happens, he will be the leader of our clan. The Bradley family was always the strongest branch among the twelve families. Haig got the Origin of the ancestral star. Who could resist him then?"

"But Haig is chasing after you. If you can make him obedient, it's you who will hold our clan in your hand, right?" The teenager smiled, his eyes studying Mia as if he wanted to observe her reaction.

"No woman could dilute Haig's ambition. Nobody." Mia discolored.

Pausing for a while, she said impatiently, "We shouldn't talk about him. We should clean the fish that has escaped our net. We don't want him to insult our capacity when he gets here."

"All right," the teenager laughed. "My Ascot family and your Fernandez family are joining hands to attack Fiery Rain Star Area and Agate Star Area. With the Bai family of Dry Bone Star Area, we could attack them after we get out of here. The power of our two families will, of course, increase. Perhaps we can have the competence to compete against the Bradley family."

Mia's eyes brightened. She nodded, "If we can invade Fiery Rain Star Area and Agate Star Area, our position in the clan will

increase altogether. I hope everything will go well."

"It will," said the teenager.

Bai Hao listened to Mia and the teenager's conversation. He stooped and was filled with fear. He felt lucky to be with them.

From Mia, he got terrifying information: the God Clan had collected most of the Guiding Fruits through different channels. Previously, they had almost harvested all the Guiding Fruits to get into the ancient continent.

Each Guiding Fruit represented an outstanding Ethereal God Realm expert of the great star areas. They were the leaders and the future of the family who was especially nurtured.

Sha Zhao, the Wu brothers, Shang Ying Yue, and Bai Hao were outstanding characters of their star areas. Possibly, they would be the masters of their forces in the future.

The God Clan had distributed the Guiding Fruits to the big star areas using their channels, which made the prominent clans receive the fruits. They sent their best talents to the ancient continent for precious items that people had craved for.

It was a big conspiracy!

The warriors of the God Clan came to this ancient continent were in larger numbers and were stronger! Families of God Clan had united to capture and destroy the future leaders of the opponent star areas this time!

They wanted to kill all the future leaders of their opponents, which would shake them hard for the next thousands of years. They wouldn't even be able to recover. It would help the God Clan build a firm foundation to invade the entire sea of stars.

And they did that.

There was one troop of the God Clan in each of the four big territories of the ancient continent. They were killing the other

warriors in their area. They wanted to eliminate all the warriors who weren't from the God Clan before the center area was unsealed.

Mia and Phelps of the Ascot family brought the Bai family's warriors to perform this cleaning job. It has been five years.

In the swamp.

A group of warriors with disheveled clothes were scattered around an area where had a lot of big trees. They all looked helter-skelter. There were ten of them from different star areas, including Wei Feng, Wu Bai, the mud statue, and even Sha Zhao...

They were all outstanding warriors of the big star areas who had survived until now. Mia, Phelps, and the Bai family's warriors had chased each of them. They all had experienced bitter attacks.

Most of them were killed in the bloody besiege, their bodies buried in this swamp forever. Mia's group had collected all the resources they had harvested throughout five years including their lives.

The lucky survivors gradually understood that they would be killed all if they scattered. People then put aside their grudges to join hands.

Everybody knew the God Clan's conspiracy since Mia didn't even try to conceal it. She had told them early what she wanted them to do. They knew that they must kill all of the others.

Mia enjoyed this feeling.

"Only we are remaining in this area. Before the center is unsealed, we will be killed." Sha Zhao had recovered from the wounds Shi Yan had given him. He had spent a lot of time to find Shi Yan. However, he didn't succeed.

He had assumed that Shi Yan had been killed already by the God

Clan just like many other warriors. He had even regretted a while.

"They've prepared to ambush us as if they knew our whereabouts. We have many people here so we could create a big commotion. But if we scatter, we will be killed sooner."

Around ten warriors grimaced while discussing. They seemed to lose their patience but then, something exploded deep underground.

Everybody discolored as gray as dust. They thought that Mia, Phelps, and the God members were hiding underground to give them the bloodiest and fiercest death.

Chapter 1109: Is He Really Strong?

There were eleven survivors including the Wu brothers, Shang Ying Yue, Sha Zhao, and the mud statue. They were from different star areas and the lowest realm warrior was at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Each of them had different but profound powers Upanishad.

After five years of having continuous raids done by the God Clan, their survival was enough to prove how strong they were.

However, compared to the God Clan's warriors led by Mia and Phelps, they were so weak. It was proven after several battles that unless a miracle happened, they could never escape death.

Grumbling explosions sounded underground and it tore people's calm expressions. Instantaneously, eleven warriors of different clans flew up and accumulated their powers. In just a blink, they were ready to join the coming battle.

Some people's eyes flared. Slowly, they moved to the entrance that could help them dash away from this place when they had the chance. They shouldn't miss a chance.

Some of them hated hiding and they didn't want to hide anymore. As they knew that the God Clan was surrounding them, they vowed to risk their lives with Mia and Phelps. Even if they had to die, they had to damage them a little bit.

After five years, all eleven warriors in this area had experienced bitter fruits as their materials and spirit plants they had strenuously harvested were robbed and they were damaged badly. They had to run helter-skelter and hide like the mice.

Some had come here with their loved ones or their comrades. However, their loved ones and friends had been buried in the swamp. They would never wake up again.

Mia, Phelps, and the Bai family had assaulted them without any

warning. They had robbed many things that didn't belong to them and killed so many people. As time flew, this kind of grudge wasn't diluted and it thickened.

"If we scatter and hide, we will be killed one by one. There will be no hope." Wu Feng had a dark complexion, his eyes raking through many warriors standing in the outer edge. He talked indifferently, "Everyone here has experienced the bitter fruits from Mia and Phelps. Our family members and friends were killed. I think that even if we can't defeat the God Clan, we must do something for our deceased fellows."

As some of them were trying to leave, hearing Wu Feng, they quieted down. They stood still, their eyes becoming resolute.

They had recalled the situations they had to bear throughout these five years...

This group of geniuses from different star areas had had a grim countenance at this moment. They were looking at the ground and waiting for something.

Swoosh!

Just like a sharp blade running through the silk fabric sheet, a deep crack appeared under their feet. Radiant starlight shot out from that crack.

Everybody was skeptical. They stepped forward to look at the area where starlight was shooting out. They found that the starlight filled that crack like a sea. However, it just flashed and then disappeared.

As they were still surprised, a shadow rocketed out of the crack like a meteor or the lightning strike. He emerged all of a sudden, standing by the edge of the crack in the middle of a circle of warriors.

"It's you!"

Sha Zhao's face was cold. The demonic insects and the toxic

animals under his feet slightly rose, flowing like seawater towards the one who had just appeared.

Wu Feng and Wu Bai were baffled. They frowned but they couldn't react timely.

Inside the pair of cold eyes of the mud statue called Mo Fou flared a light of surprise. He shouted, "Stop it!"

Sha Zhao's complexion was dark as he ignored Mo Fou's shout. He opened his mouth to spray out a gray mist, which carried thousands of toxic insects. They moved like a gray cloud covering the one who had just emerged.

"Oh, you haven't died yet?"

Shi Yan grinned and touched his glabella. A red-orange flame flew out, falling to the center of the gray cloud of insects.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The smell of burning things suddenly filled the area. Many toxic insects couldn't even scream in that red-orange flame. They were burned into charcoal and smashed.

Sha Zhao snorted. He knew that it wasn't easy to kill Shi Yan. One of his dry, withered hands like a ghost claw had a crack in the palm where a round, gold-armored insect flew out. It screeched and attacked Shi Yan.

The armored insect flew like a sword and rapidly entered Shi Yan's eyes.

Deep inside Shi Yan's pupils, there was a sudden wonder like a vast sea of stars. However, the statuses of the sea of stars in his eyes were different. The stars in his left eye formed an angry bear while those in his right eye showcased a drawn bow.

He blinked his right eye.

Countless starlight dots gushed out from his entire body, creating a starlight bow in front of him. A dazzling starlight arrow flashed

like a meteor.

Boom!

The Life Gu that Sha Zhao had released, the plump armored insect got hit sent starlight sparks everywhere. It hissed strangely.

Sha Zhao's body moved as if someone had walloped him. He crouched on the ground, his chest heavy although his face still malicious.

The flying armored insect didn't dare to attack more. It lay on his shoulder, hissing and buzzing continuously as if it was complaining to its master.

Everybody was bewildered. They hurried to stand between Sha Zhao and Shi Yan. At the same time, they released their powers Upanishad to create the energy barriers between them to prevent them from fighting.

"You've refined the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree?"

Shang Ying Yue looked at Shi Yan, taking a deep breath. Her full lips twitched as she said, "Good. You've spent five years doing nothing but refining that Brilliant Star Fruit Tree. You've reached Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm, too..."

"I agreed to you that I would help you deal with the Bai family's warriors. Before we leave this ancient continent, I will do what I said," said Shi Yan in a low-pitched voice.

Shang Ying Yue curled her lips and gave a cold smile, "Dealing with the Bai family's warriors? Was that a joke? The Bai family goes together with Mia and Phelps of the God Clan. They are approaching to kill us. Do you want to fight them?"

The others also looked at him with an odd face.

"Guys, it's my personal issue with this man. Please, don't interfere." Sha Zhao stood upright, his eyes like a venomous snake gazing at Shi Yan, "Although the God Clan will come here shortly, I

want to kill this man first!"

Wu Feng and Mo Fou frowned.

"You can't kill him." Mo Fou cultivated the Earth power Upanishad, so he could move freely in this swamp area. His entire body was covered in dry mud, leaving only his pair of icy cold eyes. He said directly, "You can't kill him, but he can kill you. His blood Qi is more abundant than yours. He's stronger than you, indeed... Although your realm is one level higher than his, you aren't his equal opponent."

Wu Feng and Wu Bai were astounded hearing Mo Fou.

During the recent year, they had often joined hands with Mo Fou, so they knew his origin and they trusted his keen eyes. They knew that he had a special method to assess people's real competence.

In this group, although Sha Zhao wasn't the strongest, he was still leading one. Hearing Mo Fou, he wondered if the one who had just emerged from the ground had the capacity to beat him up. Was it true?

For the time being, people found it hard to accept.

"The woman called Mia is a member of the God Clan?" While people were contemplating, Shi Yan's brows twitched and he asked suspiciously, "well their appearance..."

"The God clansmen will transform in fierce battles. When they don't combat, they look more like humans. But they look much better," explained Wu Feng.

Shi Yan got it immediately, "Turns out it's so." He didn't use his Immortal Demon Blood, so he looked just like an ordinary man. From this feature, he was similar to the God Clan, indeed.

"Mo Fou, is he strong?" Wu Bai brought the big hammer, his voice like the big bronze bell and his face enthusiastic.

"Extraordinary. Considering his God power and his tenacious

body, he... surpasses you!" said Mo Fou.

Hearing him, Wu Feng, Shang Ying Yue, and Sha Zhao changed their countenances. When they looked at Shi Yan again, their eyes were shining.

People all knew that Wu Bai was born with the gift of strength. His refined body could be compared to metal and it carried a formidable amount of energy. In people's eyes, he was the most dominating and strong warrior. After several confrontations with the God Clan, his power was proven.

Today, Mo Fou told them that Shi Yan's energy and body were even stronger than Wu Bai's. Everybody was frightened by this assessment.

"We need his strength," continued Mo Fou.

Wu Feng and Wu Bai nodded almost immediately. And they now considered Shi Yan an equal existence. No one looked down on him.

Because they trusted Mo Fou.

Sha Zhao's visage was still grimaced, but he didn't act rashly the second time. He quieted down and stood there with a complicated countenance.

"We need him," Shang Ying Yue intervened. Hesitating for a while, she said earnestly, "What we need from him isn't only his power. There's something more..."

"What?" Wu Feng and Wu Bai looked at her.

"Remember what I told you? If we can find someone, perhaps... we won't have a bad defeat in combat with Mia and Phelps. We can even overturn the situation." Shang Ying Yue had a complicated look.

People understood what he was saying.

Half a year ago, after a defeat that cost them three experts, they

gathered and winced, trying to find a solution. At that moment, Shang Ying Yue used to tell them that if someone was still alive, they would have the hope to win.

When people asked her why, Shang Ying Yue said that man perhaps was killed, so it couldn't do anything even if she explained to them.

Today, when she reminded them, people remembered what she used to say. They asked her the question that had lingered in their minds, "Why?"

"As long as he's here, we can know everything about Mia's team including their arrangement." Shang Ying Yue's look drilled into Shi Yan, throwing a heavy grenade. "He isn't bound to the restrictions of the ancient continent. He can use his Soul Consciousness to sense the commotions around different from us who got our eyes covered like the blind."

They were thrilled and they looked at Shi Yan. They opened their mouths and asked for proof.

"It's true that I can sense the commotion of living creatures around." Under people's hot gazing, Shi Yan nodded casually. His co-soul floated up silently from his head, dancing like a fire spirit above his head. "For example, right now, they're several hundred miles away from us. They're moving toward us in a horseshoe formation. At their speed, if we don't move now, they can catch us within two hours."

"Are you sure?" Mo Fou was so thrilled.

"I'm sure."

Mo Fou looked at Shang Ying Yue.

"He spoke the truth," said Shang Ying Yue.

"How marvelous!"

Chapter 1110: Are you All Mistaken?

At a corner of the swamp where more than ten dispirited warriors were scattered, but all were focusing on Shi Yan.

Mo Fou's cold eyes suddenly had a beam of electricity. "If you can observe the surroundings, I think we can take the upper hand when fighting Mia and Phelps."

Shang Ying Yue was the one who understood Shi Yan's value the most. Seeing him appear out of nowhere, she exhaled in relief.

Lately, they'd been bearing a lot of pressure from Mia, Phelps, and the Bai family's warriors. They had to live in fear. After a few days, they would receive bad news or lose their friends.

Shang Ying Yue used to insist on finding Shi Yan.

She wanted to use Shi Yan's sensibility to assist people and help them out of danger. No one understood Shi Yan's value more than her.

It was too bad that after five years, Shang Ying Yue couldn't find Shi Yan. She thought that Mia's team had already killed him. Today, where she was in the most struggling situation, Shi Yan showed up, which boosted her confidence.

"I don't believe him!"

Sha Zhao pondered for a while and then said in a cold voice while observing Shi Yan with his dark face, "If his Soul Consciousness could recognize the energy, I couldn't have escaped him five years ago. I don't believe him! If his wrong presumption takes all of us to the deadly road, who can bear this responsibility?" He coldly glanced at Shang Ying Yue and then at Shi Yan.

"I also don't believe him." Wu Feng frowned and said to Mo Fou, "I believe in your assessment of his real competence. It's not bad. But I don't think he could sense the life energy fluctuation around us."

Taking a deep breath, Wu Feng talked to Shi Yan with a severe countenance. "I'm so sorry. We must be cautious. If you make a wrong presumption, we will be killed."

Hearing him, the others also showed their suspicions of Shang Ying Yue's words.

Among those people was a beautiful woman. She was called Cecilia and she was a Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm warrior cultivating Water power Upanishad. She wore tight green leather clothes with elegant drawings. At first glance, she looked like a graceful Nagini.

She dashed like a stream of water while frowning and then stood by Mo Fou. She studied Shi Yan skeptically. "I understand that it's not easy to believe someone."

Cecilia didn't get along well with Shang Ying Yue. In her opinion, Shang Ying Yue didn't have enough experience. In some operations, she was impulsive and followed her instinct. Due to Shang Ying Yue's rash actions in dealing with Bai Hao, their defense broke, leading to the death of one of their experts.

Thus, Cecilia had never trusted Shang Ying Yue. She thought that the girl was blind because of her resentment. She could do things that harmed others in this group.

Since Sha Zhao, Wu Feng, and Cecilia had doubts, Mo Fou was baffled. He slowly got his cognition. Thinking for a while, he quieted down.

He looked at Shang Ying Yue and then Shi Yan, his frown undetectable.

It's related to people's lives. If he wasn't careful, everybody could be consigned to eternal damnation. If Shi Yan lied... everybody here would be killed by Mia, Phelps, and the Bai family.

-- They couldn't afford any mistakes.

Mo Fou had to be cautious

"We understand that we should treat him well."

"It's related to our lives. We must get it proven."

"As long as he can prove that he has this ability, we will believe him and allow him to join us. Otherwise, let him be on his way. We don't want any unexpected danger."

The ones who hadn't talked also screamed.

Some of them were skeptical that Shang Ying Yue had bragged about Shi Yan's ability so that people in this group would allow him to join. Anyway, in this critical moment, a lonely warrior would be a prominent target and he was to inevitably going to be killed by Mia's group.

Only going with them and joining their group would give him a chance to survive.

Besides Shang Ying Yue, the other ten warriors including Mo Fou, Wu Bai, Wu Feng, and Cecilia all looked at him and asked him to prove his ability.

"I will leave this area for a moment. You will show them my location to prove your ability."

Under people's skeptical looks, Shang Ying Yue, with her discontent, had to do that because she knew that they were afraid of making mistakes. Thus, she asked Shi Yan to demonstrate his ability.

All of a sudden, eleven warriors looked at Shi Yan and asked him to prove his ability to show them the direction and timing.

Under people's gazing, Shi Yan suddenly smiled, his face awkward. "... I think you are mistaken here. Since when have I asked to join your team and help you to defend against Mia's team? You guys are... a little self-righteous, eh?"

Mo Fou and Wu Feng changed their faces silently.

"Well, you guys do what you want to do. We shouldn't interfere

with each other. I guess I won't see you later." Shi Yan smiled, leaving in their angry looks.

"Shi Yan!" Shang Ying Yue followed him and screamed in her low-pitched voice. "We need you!"

"Ridiculous! Your lives don't matter to me! Well, you're about to die, but you're still f*cking skeptical. You don't know how high the sky is for sure." Shi Yan sneered, flying away like a cold, dark meteor. He didn't mind Shang Ying Yue following.

Mo Fou, Wu Feng and the others heard him mocking, their faces grimaced, especially Sha Zhao. He gritted his teeth and said, "We should kill him!"

"His lies were exposed. He knew he couldn't join us, so he decided to leave." Cecilia sneered and said to Sha Zhao, "It's good then. If he leaves us, Mia and Phelps will kill him soon. Perhaps, he could seize more time for us with his death."

Hearing her, Sha Zhao laughed and nodded, "If he doesn't follow us and he stays in this swamp, he will be killed shortly."

"Yeah, even we had to struggle hard. I wonder how long he will resist." Wu Feng frowned.

They thought that Shi Yan left because he was scared. They thought that Shi Yan was embarrassed since his lies were revealed. He couldn't do anything but leave.

"That man has style in lying. Haha. He dared to say that Mia's team is just several hundred miles away from us and we would meet them soon. Like it's real." Wu Bai held his gold hammer and couldn't hold his laughter. "We've just ditched them not long ago. How could they reach us within two hours? That brat lied to us."

People started to discuss, but no one considered Shi Yan's words.

Minutes later, Shang Ying Yue returned, her face dejected. She sighed and then said, "That damn brat doesn't have human compassion."

Everybody looked at her and teased, Sha Zhao wasn't trying to be polite. "He wants to die. We can blame people for his decision. He left because his lies were exposed. If he dies, he's unlucky."

"He's just a kid at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. His death doesn't matter to us. Even if he can survive, he can't help us much. We should discuss how to deal with Mia's team," advised Wu Bai.

"Yeah, right. We should think about how to deal with Mia," said Wu Feng.

No one minded Shang Ying Yue's words.

Under people's ridiculing, Shang Ying Yue was cold and harsh. She quieted down.

She knew that after Shi Yan'd left, whatever she told them would be just in vain. Giving them more explanations would arise more mocking. Thus, she didn't say anything but bear the irritation alone.

She added this grudge together with her resentment towards Shi Yan.

She thought that if Shi Yan could ignore people's taunts and cooperate with her to prove himself, she wouldn't be mocked like this. He could help them survive and he could help her to kill the Bai family's warriors.

However, because Shi Yan had left deliberately, her excellent plan was broken. They couldn't overturn their damned situation.

That heartless bastard!

Shang Ying Yue gritted her teeth and cursed.

Several hundred miles away, by a clear lake where the lush Blue Moon Grass grew, Mia, the Bai family's warriors, Phelps, and more than twenty members of the God Clan were gathering. Six God clansmen were harvesting the Blue Moon Grass, while Mia and

some beautiful ladies were bathing in the lake.

Then, three layers of light purple light covered their area and concealed their porcelain skin. People couldn't see through those barriers.

Handsome Phelps of the Ascot family was sitting cross-legged by the lake. He was holding a pentagonal crystal in his hand and taking the energy from it.

Not far from him, a middle-aged man wearing silver clothes with the makings of a noble was placing his hand on the ground. His palm was the center of an electric spider web that expanded to everywhere.

That man was called Yue Man, a member of the Fernandez family. He was an expert in searching and tracing. He didn't need to use the Soul Consciousness to track the opponents down.

Three minutes later, Yue Man stood up silently by the lake.

A moment later, Mia flew out of the lake, wearing a long dress like a noble princess. She smiled at Yue Man. "Uncle Yue Man, how is it doing?"

"I've found the direction. They are several hundred miles away from us. I guess it will take two hours to get there." Yue Man smiled gently and added, "They seem to not be leaving. They've lingered there for a long time. Haha, our fortune is good. The upper limit of my searching is right within their location. If they have to run further away, I couldn't have found them."

"It's their bad luck," Mia said with compassion. Then, she added deliberately, "Well, we are going to make it worse."

They hurried to gather, adjusted their conditions for a while before dashing in Mo Fou and Sha Zhao's direction.

Chapter 1111: Unvalued Little Fish...

It was a green marsh where willow-like algae hovered on the water surface in tufts. Wisps of shining green smoke diffused from the marsh, creating a deep green cage with a sour smell.

In a place that had a lot of algae, Shi Yan stood in the lake and the water reaching his waist. He lifted his head to watch the toxic green smoke hovering like fabric sheets. He couldn't help but take it in.

Wisps of green smoke and mist streamed towards his mouth and nostrils. The sour and bitter poison diffused in his body. Where it glided over, his blood and flesh felt numb, his bone rigid. His blood began to be sluggish.

This kind of toxic substance could paralyze his body's functions and make him lose control of his body. After a while, he would feel powerless and his God power would be drained...

It was a poisonous air that could erode people's bodies slowly.

A strange light flashed in his eyes. The Poison-dipped Cold Bead hiding in his soul altar emerged on his tongue. A suction force was released from the cold black bead. Right after that, a silk fiber that couldn't be seen with naked eyes flew out from his body and entered the Poison-dipped Cold Bead.

The green water in that marsh and the toxic gas contained the deadly poisons. In this swamp area, there were so many places like this.

This area wasn't far from where Mo Fou, Wu Bai, Cecilia and the others gathered. It wasn't more than one hundred miles away. Although warriors couldn't fly a lot in the ancient continent, to Ethereal God Realm experts like Shi Yan, they could fly one hundred miles quickly, especially the warriors who cultivated Space power Upanishad.

A scorching flame flickered continually above his head, which looked like a small sun releasing shining light.

The life energy fluctuations from several hundred miles away reflected in his head through the co-soul.

Mo Fou, Wu Feng, Wu Bai, and the others didn't move yet. Perhaps they were discussing how to deal with the God Clan's threat. His Soul Consciousness elongated. After several breaths, his visage changed. Divine light sparkled in his eyes as he focused on observing.

Shi Yan had located the accurate location of Mia, Phelps, and the Bai family.

There were twenty-seven warriors with seventeen Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm experts and ten Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm experts. This group of twenty-seven warriors had full Blood Qi and robust life energy magnetic fields. Their real competence was higher than what they appeared to be.

Mia was prominent in that group. Her surging life energy magnetic field could be compared to that of the warrior at Incipient God Realm. Her abundant Blood Qi wasn't less than Wu Bai's.

Besides the four warriors of the Bai family, the rest of them were God Clan's members. Each of them was super powerful and was much stronger than other warriors in the same realm.

Watching silently for a while, Shi Yan retrieved his Soul Consciousness, his face darker and heavier.

It was much difficult than what he had imagined.

His primary purpose wasn't to help Shang Ying Yue deal with the Bai family's warriors. He wanted to take the Seven-colored Demonic Flower that Mia was holding. It was his crucial mission when he came to the ancient continent this time. To recuse Yang Tian Emperor from the Soul Rotting Aphis, he must use this

demonic flower to awaken his mind.

Shi Yan must get the Seven-colored Demonic Flower at any cost!

The reason why he didn't want to go with Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, and Wu Feng was because he had his decision. Using the co-soul, which had the same origin as this continent, he could sense any commotion around. It wasn't different from a pair of eyes that could observe many things.

With this assurance, even if he didn't join Mo Fou's team, he could still deal with any danger. He could dodge the troop of the God Clan at any time.

With the Space power Upanishad, he wouldn't be defeated in this swamp. Unless he risked his life and jumped into the crowd of enemies, he didn't have any significant threat.

But if he joined Mo Fou's team, he would be bound and he had to share his privilege with them without any benefit. Of course, he wouldn't do such foolish deeds that gave him nothing in return.

He had planned to act alone. He would find the right chance to attack Mia and take the Seven-colored Demonic Flower. But now, he didn't think so...

This time, after sensing her energy accumulation and life magnetic field, he knew how strong Mia was. Under the given circumstance that Mia wasn't hurt, when they fought one-on-one, he couldn't gain the upper hand even if he had used all of his deeds.

And now, as Mia was going with the God Clan's troop, he had no opportunity to attack her. If he showed himself, he would be killed pathetically.

He pulled himself together, thinking about how to achieve his goal. After a while, his eyes brightened up. He couldn't help but sneer.

If he could use Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, Wu Feng, Wu Bai, and Cecilia,

he perhaps would have a chance to take what he wanted. And he didn't care if those people were killed or not.

A wisp of thought flashed in his head. He got the idea and now, he needed to develop it. He sank slowly, disappearing into the poisonous marsh.

"Young Lady, please hold on for a while."

The elegant Yue Man suddenly paused. He squatted down, placing one hand of his, which had complicated lines like a mysterious drawing, on a block of mud on the ground. However, the mud didn't stick on his slender, white hand as it was kept away by a faint halo.

Mia swung her creamy hand and made a strange gesture. All the warriors behind her including Phelps and the Bai family's warriors halted.

Everybody looked at Yue Man.

Electric beams like fish swimming through the ground were released from Yue Man's fingers. They happily stormed into the ground and moved fast.

Yue Man closed his eyes as lines were drawn into his brain. The surroundings were pictured in his mind with him as the center. All looked like a real photo in his brain.

"There's a small fish near us." Yue Man smiled as he was surprised, pointing at Shi Yan's direction. "He has only Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. I am guessing that he was careless so the troop had ditched him. Haha, this man is careless, indeed. He lingers in my observing scale. I don't need to use my power to recognize him."

He looked at Mia, waiting for her command.

"... If he's just at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm, we don't

need to send many people. We don't want to waste time, right?" Mia ordered deliberately, "Bai Hao, you guys go there and clear that fish."

The four warriors of the Bai family in Dry Bone Star Area bent their bodies slightly when receiving the order. Bai Hao took his men to leave this group.

"After clearing all the fish, should we keep those four of the Bai family?"

It was Phelps of the Ascot family talking with a malicious smile on his handsome face. He rose his hand, making a throat-cutting gesture. The Ascot family's members behind him grinned fiendishly. Apparently, they didn't consider the Bai family's warriors their comrades.

"We still need those four watchdogs." Mia smiled gently but her word was malignant. "We'll have to face the other families when we get to the Center. Although we don't need time, they're good pawns to sacrifice. Perhaps we can use them well though."

"Oh, Mia, you're so thoughtful," Phelps gave an honest compliment.

"Well, you're not bad, either." Mia giggled, her eyes watery. She stretched her body in a sexy posture where her waist bent amazingly. "We should hurry to finish it. Haig sent another message. He said he would be here shortly. He said we are too low."

"So we must hurry up," Phelps snorted. "I don't want to see his ugly mug."

"No one wants to see him," sighed Mia begrudgingly.

Everybody continued their trip neither hurried nor slow.

"We should move. They should be close to us now. We can't stay in a location for a long time."

Cecilia, the Nagini-like beauty, suddenly shivered as she woke up from her meditation. Her face was a little worried, "I don't know why I'm that anxious. I feel insecure. I'm afraid that we have to pay a big price this time."

Mo Fou, Wu Feng, Sha Zhao, and Shang Ying Yue jolted up from hearing her. Everybody grimaced. They looked at Cecilia with an odd countenance.

Recently, Cecilia could predict many bad things. She couldn't predict good things, but every bad thing she'd mentioned came true. Everybody discolored from hearing her. They also felt strange and insecure.

"Right, we shouldn't linger in one place for a long time," nodded Mo Fou. "They have an expert who can track us down. Although it can't be compared to the Soul Consciousness and it takes time, they can know our general direction."

People became heavy-hearted. They knew that Mo Fou evidently told the truth because during throughout this six-month period, no matter how hard they had tried to hide, the enemy would come to them after a short time.

"Alright, we should go to the Center and wait for its opening time." Wu Feng smiled coldly. "I don't believe that they could kill all the warriors from the four territories of the ancient continent. As long as the Center opened, we can get there. I don't think they will go after us until that time."

The others were shaken.

The drifting algae in the green marsh were turbulent for a while as Shi Yan stormed out of the water. Starlight sparkled on his body like a silver cage covering his entire figure.

He frowned, his eyes drilling in a direction to sense quietly.

Then, he disappeared from this marsh all of a sudden. His body

moved like a zigzag lightning strike.

Fifteen minutes later, Bai Hao's group of four appeared by the drifting algae. Bai Hao took a deep breath and said coldly, "Someone was here. But now it's not even a wisp of aura. He's gone." Within a short distance, they could still feel the living aura of people.

"Did he know that we were coming?" asked one warrior.

"No, it's impossible. Perhaps it's just coincidental." Bai Hao shook his head. He pondered for seconds and then gave up. "We're not Yue Man. It's not necessary to chase after that one. We should go and help them."

The other three nodded. They dashed with Bai Hao and went to their target destination.

Chapter 1112: Destroy

The northern territory of the ancient continent was filled with continuous glaciers. It looked like a sharp ice sword jutting into the sky with a freezing aura.

A group of more than twenty members of the God Clan was moving. It was led by a young man, sauntering through the glaciers towards the territory of swamps.

The leading young man had short hair, which looked like short but sharp steel needles. A handsome face accompanied by a set of exquisite armor. His armor had the drawings of burning fires.

More than twenty God warriors following him had calm auras and resolute eyes. They were like imposing mountains with abundant exploding energy that gave people a heavy pressure.

The glaciers situated one after another had buried many warriors under those people's raids. After less than five years, they had uprooted the so-called talented seeds of the great star areas in this territory of bitter coldness.

"Young Master, we can cross the glacier within three days to get into the territory of swamps where Mia and the others are," said a stiff-faced old man wearing a beautiful robe.

Haig nodded, his line of sight shooting like a lightning strike forward. He said nonchalantly, "Mia's team is useless. They're the slowest team so they haven't finished cleaning their area yet."

"When Young Master gets there, we can finish it then." Payton smiled and delivered compliments on time. He looked at the young man with respect.

It has been tens of thousands of years and the Bradley family was still the strongest family among the twelve families of the God Clan. They had authority in the Elder Committee.

And this Haig was the most outstanding star of the Bradley

family. He was young, but he was already at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm. He was just one step away from Incipient God Realm. He got the Origin of their ancestral star with years of experience in combat. His merits made people admire him. With his various personal experience, he could command the corps or train soldiers. This man had a will of steel that assisted his brutal and heartless deeds.

In the eyes of the God Clan's Elders, Haig didn't have a significant weakness. He was deemed the future leader of the Bradley family.

The Chief of the Bradley family could control almost everything in the God Clan or the master of the cosmos. They had nurtured Haig this way, though.

Until now, he had never let them down.

The operation in the ancient continent called "Desolate" was proposed by Haig. He also proposed himself to be the leader...

The God Clan had spread the Guiding Fruits to the star areas that were the threats to the God Clan. They had revealed mysteries of the ancient continent, which had attracted strong forces sending their powerful successors to the ancient continent. Then, Haig led the elite generations of the God Clan's families to join this operation of destroying the futures of the other star areas at once.

This heartless, malicious plan had shocked the Elders of the God Clan. They had to give him applause.

Many experts whose names were recorded in the Book of God of the God Clan wanted Haig to be the future leader of the God Clan. This operation where he took the outstanding young warriors of the families of the God Clan to the ancient continent was the last challenge for him. If he could carry out his plan successfully to eradicate all the geniuses and the future of the other star areas, he would claim the throne of the Chief of the God Clan in the future without any objection.

Before Haig came here, he had written a military pledge, which ensured his success in this operation.

He was full of confidence.

Because before he had entered the ancient continent, he had a chance to break through to Incipient God Realm, but he forcefully held it back and remained in Ethereal God Realm so he could be eligible to enter the strange planet. Since he had the Origin of their ancestral star, he could ignore the shackles of the ancient continent to use his Soul Consciousness and find the creatures hiding in any corner.

With the elite force of the Bradley family at Peak of Ethereal God Realm and the special advantage of using the Soul Consciousness, the victory belonged to him.

Payton smiled at him as if he had seen the future of the Bradley family in him or picture the beautiful image of the God Clan ruling over the cosmos. He felt proud of his family and, of course, of Haig.

"Remember one thing, our goal is to clear all the talented seeds of the other star areas." Haig arched his brows and said, "It's what the Elders have expected us to do. We must achieve it first before we figure out how to gain the biggest benefits for our families. You have to know which are significant missions and which are minor. We can't have internal issues before we've finished the main missions."

"I understand, Master," Payton smiled.

"Yeah, get going. We should reach the swamp early." Haig nodded. "Besides our territory, the other three still have some small problems. Just consider that we're going to help them extinguish the fire. It's not for them, but for us."

"Young Master, I'm glad you have prioritized the whole picture," Payton admired.

The experts of the Bradley family continued to cross the glacier

and approached Mia.

A group of God warriors silently scattered in an area of slippery mud. They were approaching in a direction.

The tips of Mia's feet touched the wet ground of the swarm slightly, floating up like a feather. She didn't say anything but continued to give gestures to make people scatter and expand their encirclement.

Yue Man gracefully led in the front to show them directions.

All of a sudden, the hissing of tearing-air arose from a distance ahead. Mia's face changed slightly. She called out for her warriors to halt.

Shortly after, Bai Hao's team of four tiptoed and gathered by Mia. Bai Hao shook his head and explained begrudgingly. "They had left before we came."

Mia's bold brows furrowed as she spoke indifferently. "Forget it. We should focus on the main targets first. We'll get back to that small fish later."

Bai Hao bowed to her and showed his apology.

Waving her hand, Mia winked at Phelps and asked them to move.

Twenty-seven God warriors were arranged in half a circle formation. They moved further. Their targets were within reach now.

If someone could hover in the sky, he would be able to see that Mia and Phelps were about to cast the net to catch fish. Their net was expanding and getting closer to Mo Fou, Shang Ying Yue, and Wu Feng.

Mo Fou and the others were the fish, but they didn't know that and moved at their regular speed. They hadn't recognized the

threat.

Between the two teams were dirty streams that were narrow and meandering like snakes.

Inside one of those streams was a ghostly figure whose clothes were so clean that it was as if they weren't affected by the dirty water. He grinned and looked at Mia and Phelps. Then, he looked at Mo Fou and Shang Ying Yue who hadn't recognized the coming danger. He squinted and gazed at Sha Zhao who was walking in the back of the formation.

The sea of stars in his eyes changed. The starlight in his body suddenly condensed into a starlight bow and an arrow in front of him. A shooting star moved like a rainbow bringing the brutal, tearing power that could rip the sky off.

Magnificent starlight bloomed in the horizon and flew with the trajectories of the stars that had connected the thick earth and heaven energy to the starlight arrow. That starlight arrow became terrifyingly sharp and it thrust in Sha Zhao's back. The mournful whistle tore the air.

Sha Zhao's face chilled within seconds. He couldn't help but spurt out blood. The Life Gu insects in his blood wiggled, hissing and buzzing. They immediately aligned into the malicious formation of demonic insects that had to strenuously struggle to stop that starlight arrow.

A flow of destructive energy diffused. Countless starlight dots shot rapidly. Some of them exploded right at the area where the God Clan's warriors were hiding. Many of the God Clan's warriors had to urge their powers to stop the starlight or to move away.

"That despicable little brat!" Sha Zhao shouted angrily.

Mo Fou and Cecilia had to turn their head to watch Sha Zhao. They also saw the commotions in a distance that the God Clan's warriors caused when they changed their locations.

"They're here!"

Cecilia couldn't help but shout.

For the time being, eleven fish including Sha Zhao accumulated their energy to the utmost. Just like the light arrows, they accelerated dozens of times faster and dashed forward.

At the gathering point of the God Clan's members, Mia's charming face was as cold as frost. She hissed, "Get them immediately!"

Her line of sight was like an icicle drilling in a stream in front of her. She gritted her teeth in anger. When the starlight arrow was shooting away, she had recognized who had interfered with her business. It was the brat who had snatched the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree from her!

Throughout these recent five years, they had moved around the swamp area and killed a lot of warriors to collect materials, but until now, she hadn't gotten anything more precious than the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree.

The Brilliant Star Fruit Tree was robbed, which left a grudge in her mind. She could not forgive herself.

A kid at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm had tricked her with his powers Upanishad. He had taken the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree right in front of her, leaving her some mocking and provoking words...

Each time she recalled this, she was so bitter that she clenched her jaw. It was the only mistake she had had since she had arrived in the ancient continent. She would never forget it!

This time, her team had planned for a long time to kill the remaining warriors before Haig's team arrived. However, right at the critical moment, the starlight had pointed their positions and disturbed her plan in just a blink. As they couldn't form their attacking formation, their plan was destroyed.

It was the second time!

Mia took a deep breath. Her beautiful eyes twinkled with malicious thoughts. She hated Shi Yan deep to her bone.

After the God Clan's plan was interrupted, the God warriors had to chase after the others furiously. Their formation was stretched. When Cecilia, Mo Fou, and the others scattered, the God Clan's formation had to divide into smaller groups.

When Mo Fou, Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, and the others scattered, someone was going to be killed, but this kind of disbanding would save them from all being killed.

As the God warriors were chasing after the others, the warriors in the swamp area were scattering like lines diverging from the same source. One team was chasing after the other. And to the originator, the opportunity he was looking for had finally come.

Chapter 1113: Hidden Dragon Tying Sky

Members of the God Clan scattered to chase after the escapees. The outstanding warriors of different star areas ran disorderly. The lines of people started to leave further in the swamp from their starting point.

Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Cecilia would apply the same method when they were circled by the God Clan's warriors. However, they would gather to prevent being killed on the spot without having a chance to escape after that.

When they faced the God Clan, they would split up and leave the attacking range of the God Clan first and then gather again later.

In the swamp, the God Clan's team stretched and dispersed into small groups.

Mia's face was cold as she stood still. Bai Hao and Phelps had gone to pursue the escapees. Yue Man was busy giving directions of Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and the others to his clansmen, so they wouldn't need to search blindly.

The shadows of the God Clan's clansmen passed Mia. She frowned and stood by a murky stream.

Shi Yan had stormed out of the stream and dispersed like glass shattering in just a moment.

She knew that it was the ability of the Space power Upanishad. She also knew that the warriors with Space power Upanishad were the hardest target to capture. However, she didn't leave because she intuitively believed that Shi Yan hadn't traveled a long distance.

Not many people knew that besides the Gravity power Upanishad, her attainment in Mind power wasn't shallow. Sometimes, her intuition was accurate. She also believed in her feelings.

She could feel Shi Yan hiding near here.

Shortly after, there was no God Clan member nearby her. The Bai family's warriors had also gone. No one stayed to protect her, leaving her standing there alone.

"I'm curious as to why you could hide near here and Yue Man didn't recognize it to remind me. It means that you can even deceive Yue Man. You aren't ordinary." She pondered for a while and then smiled, her face glad and bright. "Now, there are two of us here. Can we meet up to talk?"

Although she could feel Shi Yan around here, she wasn't like Haig who had fused with the Origin of the ancient continent. Thus, she couldn't detect Shi Yan's exact location.

Mia's bright eyes had ripples of light. She smiled charmingly like a blooming rose. Her entire body emitted an aroma that enchanted people's mind and aroused any man. It made their heart beat faster and their blood boil...

It was one kind of seductive mind control.

Shi Yan was hiding deep inside a stream. He had adjusted his heartbeat, breathing and controlling his blood flows to be slower. However, he felt like a cat was scratching his chest with soft paws upon hearing her lazy but delighting voice arose above his head. He even had some sexy hallucinations in his mind ...

Beautiful ladies with very little clothes were sticking their tongues out and licking their lips. Their eyes were dreamy and seductive while they were dangling their breath-taking bodies that showcased their beautiful and yet forbidden features.

Those nubile women appeared in his brain, occupying his soul and Sea of Consciousness and sinking his consciousness. They made him rouse his extreme desires.

Although he didn't recognize it, his breathing became shorter and heavier. His eyes now had a naked hot light. Another version

of him was fighting and trying to break his control to burst out.

Gradually, he couldn't control it anymore.

Abruptly, an extremely cold aura diffused from the Poison-dipped Cold Bead.

It was like sleet on a hot summer day. The dry and hot feelings in his mind were smashed instantly as cold expanded in his entire body. Shi Yan pulled himself together. He hurried to stabilize his mind and adjust his condition.

By the stream, Mia guffawed, her graceful body shaking. Her enchanting eyes scanned the area where Shi Yan was hiding. She rose her five fingers and her terrifying power Upanishad exploded.

The gravity of the stream where Shi Yan was hiding changed. Shi Yan was pushed up by a rigid force, shooting up into the sky.

Boom!

He emerged from the murky water current, flowing to the horizon.

"Found you." Mia licked her full lips. Her eyes suddenly became cold and vicious. She shouted, "Dare interfere with my business. Brat, you court death!"

A jade token flew out from her waist that had the carvings of five-clawed silver dragons.

The jade token shivered. Twelve five-clawed silver dragons flew out from the token. There were twelve long iron chains tied on their horns that also jutted out of the palm-sized token. The twelve silver dragons were covered with delicate silver scales like shining pieces of silver. The five-clawed silver dragons looked real and tangible, their auras wicked and lethal.

With the jade token as the center, the twelve five-clawed silver dragons were roaring and screaming. They released their currents of silver energy that dyed the entire place silver.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Explosions echoed in the void. Twelve silver dragons roared and circled the token, continuing to release more silver energy.

Shi Yan was still pushed up by the stream under the silver dragons. His complexion changed.

The invisible void seemed to be real. It had turned into a prison that normal people couldn't see. It kept him inside.

Space seemed frozen.

"Do you think your Space power Upanishad is invincible?" Mia smiled gently, standing there gracefully. "Unless you've reached First Sky of Incipient God Realm, don't dream about tearing my divine formation, Hidden Dragon Tying Sky. I want to see how you fight against me!"

Mia was the daughter of the Chief of the God Clan's Fernandez family. Being one of the twelve great families of the God Clan, the Fernandez family controlled several vast star areas with incredible natural resources. It wasn't difficult to use those precious earth and heaven products to force the divine weapons.

The young generations of the core families all had powerful tools and weapons. As the Chief's daughter, Mia definitely didn't lack good divine weapons.

They had almost uprooted the Silver Dragon Tribe and used twelve Silver Dragons to create the Imperial Dragon Token. It could release the twelve confined five-clawed silver dragons to arrange the Hidden Dragon Tying Sky.

With her realm and the intensity of her God power, when she confined a First Sky of Incipient God Realm expert, he would find it hard to get out.

If Mia reached the Incipient God Realm and her God power advanced, the power of the Imperial Dragon Token would be increased tremendously, making her more intimidating.

The divine formation Hidden Dragon Tying Sky confined space. To the warriors cultivating Space power Upanishad, it was like a prison. Unless they'd reached a profound level, it wouldn't be easy to get out.

Since Mia was the owner of the Imperial Dragon Token, the formation didn't affect her. She could get in or out as she pleased.

She stood at her spot and pointed at the Imperial Dragon Token. The long chains that tied the twelve silver dragons forcefully pulled all the dragons down. It also dragged the space confining Shi Yan to the ground.

Shi Yan grimaced and looked at the twelve chains tying down the twelve giant silver dragons and the way they were struggling and roaring with empty eyes.

He still remembered God Perishing Land that led to Agate Star Area. In that land, the God Clan also used the same formation to chain the stone steles that could absorb blood and flesh from other warriors to recover the God Clan's warriors hiding inside. That way, the dying warriors could recover quickly.

Apparently, the divine formation Hidden Dragon Tying Sky by the twelve five-clawed silver dragons had the same principle with that evil formation.

He couldn't help but remember the members of the Bloodthirsty's bloodline that used to be imprisoned there...

"You can't escape. As you're at First Sky of Ethereal God Realm... Ah, no, you've reached Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Seems like you've refined my Brilliant Star Fruit Tree!"

While talking, Mia found that Shi Yan's realm changed. Her face got colder. "The Brilliant Star Fruit Tree was one of my goals. It would be the perfect gift from my coming nephew. It would help my nephew reach the Incipient God Realm without any danger. You've wasted the divine fruits. You've refined them all. You

deserve a thousand deaths!"

While talking, Mia entered the space where the Hidden Dragon Tying Sky was holding. She walked towards Shi Yan step after step.

Inside that strange space, the twelve giant silver dragons were dancing like twelve lightning strikes. Silver light sparkled and blinded people. Mia came, her eyes like a sharp icicle. She rose her hand and made a downward gesture, "You should die."

The gravity increased rapidly like a ten-thousand-meter mountain pressing down. The terrifying pressure made Shi Yan shiver uncontrollably. His bones sounded like explosions.

The heavy pressure came like a massive ocean pouring on him. The space confining him squeaked as if it couldn't stand anymore. It was going to explode in any second.

Mia wanted to use her power Upanishad to smash his bones and flesh to make him a messy, bloody pulp.

Under such terrifying pressure, Shi Yan bent as if someone was slowly pushing him down to the ground. The ground under his body exploded continually as it shattered like broken glass expanding from him. Countless cracks appeared and each of those bottomless cracks elongated tens of thousands of meters.

"God Clan, haha, a member of the God Clan."

His voice was hoarse as he grasped for his breath. Shi Yan stooped, but he was laughing strangely. His laughter became louder, which was getting wilder and crazier.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The lean muscles were like hills or mountains on his entire body. They sounded like a big explosion. Veins bulged harshly under his skin and gave a feeling of something violently beautiful.

Sssss!

A sharp thorn jutted out from his shoulder. Shortly after, his body changed dramatically. He then got the natural armor made of his skin and so many sharp spikes were on his shoulders, elbows, knees, and even on the back of his hands. Blood boiled in his body like brutal cheerings.

A massive murderous aura shot up into the sky. His eyes turned garnet like blood instantly, his face heartless and malicious. He faced the sky and laughed crazily, "Finally I can fight a member of the God Clan! So good!"

Mia gawked, staring at his transformation. Within seconds, he had an earth-shaking change. She was baffled at first. Her soft body shook as she sobered and shouted, "Immortal Demon Clan!"

Chapter 1114: Needlepoint vs Spearhead

Mia looked at Shi Yan who was laughing wildly. She changed her countenance quickly. Her contemptuous eyes were now focused. She became cautious in just a blink.

It was because Shi Yan had transformed all of a sudden.

Immortal Demon Clan!

As she was a core member of the Fernandez family, Mia knew many secrets of the God Clan. In this vast cosmos, they deemed themselves as Gods as they were the nearly perfect warriors in the world. Their longevity was almost eternal. Their bodies were extremely robust. Their recovery speed was unimaginable and their minds were transcendent in understanding different powers Upanishad...

God Clan was a clan that had had all the advantages of the great races. They had all the merits of the different races in their bodies. Besides the poor reproduction rate, they had almost no other weakness.

The God members were arrogant and proud of their origin and their identities. They thought that no race in this world could be as perfect as they were.

However, the twelve families of the God Clan, the great experts whose names were recorded in the Book of God, all knew that in this vast universe existed a clan with a small number of remaining members that wasn't weaker than them in any aspect...

That clan was called Immortal Demon Clan!

They were intimidatingly strong with extraordinary recovery ability. They were so powerful that they could transform like high-grade warriors of God Clan!

The shape of a God warrior that had transformed was called the God Undying Body. At the same time, the Immortal Demon

warriors could also turn into their Demon Immortal Bodies. The shapes of them after transforming were surprisingly alike!

With many similarities, many old God warriors had questioned whether the two clans could have something related back to their origins. It also made the God warriors nervous...

——They had always considered this race a significant threat and their archenemy! It'd been millions of years since the Immortal Demon Clan had been fighting them. They had never paused to rest!

Many years ago in the great war between the Bloodthirsty Force and the God Clan, the Immortal Demon Clan was the core force.

That war ended with the Bloodthirsty's defeat and the big loss of the Immortal Demon Clan. Afterward, God Clan had sent their best forces to chase and kill members of Immortal Demon Clan in every star area. They wanted to eradicate this race. Because of many similar features, the existence of this race had always made them bite their nails.

A long, long time ago, a Sage had investigated and announced a particular theory: he assumed that the God Clan and the Demon Clan shared the same origin.

The ancestral planet of the God Clan was an ancient continent. At the dawn of this universe, five ancient continents were created at the same time. Ancient God Star was one of them. Until today, that star was still the most secret place of Ancient God Star Area. It was the holy land of the God Clan and the forbidden land. Only the greatest warriors were allowed to visit that star. The solemn rituals and ceremonies of the God Clan were held there.

Ancient God Star was the homeland, the cradle of the God Clan, and one of the five ancient continents of this universe.

According to that sage, the Immortal Demon Clan was born in another ancient continent called Ancient Demon Star. Ancient

Demon Star and Ancient God Star were two stars of a binary star. They had many things in common.

As they were both ancient continents of the universe, Ancient God Continent and Ancient Demon Continent were surprisingly similar as if they were twins. They had given birth to the God Clan and Immortal Demon Clan. They both had God Blood and Demon Blood respectively. They could transform and their reproduction rate was low.

The two comparable races had been fighting against each other for billions of years ago. A long, long time ago, the God Clan and Immortal Demon Clan were the strongest forces in this cosmos.

However, rumors said that the Immortal Demon Clan had declined for a long time. Not only were its clansmen massacred, but no one knew where Ancient Demon Star was. Many people assumed that God Clan had also smashed that planet. No one had seen it ever since.

After their disastrous defeat, members of the Immortal Demon Clan moved to other star areas to survive and recovered their power. Later on, the Immortal Demon Clan was still the core members of the great operations of destroying the God Clan. They were still aiming at uprooting the God Clan to take revenge for their clan.

Before the Bloodthirsty Force had invaded Ancient God Star Area, the God Clan had experienced dangers that had almost eradicated this race. The Immortal Demon Clan was the most intimidating force in such operations.

However, after the defeat of the Bloodthirsty Force, the God Clan finally used all their powers to pursue and kill the Immortal Demon clansmen. After years of this cleaning operation, the number of the remaining Demon warriors was getting smaller and smaller...

As Mia was the key disciple of the Fernandez family of the God

Clan, she understood how terrifying the Immortal Demon Clan was compared to other clans. She knew how severe the damages that this clan had brought to the God Clan were. She had heard from her precursors that if this clan had been luckier... perhaps, they would have been the overlords of this universe.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

A chain of thought flickered in Mia's head. Her graceful body made cracking sounds as it was changing...

The clothes on her slender, gentle body were suddenly shattered by some unknown forces. Transparent scales appeared on her skin like leaves growing on a tree. Those scales were somehow made of a dazzling crystal, which released a powerful energy fluctuation that nothing could break.

Crystal spikes jutted out of her shoulders, elbows, knees, and the back of her hands. They looked like sharp icicles that made people respect and admire her.

It was the God Undying Body that only the pure-blood God members could have. Once they could transform into the God Undying Body, their powers and competence rocketed instantly!

Seeing Shi Yan transformed into his Demon Immortal Body, Mia didn't have any gleam of disdain anymore. She had to focus on dealing with this big threat called Shi Yan.

Compared to Shi Yan's shape, Mia looked much more beautiful. Her entire body was covered with crystal scales that clung to her body. They were fulgent like the most magnificent porcelain. However, those sharp spikes were like icicles that made people numb and gave them a sharp feeling.

Shi Yan's eyes were as red as blood. He looked brutal and wild as if he had fallen into bedevilment. The natural armor on his body had cracks that revealed his lean muscles and red skin. The bone spikes that jutted out made people imagine something evil and

wicked.

After they had finished their transformation, Mia's eyes became placid as if they didn't have emotions that humans should have. She looked curtly cold like a killing machine.

Shi Yan was different. His eyes looked like they were dripping blood, revealing his wild and ruthless intents. He seemed to utterly fall into the sea of blood. Desires occupied his mind, giving people a feeling of a crazy beast.

"We have only one policy to the members of the Immortal Demon Clan: kill every last one!"

Mia's voice was chilling to the bone. She didn't have a bit of emotion in her voice. One of her thorny, crystal hands pointed at Shi Yan.

Boom!

The thousand times heavier gravity pressed down.

Shi Yan roared like a caged beast. Veins bulged and wiggled under his skin. They wriggled like worms, releasing the deadly energy into the sky with earth-shaking currents.

The gravity field covering his body exploded in a reverberating way. Clusters of light that could destroy the planet shot out, shocking the twelve silver dragons. They were enraged, roaring and hissing by Shi Yan with their claws held out as if they wanted to rip Shi Yan apart.

Twelve five-clawed silver dragons had flowers bloom in their mouths. Those fresh flowers wiggled and bit the air like big buckets of blood.

"Dark Prison Demonic Flowers!"

Shi Yan said in a husky voice before bursting out laughing.

While he was in the God Perishing Land, he had known the Dark Prison Demonic Flower. He knew that it was a tool of the God Clan

that could devour blood, flesh, and Essence Qi to refill the God warriors. It was a peculiar and horrible creature in this world.

However, those Dark Prison Demonic Flowers were afraid of the heaven flames the most...

"Well, you know a lot," said Mia indifferently. "Seems like the Immortal Demon Clan and our clan are archenemies through generations. You know our deeds very clearly. Too bad that it can't change anything. The Dark Prison Demonic Flower hates only the top heating or the top Yang things..."

Her pupils shrank.

While she hadn't finished, clusters of red flames flew out of Shi Yan's glabella, hitting each Dark Prison Demonic Flower.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

The Dark Prison Demonic Flowers in the mouths of the twelve five-clawed silver dragons were burned down. They turned into ashes almost instantly.

All the five-clawed silver dragons with chains used to have empty eyes without a clear focus. Suddenly, they began to struggle hard. They halted as they were heading towards Shi Yan. They howled and aimed their attacks at Mia.

The Dark Prison Demonic Flowers were the things that controlled the dragon minds. When the flowers were burned, the dragons got control of their bodies back.

They hated the God Clan to the bone. To Mia, the one who had imprisoned them for years as slaves, their hostility towards her was so deep. As soon as they woke up, they showed their fangs and attempted to kill Mia to free themselves from the Imperial Dragon Token.

At that moment, the space confinement caused by the Hidden Dragon Tying Sky was broken. Shi Yan seized that chance immediately.

Grinning fiendishly, he wasn't hurried to attack Mia. His body flashed and he disappeared from the attacking rage of the Imperial Dragon Token. He wanted to make sure that he had enough room to attack or retreat. He didn't want to use his energy to withstand another confinement.

"Get lost!"

Mia shouted ear-piercingly when the twelve silver dragons approached her.

The Imperial Dragon Token suddenly had a powerful suction force. The twelve chains connecting to the dragon swung hard and retreated into the jade token.

The silver dragons roared and screeched unwillingly. They were pulled into the Imperial Dragon Token, turning into twelve dragon drawings on the token. Everything quieted down.

When Mia returned home, she would use the Dark Prison Demonic Flower to control their souls. Then, the Imperial Dragon Token was good again.

However, she couldn't use it for this battle anymore.

"Good. You've fused with the heaven flames. No wonder why you weren't afraid of the Dark Prison Demonic Flower."

Mia's face was strangely placid. She put aside the token, but she wasn't hurried to strike another attack. "After you got rid of the Hidden Dragon Tying Sky, you could leave this place immediately with your Space power Upanishad. Why are you staying?"

She knew clearly that without the Imperial Dragon Token, she couldn't kill Shi Yan, a warrior who cultivated Space power Upanishad. Thus, she wasn't hurried to strike another attack.

Chapter 1115: Pressing Earth and Heaven's Prestige.....

Mia stood like an ice mountain in the middle of the marsh. She looked at Shi Yan with cold eyes.

"I'm curious as to why you hid here? You could have left earlier. Do you have any plan?" As her mind flickered, she started to chat with Shi Yan.

Shi Yan looked like a volcano. His savage aura was thick and terrible as if he had a mental problem that would burst out in any minute.

Although both of them had transformed, Mia looked placid without a streak of human emotions. Shi Yan was brutal and ferocious like an enraged beast. He was wearing his most extreme face. They were truly two different poles of the extremes.

Only Shi Yan knew that if he didn't use the Third Sky of Rampage, he couldn't consume the negative energy in his acupuncture points that would put him into a crazy state under the boiling Demon Blood.

However, once he released his negative energy, he could sober up.

While fighting Mia, he didn't use the negative energy or the Death and Life power Upanishad. He was trying to not use the abilities related to the features of the Bloodthirsty's bloodline.

Shi Yan knew that even if he used all of the skills, he couldn't kill Mia. At the same time, his identity would be revealed. And if Mia got his identity, she could put everything aside to gather all the members of the God Clan here to kill him.

It wasn't a situation he wanted to see.

Thus, he didn't answer Mia's question.

He rose one hand, his palm facing a flame floating above his head. The co-soul suddenly became the most dominating magnetic field with an extreme suction force.

Shortly after, a thick cloud of earth and heaven energy above their head suddenly made a downpour that congregated on Shi Yan's co-soul and looked like an ignis fatuus. It was tied down as if his co-soul had gripped it in hand.

The unrivaled earth and heaven energy of the ancient continent was gathering like a stream of dense energy. Quickly, it transformed into a dazzling block of light like a falling sun that was aimed at Mia.

Calm Mia changed her visage for the first time. A gleam of fright flashed in her eyes.

That brilliant block of light had the energy of an area of ten miles around. This planet was an ancient continent that had the most abundant earth and heaven energy in this universe. The amount of energy from ten miles around could be compared to a suicidal attack of an Incipient God Realm expert.

Even Mia couldn't bear it.

The transparent scales on her entire body shivered. Rings of silver lights fluttered from her, merging with each other to create a rippling energy like the seawater.

She put on an extremely exquisite mask, which looked pale and vicious. However, it had frightening energy.

Peculiar drawings appeared on her mask. It looked like those fine lines were connecting with Mia's veins and releasing powerful energy that made her face emit silver light and send them to the silver light ringers around her. The energy surrounding her changed massively.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The chunk of energy like a small sun grumblingly pressed down,

impacting upon countless silver light rings above Mia's head. The ear-splitting explosions reverberated. It was like this area was receiving a tremendous earthquake.

The terrible energy storm expanded like a rising tide overflowing everywhere. It crushed all the grass, trees, and flowers, which stood in its way into powder. Even the hard stones were grounded. The area was destroyed under this attack. A massive pit covering the area of ten miles around appeared, which looked bottomless.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

Shadows headed towards their area. They had stopped their pursuit of Mo Fou's team because they were afraid something bad happened to Mia.

Shi Yan stood by the massive pit and used the co-soul to sense. He grimaced afterward.

So powerful!

Mia was safe and sound under that pressing-earth-and-heaven-prestige attack. Her soul and body didn't change much. She just received some scratches.

Shi Yan was terrified.

He thought that under the situation that he didn't get into Third Sky of Rampage to use his negative energy, he wouldn't be better than Mia if he had to bear such a strike.

That attack was the energy of the ancient continent that his co-soul had collected to create the sky's prestige. Only Shi Yan who had the same Origin as the ancient continent could gather the earth and heaven energy here to create the fatal attacks.

However, Mia wasn't hurt.

Sensing quietly for a while, Shi Yan found that more experts were coming to this area. He pulled himself together and then left discreetly.

As he cultivated Space power Upanishad, as long as the space wasn't restricted, it was easy to leave. Before Yue Man and the Fernandez family members arrived, he had disappeared.

After several minutes, Yue Man and Bai Hao's team came with worries. They were frightened as they looked at the deep hole. They all grimaced.

"Cough! Cough!"

Mia's voice arose deep inside the hole. Shortly after, Mia slowly floated up.

She had resumed her normal shape wearing a beautiful dress from the God Undying Body. Her face reddened and she had a trickle of blood on the corner of her mouth. She didn't look tired, but the cold light flared from her eyes which terrified people.

"Young Lady, what just happened?" asked Yue Man with worries, "Who could create such a powerful attack? Who can be so strong as that?"

Mia had a cold and harsh complexion. She frowned and contemplated, "He's strange. I doubt that..."

She paused midway. Perhaps it was because of the Bai family's warriors here, as she didn't want to let outsiders other than Yue Man know this. She stopped her line and asked all of a sudden, "Did you get any harvest?"

"When we heard the crazy commotion here, we hurried to get back. We haven't killed anyone, but Phelps and the Ascot family's warriors are hunting them down. Perhaps, they will kill some," said Yue Man.

"The woman who cultivates Lighting and Ice powers called Shang Ying Yue... do you know where she is?"

"Over there," Yue Man pointed at a direction.

Mia nodded and said, "Follow me there."

She remembered the first time she saw Shi Yan. He was together with Shang Ying Yue inside an invisible light cage. They had something ambiguous back there.

She knew that it was hard to subdue him since she couldn't use the Imperial Dragon Token anymore. In this case, to force Shi Yan, she had only one method: capturing the one he cared about.

Mia assumed that Shang Ying Yue was important to Shi Yan.

By a broken wooden club, starlight dots slowly gathered into Shi Yan's body.

He had resumed his body and then changed into a black warrior costume. Shi Yan was frowning and thinking.

Mia at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm was a high-level warrior of the God Clan. She could change forms in just a blink. She was solid and she also had a lot of divine weapons. It was almost impossible to take the Seven-colored Demonic Flower from her.

Although he used the negative energy and revealed his Bloodthirsty's bloodline, he wasn't so sure that he could defeat Mia.

If he wanted to get the Seven-colored Demonic flower, he had to seize the chance when Mia was hurt or... threaten her!

Threaten her?

His eyes brightened. He smiled after pondering for a while. He left quickly afterward.

Shi Yan and Mia had thought of the same location.

A group of four warriors was moving fast in the swamp area. They looked like four lightning strikes.

Not far behind them were the members of the Ascot family who

were striking their targets with different energy attacks. They had struck the swamp along the way, creating ditches and smashing any obstacles that were standing in their way.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were leading. God power was rolling in their bodies. They wanted to get rid of those chasers and regroup with Mo Fou and Wu Feng.

Suddenly, Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were shaken. They halted and looked to the area ahead with a dark visage.

The void in front of them had layers of invisible energy barriers that blocked the way. Those barriers were tenacious and flexible like cotton clouds. When they stepped inside, they couldn't struggle to get out of there.

When the two of them stopped, three shadows emerged from the void in front of them. The leader of that group was Phelps of the Ascot family. Phelps smiled tenderly and said, "Hey sisters, don't go. We can chat a little bit."

While Phelps was talking, the two Ascot warriors were building barriers behind him and expanding their coverage.

Five other Ascot warriors appeared behind Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue. They dispersed, approaching and circling the two women. All smiled and bowed at Phelps, "Young Master, how do you want to play with them?"

"Kill the other two first," Phelps ordered deliberately.

Some warriors of the Ascot family jumped over like hungry tigers. They glared at the two poor warriors accompanying Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue. Different energy attacks and divine weapons bombarded, their lights covering the two of them.

Broken starlight congregated. Shi Yan reappeared. Squinting, he looked at the layers of energy barriers in front of him.

The warriors of the Ascot family had set up the energy barriers carrying the power of Five Elements. Perhaps even a First Sky of Incipient God Realm couldn't break them. Shi Yan could see the figures of Shang Ying Yue, Cecilia, and Phelps under those barriers.

The battle inside the barriers was so fierce. The two warriors whom he had met together with Mo Fou were about to be killed. Their situation was fatal.

Phelps was smiling tenderly and chatting with Cecilia and Shi Yan while gazing at them.

Shi Yan grinned.

His target, Phelps, was the crucial warrior of the Ascot family. He was also the leader of the Ascot team this time. He wanted to capture this man to exchange for the Seven-colored Demonic Flower.

Chapter 1116: Break the Barrier!

Including Phelps, this troop of the Ascot family had eight warriors. Besides Phelps who was at a low realm, the rest of them were at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm. They were all from the elite force of the Ascot family.

Phelps was the second son of Chief Fick of the Ascot family. Fick favored this son a lot. For his safety during the operation in the ancient continent, Fick had used many good seeds at the Ethereal God Realm of their family.

The seven guards of Phelps were at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, and two of them could reach the Incipient God Realm soon.

Fick had three sons, but the oldest one was just an ordinary warrior. He had just reached First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Fick's youngest son was still so small so he couldn't use him. He didn't exert his efforts to nurture this son.

Phelps was his second son who was a prodigy. He had reached Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm when he was pretty young. He was much better than his big brother and of course, smarter. He had helped the Ascot family claim a lot of territories, making the elders in his family happy.

Fick had considered him the future of their family. Thus, in this operation on the ancient planet, he let Phelps take their experts to join and compete against the other families.

Watt was a member of the Ascot family. At the Peak of Ethereal God Realm, his mission in this operation was to take care of Phelps. He cultivated Earth power Upanishad and was one of the warriors who could break through to the Incipient God Realm shortly.

While the other six warriors of the Ascot family were joining hands to attack Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, Jiao Shan and Jiao Hai,

Watt hadn't moved yet. He had stood behind Phelps to increase the power of the barriers and to protect Phelps from an ambush.

A blue lightning strike shot out from his palm, entering layers of barriers behind him. After receiving a vibe sent back to his mind, Watt exhaled in relief.

The barriers were complete. Unless it was an Incipient God Realm expert or some warriors with the special ability, no one could cross his barrier shortly. It was no problem to keep Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, Jiao Shan, and Jiao Hai away.

Watt knew that Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia were both powerful. Their real competence wasn't less than the Incipient God Realm experts. However, he believed that they couldn't break through to Incipient God Realm while fighting the others. Thus, he could ease his mind.

Watt's long and narrow eyes were so cold as he gazed at Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue. The corners of his mouth pulled into a perverted smile as he laughed.

Shang Ying Yue's body was slender and mesmerizing with perfect curves. She looked graceful while having lightning beams winding around her slim waist. Those lightning strikes made her look hotter. Cecilia was mature. Her sexy, plump body was like a ripe peach. Her pink skin looked like juice that could drip out of there in any moment...

The two women were beautiful in different ways, but they were all able to drive men's desires.

Watt glanced at Phelps who was swallowing saliva. He frowned unrecognizably. He felt so begrudging.

He knew Phelps's habits.

This Young Master of the Ascot family didn't have a mother since he was a child. Fick had used bloody training courses to train him. When he was still a little boy, he had accepted assassination

missions dozens of times. His father had used brutal tests to check his abilities.

Perhaps because of this dark childhood, Phelps had an extreme personality... He was incomplete...

Torturing beautiful women was his fetish. For so many years, he had killed almost one hundred women from different races including kids or mature women from different star areas.

Watt had been serving and protecting Phelps for years. He was in charge of cleaning Phelps's mess too. He knew how pathetic those women were when their lives were taken.

However, he could also enjoy something from Phelps... Besides Phelps who crazily physically assaulted those women to death, Watt could also enjoy the victims' soft bodies as he was the closest watchdog.

Looking at Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia who had totally different bearings, Watt's eyes became nakedly hot...

He knew Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia were the best of the best. Compared to the women they had, they were much more outstanding. More importantly, the two women were at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, the same realm as his, which made him more excited.

Recalling the wonderful feelings he used to have, his body became hot and dry, his eyes looking at Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue more dissolute.

Compared to him, there was someone giving people chillier eyes. It was Phelps.

Phelps had gleams of green light in his eyes, which was a secret technique that he had practiced. Under his gaze, Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue had a strange and fearful feeling of having someone peeling their clothes piece by piece. They even felt like there were two slippery green snakes crawling on their bare skin. They felt so

frightened.

Thus, the two of them couldn't perform their best powers in this battle.

Phelps's and Watt's looks had brought them pressure that wasn't less than that from the Incipient God Realm expert. They made the two women who loved to stay clean felt so irritated.

Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, Jiao Shan, and Jiao Hai were circled by six warriors in an area of around ten mu of land. However, those warriors were bombarding Jiao Shan and Jiao Hai with their fire, ice, malicious tornadoes, and grumbling tremors from the underground...

Jiao Shan and Jiao Hai were attacked furiously. Their energy was drained quickly. They tried to get rid of the barriers. However, whenever they bounced back after hitting the barrier, the others had attacked them fiercer. They were bleeding terribly.

Cecilia was like a slithering green water snake. When she rose her hands and lifted up her leg, her mind would control the crystal clear streams and turn them into giant eagles, dragons or pythons. She could control the water currents in different ways to defend or attack.

Shang Ying Yue's body made thunderclaps noises. Bow-like lightning strikes flew like flying dragons, filling this confined space. She swung the lightning rod in her hand powerfully.

Every time her rod swung, it released a roaring electric dragon that created an earth-shaking commotion in this swamp area. However, they couldn't tear the energy barriers. Shang Ying Yue had tried many times and she found that only if she could clear her mind and accumulate energy for a while, she could use her divine weapon to strike with all her power once to break the barrier.

Unfortunately, the others wouldn't give her time or room to urge her powers.

Seeing that Jiao Shan and Jiao Hai were unable to hold it anymore and Cecilia was hasty, Shang Ying Yue felt like her mind was a mess of tangled silk threads and her eyes got colder.

Phelps and Watt had gazed at Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia the entire time. This kind of naked look made her want to tear him apart. However, Phelps's venomous, snake-like look made her so agitated. It could affect her energy somehow.

"Perhaps we can't get out of here," Cecilia was still calm, but her eyes looked bitter and mournful. "Since we can't get rid of it anyway, we'd rather have a deadly fight to take a few of them with us."

She looked at Jiao Shan and Jiao Hai. Three water ripples expanded from her while the murmuring sounds of water arose in her body. Right after that, her plump body looked thinner as if the water inside was drawn out a little bit.

It happened that way though.

Now, Cecilia had a water rope in her hands, which was around five or six meters with formidable five-colored energy. Her body shriveled and the rope was drawn from her palms. The God warriors discolored as they saw the water rope.

When Jiao Shan and Jiao Hai saw Cecilia drawing the water rope from her body, their faces became stern and brutal. Just like when the wild beasts facing death, they had to strike out with their strongest attacks. Blood oozed out from their pores.

Shang Ying Yue's cheeks showered her malignant intent when she saw Cecilia, Jiao Shan, and Jiao Hai prepare to strike with their best. She also urged her energy to use her secret ability.

Although she didn't want it, she had no other option around. She understood that even if she used her last trick, she couldn't get out of here intact. However, if she didn't do anything, Cecilia, Jiao Shan, and Jiao Hai would be killed soon. If she didn't cooperate

with them, they couldn't damage the Ascots much.

She didn't have a feeling for Cecilia, Jiao Shan, or Jiao Hai. They had grouped because of the God Clan's threat. They wanted to survive, which was their ultimate goal.

In other given circumstances that didn't have the threat from God Clan, she perhaps would be the enemy of the other three. They would fight and even kill each other for the benefits.

But right here in this area, they were loyal comrades against Phelps's circle. They had to advance or retreat together.

The opponents had pushed them into a dead end.

"Here comes the excellent performance!"

Phelps's body shivered in rhythm, his face enjoyed. He squinted and said, "Someone's going to die. I love to see people die the most. I've loved it since I was a little boy. From the first time I killed someone, I've loved such feelings."

He seemed to immerse in his memories, his face delighted while a gleam of fearful malice sparkled in his eyes...

On the day of his Growing-up ceremony, Fick had arranged him a special ceremony alone: the bloodiest feast he had ever had and had never forgotten. Fick had let him massacre more than ten warriors from different races. It was the biggest nightmare of his life, which had given him harshness and intimidation later. However, his mentality was distorted ever since.

Phelps shivered and sank in his bloody memories. He seemed to see so many enemies that he had tortured to death and the women he had killed under his sadism. He became stirred up.

Watt was also restlessly excited. His eyes were scorching hot while his private member was rising and pointing at Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue. He licked his lips and pictured some fancy, soul-taking images...

"Swoosh!"

A vivid blood light cut through the sky, dying the horizon red like it was dipped into real blood.

Since Watt was connected with his energy barriers and wasn't prepared, he was struck, facing the ground. Half of his body pierced into the ground. He screamed as if his bones were broken.

Phelps was startled. He found that the barriers behind him were torn apart. At the same time, a feeling of extremely insecurity tingled his scalp. It was like a terrifying ghost shadow shading him all of a sudden.

He seemed to return to his Growing Up ceremony. His mind was filled with fears. He had a powerless feeling and had no strength to resist.

Chapter 1117: Hold Hostage!

A dazzling blood-red light tore the sky. Watt at Third Sky of Agate Star Area was walloped. He bared his teeth, crouching and convulsing on the ground. He couldn't support his body to stand up.

Watt could build different and complicated energy barriers. He had a talent for learning and casting complex formations. However, everybody knew that whenever they wanted to build a strong barrier, the warrior had to send his soul into it. The stronger the barrier was, the more soul energy he had to contribute.

Also, there was some kind of barrier that could interlink with the warrior. Once the barrier had any tiny change, the builder would know it instantly.

Watt's attainment in casting barriers was high. The barriers or restrictions he made could interlink with his soul. When the barrier was torn, his soul also received the pain of having a sharp blade cutting through his soul. He got hurt instantaneously.

When the barriers shattered, Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were shocked. The warriors of the Ascot family also recognize something wrong.

In just a blink, everybody made their decision. Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, Jiao Shan, and Jiao Hai tried their best to get rid of this circle while the Ascot family's warriors wanted to know what happened to their barriers first.

When they saw Watt crouching and convulsing on the ground, they discolored and instinctively looked for Phelps to protect him.

Before they had departed to the ancient continent, Fick, the Chief of the Ascot family, had ordered them to protect Phelps. As Watt couldn't protect him, they automatically considered protecting

him their priority.

Especially as they saw Phelps being strange...

When the barriers were torn apart, Phelps' Sea of Consciousness had been filled with negative emotions, which had stirred up the weakness in his mind. He was taken aback to the moment he had experienced his Growing Up ceremony. He was restlessly worried, indeed.

Under the given circumstance, Phelps' consciousness was chaotic. His sensibility was weakened and he couldn't use all of his powers.

Swish! Swish! Swish!

Three white Bone Thorns ghostly emerged like lightning from nowhere. They thrust into Phelps' chest.

"Young Master, watch out!"

Watt balled his body and shouted. He didn't mind his life and used his chest to shield the attack from the three bone thorns.

At the same time, all the members of Ascot family stormed towards Phelps as if they were all crazy. They wanted to use their bodies to shield all the attacks. Then, they would slowly punish the attacker.

Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, Jiao Shan, and Jiao Hai felt that their danger was lifted. The barriers were ripped apart and the warriors of the Ascot family didn't notice them. It was the best chance to run away.

They exchange looks. They could see the hesitation in each other's eyes. They hesitated as if they wanted to seize the chance and counterattack.

"It's a rare chance!"

Shang Ying Yue hissed. Lightning beams bombarded from her body. They were like dozens of lightning snakes attacking the

Ascot family's warriors.

Cecilia, Jiao Shan, and Jiao Hai were still hesitant. Seeing Shang Ying Yue taking action, they didn't hesitate anymore and urged their energy. Their looks were all focused on the warriors of the Ascot family. They wanted to join hands to damage their opponents.

Until this moment, the attacker hadn't shown up yet. Shang Ying Yue didn't know who had aimed at the Ascot family.

However, the four of them knew that without that attacker who had discreetly torn the barriers and drawn the attention of the Ascot family's warrior, they were going to be tortured to death.

The Ascot family was one of the twelve families whose reputation was spread over in the vast universe. They all knew about Phelps's strange and wicked fetish, which was indeed nauseating to women.

. . . After they knew Phelps's identity, Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue had made up their mind: they would rather die together than let themselves fall into Phelps's hand.

They knew the results of the women who had fallen into Phelps's hands.

Swoosh!

A white Bone Thorn disappeared. The other two Bone Thorns pierced through the gaps between the Ascots as if they had eyes. They made a turn and reappeared behind Phelps.

At the same time, a narrow space slit emerged behind Phelps. A shadow walked out like he had just torn a sheet of fabric. His hands held two white Bone Thorns stabbing into Phelps's back.

Brilliant rainbow light rippled from Phelps in many layers. They were filled with marvelous thick energy and the powers of the Five Elements.

The two bone thorns stabbed the multi-colored halos as if they

were thrusting into a sponge. They felt powerless and couldn't make sparks of power.

Boom!

An energy barrier that could confine people snatched over Shi Yan. Shi Yan felt as if his entire body was tied down. His actions became stagnant.

"Kid, you court death!"

Watt had a look as he grinned. His hands were making hand seals like a blooming lotus that was aimed at Shi Yan.

A flow of energy that could seal the soul flooded and generated in his soul altar. A strange, massive lotus appeared in Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness. That lotus was so big it had occupied all the room in his Sea of Consciousness, which made his Soul Consciousness ineffective.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Burning lightning, sharp icicles, and a sand-yellow punch dashed from three different directions, hitting Shi Yan's body. Shi Yan was shaken hard. He felt his internal organs get displaced. His blood gushed out instantly.

While his blood was splashing, Shi Yan staggered, his face remaining unchanged except for a gleam of malicious, cunning intent.

Puff!

It was the scream when a blunt weapon stabbed into flesh. In the next moment, Phelps clutched his stomach and screeched crazily.

A white bone thorn, which had disappeared before, stabbed Phelps in his stomach. Half of it was jutting out of his waist. The bone thorn had broken his blood vein. Blood streamed out from his stomach and waist. Phelps held the thorn with both hands, his face twisted in pain as if someone was pricking his flesh one piece after

another.

The bone thorn in his stomach was still moving!

"Kill him! Kill him! Quickly! Kill him!" Both Phelps and Watt shouted.

The six warriors of the Ascot family became wild, urging their energy to the acme. They attempted to deliver Shi Yan to Hell in one breath. They wanted to kill him in one second.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

All of a sudden, the water-like earth and heaven energy of the ancient continent overflowed like a rising tide, shielding Shi Yan.

While people were screaming in fear, Shi Yan glanced at Phelps and gave a low-pitched shout.

The thick wall created by earth and heaven energy burst like a seething sea, pushing people away like they were struck by a tornado. Each of them was spinning or falling.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue had frightened countenances. So did Watt, the Ascot family's warriors, and even Phelps...

While people were trying hard to steady their bodies, Shi Yan's body glided in a strange curve. He appeared behind Phelps in a blind spot of people's vision. A blood light appeared. The brilliant halo like a rainbow protecting Phelps was smashed.

Crack!

Shi Yan clutched Phelps's neck with one hand. Phelps's bones cracked. Shi Yan grabbed the bone thorn with another hand and stabbed Phelps' heart. The sharp tip of the bone thorn had sunk into his flesh. Blood bled immediately.

"Quiet!" Shi Yan said coldly.

The other warriors landed, trying to steady their bodies. Watt and the other warriors of the Ascot family halted, their eyes red. They all gazed at Shi Yan, but none of them dared to act rashly.

Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan were filled with surprise and inexplicable doubts. They all furrowed their brows and looked at him with fright.

Phelps, the leader they had to protect, was ambushed and held hostage. Shi Yan's series of attacks had dizzied them and made them shocked. They had a whole new understanding of him. Even Cecilia, a warrior who had looked down on him a lot, couldn't deny the fact that his deed was brutal, curt, and sharp to the point. She could never imagine Shi Yan doing this.

"What do you want?"

Surprisingly, Phelps was calmer than anybody else. His two hands were busy covering the wounds in his stomach that were still bleeding. He gritted his teeth and didn't scream anymore. He just looked darkly ahead of him.

"If you do anything to Young Master Phelps, the Ascot family will not spare your life! No matter where you are, our experts will hunt you down. Whichever star area you stay in, you will die. There is no doubt."

Watt looked like a hurt wolf. His small eyes were like razors shaving Shi Yan's body. He talked slowly.

"Well, if I'm not mistaken, Spot was a member of the Ascot family, right? I think you all know that he's dead now." Shi Yan grinned, his face ferocious and malignant. "He died in my hands. Before he was killed, he also told me that he was a core member of your Ascot family. He also said that the Ascots would take revenge for him. I finished him anyway."

Listening to him, Watt, Phelps, and the other warriors of the Ascot family felt like they had just fallen into an ice chamber.

Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, Jiao Shan, and Jiao Hai were aghast. They looked at him as if they were looking at a monster.

Spot was Sloan's son and Watt's cousin. He was also an

outstanding warrior of the Ascot and was a prominent member. However, only the key members of the Ascot family knew about his death. The other families of the God Clan didn't know this information.

When Shi Yan told them this, Watt and Phelps had no doubt. They confirmed that he was the murderer. Because besides the murderer, no outsider could know this case.

Watt, Phelps, and the other warriors of the Ascot family quieted down. They were trying to figure out how to deal with all of these.

Chapter 1118: What Does it Matter to Me?

A corner of the swamp.

Shi Yan was gripping Phelps's neck with one hand and he was holding a sharp Bone Thorn with his other hand whose tip was sinking into Phelps' chest. Just a little push and Phelps' body as going to collapse.

Another Bone Thorn was stirring Phelps' stomach. Although it brought him unimaginable pain, it wasn't enough to take his life.

The body of many races had three deadly weak points including the head, heart, and the vortex in their lower abdomen. The soul alter hiding in the head was where a warrior's soul dwelled. The whirlpool in his lower abdomen was the center of his energy. Once it was broken, the energy of his entire body would vanish quickly. He would become an ordinary warrior who couldn't withstand even a blow.

The heart was the blood pump, the engine of the warrior's blood and flesh. If it was broken, that body couldn't live anymore.

Shi Yan had used the bloody sword to break the rainbow halo that protected Phelps. He was using one of his Bone Thorns to poke Phelps's heart, which prevented Phelps from transforming into his God Undying Body. As soon as he had the slightest commotion, Shi Yan could kill him easily.

Phelps didn't dare to act rashly. Watt and the warriors of the Ascot family suddenly quieted down.

They didn't threaten him anymore. Their eyes were drilling into Shi Yan with fear... That was a madman who's crazy of killing!

—— Because he killed Spot.

Spot was Sloan's son and Sloan was Fick's brother. Spot was also a key member of the Ascot family, whose position wasn't lower than Phelps. If he dared to kill Spot, why would he be afraid of

killing Phelps?

Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, Jiao Shan, and Jiao Hai all had complicated complexions. As they watched Shi Yan holding Phelps as a hostage and Phelps bleeding badly, they felt their hearts chilled.

"I am asking to know your purpose."

Although Phelps was being held hostage, he was so placid as if he had forgotten all the pain. He spoke slowly, "You keep me alive. You didn't kill me immediately. You must have some other intent... what do you want after all?"

"You're the future leader of the Ascot family. You're still calm at this moment. I admire you though." Shi Yan nodded to Watt from behind Phelps's head, "Can you contact Mia and ask her to come here?"

Watt was surprised. "You capture our Young Master because of Mia? Did you capture the wrong one?"

Shi Yan grinned.

The Bone Thorn that had stopped moving inside Phelps' stomach suddenly wiggled hard. Phelps balled his body as pain flooded his entire body. Veins bulged on his forehead. He paled as the beads of sweat rolled down his neck.

Everybody felt horrible. They instinctively rubbed their abdomen as if they had a sharp weapon piercing through that soft spot of theirs.

Shi Yan didn't need to utter another word for Phelps to urge. Watt jolted up and screamed, "I'm going to notify her! Right now!"

Watt took out a Sound Stone, his face extremely grimaced. He lowered his voice and said to the Sound Stone. After a while, he put the Sound Stone away and said, "Mia is about to get here. She'll arrive shortly. What do you want? We can discuss before her arrival."

Shi Yan looked at him indifferently. The hand that was gripping Phelps's neck suddenly tightened!

Phelps' neck bone made "crack crack" sounds. He was so frightened, so he had to follow the force and sit down. Shi Yan also kept his posture as he sat behind him. He closed his eyes halfway. Apparently, he didn't want to talk.

Watt was bewildered. He frowned and winked at the other six warriors of the Ascot family. The six warriors didn't say anything. They just scattered and circled Shi Yan.

No one paid attention to Shang Ying Yue and the others.

The four people including Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were targets, but they had become the outsiders. Shi Yan didn't mind them and neither did Watt. They stood their lonely and suddenly felt irritated...

"Cough! Cough!" Cecilia smiled and moved her sexy body. She didn't have her former disdainful look as she was trying to earn Shi Yan's favor by talking to him enthusiastically. "Little brother, do you need our cooperation? Just name it. We will advance or retreat together with you!"

Shang Ying Yue, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Hai also looked at him with hope.

Recently, when Mo Fou, Wu Feng, Wu Bai, and these women had fought Mia and Phelps, they had never gained the upper hand. Their temporary troop had lost a lot of their members. Most of the time, they had to run for their lives helter-skelter.

This time, it was also the most critical moment and they thought that they would perish in Phelps's raid. However, when they were about to lose their hope, someone had interrupted and held Phelps hostage.

This was a kind of victory! A good turn that cheered up everybody! They felt like they had finally seen the dawn after a

dark night.

It was obvious that Shi Yan had only Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. He had appeared out of nowhere, tearing the barriers that they couldn't even scratch to escape. Shi Yan had hit the important leader of the Ascot family and kept him hostage, which had overturned their cognition.

All of a sudden, Cecilia, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan remembered what Shang Ying Yue used to tell them: Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness wasn't restricted on this ancient continent.

Cecilia, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan's eyes brightened. They all looked at Shi Yan with hope. They finally believed what Shang Ying Yue had told them. They became restlessly excited.

If it was so, with Shi Yan as the eyes in this swamp area, could they escape this damn situation?

Their eyes became hotter.

Shi Yan lifted his head, looking at them as he didn't understand. He said coldly, "Why are you still here? Mia will take her Fernandez family's experts here in any moment. If you don't leave now, will you stay here to court death?"

Shang Ying Yue, Cecilia, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan were baffled.

"We have you here, don't we?" Cecilia smiled charmingly. Her curvy body swayed gently like a beautiful Nagini. Her mesmerizing eyes had light ripples. "You're holding Phelps, right? How could they dare to attack us? Haha, we were blind that we..."

"Oh, how do your lives matter to me?" Shi Yan impolitely cut off Cecilia's touching speech. He looked at her with the look he used for the fools. "I cultivate Space power Upanishad. Once I'm done negotiating with Mia, I will tear the sky and leave. The hotshots of the Fernandez family and the Ascot family will all be here. Without me, they will use you guys to vent out... Understand?"

Cecilia felt so chilled. Her beautiful eyes showered her fear. She

smiled embarrassedly and reluctantly, "No... You... You won't bring us with you?"

Shi Yan glanced at her with an awkward expression. Then, he closed his eyes and showed his indifferent face.

Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan suddenly felt the ground also got cold. A cold current of fear twirled, throwing them into the harsh coldness. Their faces grimaced, their bodies stiff.

"You're truly a heartless, despicable bastard!" Shang Ying Yue gritted her teeth.

"I've wasted my flirting on you!" Cecilia was enraged.

"He neglects the whole situation! That brat just wants to make profits!" Jiao Shan and Jiao Hai shouted indignantly.

Shi Yan looked calm and natural while the other four were scolding him. He didn't even bat an eye. He still kept his eyes closed and said faintly, "Don't blame me for not reminding you. Mia and the Fernandez family's warriors will arrive soon. You don't have much time."

"Let's go." Cecilia changed her visage. She knew Shi Yan's magical sensibility. As the situation was good, she stopped cursing him and said to the others. "We'll find him to take revenge later!"

Cecilia and the others glared at him maliciously and then left. They disappeared like the four lightning strikes.

Watt and the Ascot family's warriors didn't mind them as they were busy watching Shi Yan. They didn't even blink.

Phelps had two trickles of blood on the corners of his mouth. The wound in his abdomen had stopped bleeding. However, the Bone Thorn still stayed inside his body. It didn't move anymore so Phelps wouldn't bear the cracking pain.

His face was dark and calm as he signaled Watt's team not to act

rashly. They had to wait until Mia came.

Watt's team received his signal. They calmed down, waiting for Mia and the experts of the Fernandez.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

The hissing sounds of came through the air. Watt and Phelps's eyes brightened as they thought that it was Mia's team. They were happy. However, when Shi Yan used his co-soul to sense, he couldn't help but curse the others for their stupidity.

Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan had just left and now, they returned. They stopped at this area, their faces grim.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Some shadows appeared from another direction. They were Mo Fou, Wu Feng, Wu Bai, and Sha Zhao. They arrived all of a sudden, their face aghast.

"That asshole didn't give us the way. We went going the wrong direction. We encountered Mia. You're cold-blooded!" Shang Ying Yue looked at Shi Yan, hissing through her gritted teeth.

"It's your bad luck." Shi Yan sneered.

Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Wu Bai had just arrived. They were baffled as they looked at Shi Yan who was holding Phelps and then at Phelps with his bleeding body. The Bone Thorn was stabbing into his chest near his heart. Everybody looked so frightened because they didn't have a clue of what was going in this swamp.

"I heard someone was looking for me? I also want to find someone. Oh, the people who should be here are all here. Seems like we can avoid a lot of trouble..."

Mia's lazy voice arose. She smiled and sauntered between the members of her Fernandez family like the stars surrounding the moon.

It was like what she had said: people who had to be present here

were are all here.

Chapter 1119: A Move to Change All

Suddenly, the key members of different forces all gathered in a corner of the swamp.

The Fernandez family's warriors had chased after Mo Fou and Wu Feng. Through the Sound Stone, Mo Fou knew that Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were besieged, so they came to help the women.

At the same time, the warriors of the Fernandez family had received Mia's order, so they came to capture Shang Ying Yue. They met Mo Fou by chance and pushed them into this area too.

When Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue left, they went the wrong way, which led them to the Fernandez family's warriors. Begrudgingly, they had to return to this area.

For the time being, Mia, Phelps, Mo Fou, and Shang Ying Yue were gathered in this corner of the swamp.

Watt and the members of the Ascot family were circling Shi Yan. No one paid attention to Mo Fou or Cecilia. They had to make Phelps' condition their priority.

Mia came in with her sweet and delicate voice, her face calm and relaxed. She glanced at Shi Yan and then at Phelps, making an unrecognizable frown.

Mo Fou, Wu Feng brothers, and Sha Zhao were gazing at Shi Yan. They were bewildered and scared to see Shi Yan holding Phelps as a hostage.

"Mia arrived. Can you tell us what you want?" Phelps looked dark but still calm.

"Oh yeah, I'm here. What do you want after all?" Mia calmly paced and stood in front of Phelps and Shi Yan while smiling.

Everybody looked at Shi Yan. Mo Fou, Cecilia, and Shang Ying Yue were solemn. They were trying to calculate things.

"I want the Seven-colored Demonic Flower. I want to use this flower to exchange for Phelps. Is it a problem?" Still holding Phelps, Shi Yan asked calmly.

"The Seven-colored Demonic Flower?" Mia was surprised. She contemplated and frowned silently.

"... Miss Mia," Watt bent his body slightly in respect. Looking at her, he begged, "Please."

Phelps also exhaled in relief. He thought that his life was secured now. Although the Seven-colored Demonic Flower was precious, it wasn't as precious as his life. Mia should know how to choose. Thus, Phelps wasn't tense or anxious.

Mo Fou, Cecilia, and Wu Feng were astounded, their faces awkward. Shi Yan had done many things to attack the Ascot family and capture Phelps to create this mess. And it was all because of the Seven-colored Demonic Flower, which made them confused.

Only Shang Ying Yue could vaguely grasp something. She frowned and became more gingerly.

"Oh that... I'm so sorry. I've used up the Seven-colored Demonic Flower. I'm so sorry."

Under people's gazing, Mia spread her white hands, her charming face regretful. She just sighed and shook her head with a forced smile.

Watt and Phelps became dark and terrible.

"Miss Mia, are you kidding us? We've always been together. I have never seen you use the Seven-colored Demonic Flower. You..." Watt didn't finish.

Phelps gazed at Mia, his eyes cold and dark. "Mia jie-jie, you want me to be killed, don't you?"

"Why would I want that?" Mia forced a smile and continued to say sorry. She sighed. "I did use it all. Who knew that this boy

needed the Seven-colored Demonic Flower?" She paused for a while, her eyes suddenly brightening. "Okay, give me more time... I will contact the others and ask if they have the Seven-colored Demonic Flower."

The God Clan had also sent troops to the other three territories of ice, forest, and sea. They were taking the upper hand. Haig had finished his clearance mission. Mia wanted to find the other three teams to ask for the flower.

She was waiting for Shi Yan's answer.

"You all know I cultivate Space power Upanishad," Shi Yan said in a normal tone, "Throw out your Fantasy Sky Rings. I will check them all. If you actually don't have the Seven-colored Demonic Flower, I will consider your suggestion."

Watt and Phelps frowned at Mia.

Mia had cold eyes. She snorted and sneered, "My Fantasy Sky Rings store a lot of items I've harvested here, not to mention my divine weapons. You think it's practical to let you check them out?"

Pffft!

The bone thorn inside Phelps' abdomen stirred one round. The wound that had just sealed was broken again and was bleeding terribly. Phelps winced and balled his body like a shrimp in pain. Apparently, he felt so painful.

"Let me see or I will kill him." Shi Yan chuckled. "I think you still have the Seven-colored Demonic Flower. You just don't care about whether Phelps is dead or alive. The life of a future leader of the Ascot family isn't worth a Seven-colored Demonic Flower. Haha. That's how cheap the noble identity I thought he got is."

Phelps, Watt, and the members of the Ascot all had dark and sinister faces upon hearing him. Some threw Shi Yan a hateful look while others gazed at Mia's team hostilely.

Mo Fou and Cecilia exchanged looks. They all saw fear in each other's eyes. When they looked at Shi Yan again, they felt so chilled inwardly as they were helpless and frightened.

This man... was too wicked!

The Fernandez family and the Ascot family had joined hands to swagger in this swamp territory and hunt down the warriors of different star areas. No force could resist them. Even when Mo Fou, Wu Feng, Wu Bai joined hands, they could only run away and avoid facing them directly.

They had used different methods, but they knew that they couldn't overturn this situation. They felt dispirited and their hands were tied.

All of a sudden, Shi Yan appeared with his brutal deed...

In their opinions, this was a trick by Shi Yan to divide the union of the Fernandez family and the Ascot family. He wanted to crack their ally and they could even turn out to be the enemies!

Once Mia and Phelps stood on the opposite sides, these two forces of the God Clan would attack each other. They wouldn't have time to deal with Mo Fou's group. Mo Fou's group could seize this chance and overturn this situation, breaking their topsy-turvy circumstances.

Everybody's eyes brightened as they appraised Shi Yan for his cunning deeds. They thought that this young man was indeed smart and wicked.

——Only Shang Ying Yue knew that Shi Yan didn't plan anything. He just needed the Seven-colored Demonic Flower the most...

Her beautiful eyes rolled for a while. She suddenly thought of a good trick. She said coldly and clearly, "Mia keeps the Seven-colored Demonic Flower. I have a special method to recognize that. My father is Shang Chen. He used to write a book of peculiar

floras. I got the technique to identify them..."

She coldly pointed at the three Fantasy Sky Ring on Mia's fingers. She sounded confident, indeed. "The Seven-colored Demonic Flower is in her Fantasy Sky Ring. I'm 100% sure."

Phelps and Watt showed their sinister faces. They looked at Mia but didn't say a thing. Under their exploring eyes, Mia frowned and said calmly, "I can't let him check my items. You can say whatever dirty things you want. The three Fantasy Sky Rings store all our harvest, my divine weapons, and many secrets. Absolutely, I won't hand them to him."

"Well, it's simple though." Cecilia talked tenderly. "You can show the items in your rings one by one. Then, we can see that you don't have the Seven-colored Demonic Flower. Everybody will believe you."

"Lowly b*tch! Who are you? Do you think you're qualified to talk here?" Mia snarled.

"Oh, hahaha!"

Cecilia laughed charmingly, just pointed at Mia, and said no more.

Everybody could see that Mia was startled when people started to point at her.

"Mia jie-jie, I just want to ask you one question. You think that my life isn't worth one piece of Seven-colored Demonic Flower, don't you?" Phelps held the bone thorn in his stomach with both hands and asked coldly.

"I told you, it's not like that!" Mia screamed, her face impatient.

Shi Yan loosened his grip on Phelps' neck. He sneered and whispered into Phelps's ear. "Seems like you have to use some special trick though. Well, for example, rob her... I agree with you. As soon as I get the Seven-colored Demonic Flower, I will let you go."

Phelps nodded. Taking a deep breath, he spoke, his eyes closed, "Watt, summon our family members. Help me "invite" the Seven-colored Demonic Flower from Mia jie-jie! Perhaps Mia is forgetting that the experts of our family that come here this time will outnumber their family's experts."

"Phelps, you're crazy. You dare to deal with me as the other has instigated you?!" Mia screamed.

Phelps looked dark and cold. He closed his eyes and didn't utter a word.

"I understand, Young Master." Watt didn't even look at Mia. He just took out the Sound Stone to call the warriors of the Ascot family wandering around to gather.

"Young Lady. . ."

Yue Man of the Fernandez struggled and looked bitter. He bent his body and said to Mia, "I'm grateful for your favor. But you can't turn your back to Master Phelps just because you want to help my brother treat his Soul Rotting Aphis. Young Lady, please give him the Seven-colored Demonic Flower to free Young Master Phelps."

After that, Mo Fou, Shi Yan, Phelps, Watt, and the members of the Ascot family understood why Mia had to conceal the Seven-colored Demonic Flower.

"He's just a servant. How could he compare to my noble identity? Mia jie-jie, you should give me the demonic flower. Don't make things more complicated. Otherwise, when my men come, it's awkward to fight each other."

Phelps opened his eyes slightly and said coldly. He didn't consider Yue Man's brother an equal life, his face heartless and arrogant.

The Ascot family was much stronger than Mia's Fernandez family. Phelps believed that Mia didn't dare to have any dispute with him. Under Shi Yan's instigation, he became strong again.

"Young Lady. . ."

Yue Man's face was painful and reluctant. He begged Mia to stop.

"Just like you, Uncle Yue Ke has taken care of me since I was young. To me... his life is much precious than Phelps!" Mia took a deep breath and said through her gritted teeth. "Let's fight! I want to see the Ascot family's warriors make me hand over the Seven-colored Demonic Flower!"

She was really enraged now!

Chapter 1120: Shed All Pretense of Cordiality!

Hearing Mia, Yue Man was so touched and his eyes were watery. All the warriors of the Fernandez family following Mia here weren't pressured but strangely cheered up.

When they dealt with the enemies, no matter how cold, despicable, or wicked Mia was, it wasn't a weakness of hers in their opinion. It was the personal competence of a leader.

If this leader had treated her subordinates well with care and respect, each of her soldiers would try their best to serve her. He would even dedicate his life to her.

Apparently, what Mia said had touched her soldiers and stirred up their fighting will.

Quite the contrary, Phelps' visage became darker and darker. He didn't talk anymore and just nodded to Watt.

Watt held the Sound Stone and continued to contact the members of the Ascot family. Shortly after, experts of the Ascot family around had gathered. People could hear the loud noise of tearing wind when they dashed through the air.

Shi Yan still held Phelps calmly. He just sat there and squinted to watch the situation, waiting for the Ascot warriors.

"What should we do?" asked Jiao Shan in a low-pitched voice.

Mo Fou, Wu Feng, Cecilia, and the others stood on the other side. They separated themselves from the two forces of the God Clan. They had maintained a relatively safe distance from the others, carefully watching to see how it would develop.

"Don't interfere for the time being. You guys just need to observe them." Mo Fou smiled oddly. "I think they don't have extra energy to deal with us now. Of course, we shouldn't attack them, either."

Stay aside and don't get involved in their battle. I find this situation getting more and more interesting by the minute. Don't you think so?"

Everybody stooped and smile. They all looked relaxed.

"Phelps is crazy," Mia broke the impasse. Before the Ascot family warriors gathered, she flung her hand. "We won't play with them. We'll go now."

If they stayed still and fought the experts of the Ascot family who would come here soon, it would be a fierce battle. Mia knew that it was unnecessary.

Well, if she left and didn't participate in the battle to avoid the warriors of the Ascot family, would Phelps and Watt let their warriors pursue her?

"If you don't leave the Seven-colored Demonic Flower, you are not allowed to leave." Shi Yan said coldly, pushing the thorn deeper into Phelps' chest.

A red wound cracked. People could vaguely see Phelps's beating heart. Shi Yan just needed to push his thorn several inches further and Phelps would die.

"Kill! Kill! Kill!"

Phelps screamed crazily like a snake whose tail was stepped on. He roared and asked Watt to carry out the massacre.

All the experts of the Ascot family hadn't arrived yet. However, Watt and the other six were all warriors in the profound realms. They weren't afraid of engaging in a fight against Mia. Seeing Phelps bleeding tragically, he didn't think much. While Shi Yan's arm was slowly moving, he dashed out furiously.

The members of the Ascot family burst out like an erupting volcano. They began to attack Mia, Yue Man, and her soldiers. Watt and his team aimed at Mia directly in just a blink.

"Hand us the Seven-colored Demonic Flower!" shouted Watt coldly.

"You guys are crazy! You dare attack us! Let's see how you will explain this to the Elder Committee!" Mia's face was so cold. "If you dare to enter the ancient continent, you shouldn't be afraid of being killed. Phelps, you're such a coward. Do you think you will be eligible to be the next Chief of the Ascot family? Perhaps, you should die. It's good news to our family, anyway."

"B*tch! You should die!" Phelps shouted ear-splittingly.

The two future leaders of the God Clan's big forces had called each other sister and brother. But now, their relationship was officially broken.

Watt led six Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm experts of the Ascot family. He started to attack Mia.

In just a blink, this area of the swamp received an earth-shaking attack. Different energies and skills impacted, sending multicolored lights into the sky like beautiful fireworks. The air exploded all together with the ground.

As they were all experts at Second and Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, once they struck, the ground around them was smashed, creating deep ditches. Currents of energy meandered like five-colored rivers that entangled and hit each other in the sky. They twisted, creating lightning strikes and shooting everywhere. This entire area was covered in energy attacks.

If someone could watch from the sky, he would find that the flood current of energy in different colors had destroyed the entire area, smashed plants, rocks, and decimated everything standing in its way like a surging colorful sea.

Mo Fou's team was both thrilled and scared. They exchanged looks and released protecting barriers to shield themselves, preventing the energy attacks from attacking their bodies.

Energy exploded in the swamp area. Brutal and malicious powers Upanishads impacted, barged, and crushed each other, which also chaotically stirred up the earth and heaven energy. They left so many deep ditches and cracks on the ground.

"Before they haven't finished, we shouldn't join hands. We must wait patiently." Wu Feng smiled wickedly. He clasped his hands and sighed, "That man is really dangerous if he could come up with a smart plan like that. We've all gained benefits from him."

Everybody agreed with him and looked at Shi Yan with respect and excitement. The four people including Cecilia, Shi Yan, Jiao Shan, and Jiao Hai who used to roll their eyes at Shi Yan were smiling. The hatred they got for Shi Yan was all cleared.

"Oh right, you said that his Soul Consciousness isn't bound by shackles of the ancient continent? Did you tell the truth?" Suddenly, Mo Fou patted his head and screamed in astonishment.

They all looked at Shang Ying Yue.

"It's true. He can recognize the life energy fluctuations around him. His Soul Consciousness isn't affected," said Shang Ying Yue with conviction.

Mo Fou's eyes brightened. He nodded and said in a low-pitched tone, "After this battle, if both the Fernandez and the Ascot family get damaged, perhaps... we can use his magical ability to kill all the opponents in this swamp! We can hunt them down no matter where they hide."

Wu Feng and Cecilia were strangely excited. They couldn't even hide the smile on their face. Their eyes got hotter looking at Shi Yan.

"Sigh. If he had appeared five years earlier, we wouldn't have been in this passive situation," said Wu Feng with emotions.

"Sha Zhao, you should give up the resentment you have against him. From now on, you can't attack him anymore!" Mo Fou coldly

glared at Sha Zhao.

Wu Feng, Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, Jiao Shan, and Jiao Hai also glared at Sha Zhao with a warning. They wanted him to commit now.

"Don't worry. I don't want to be killed. Before we can confirm that we are safe, I won't do anything to him," snarled Sha Zhao.

"Well, you guys don't need to worry about that," Cecilia giggled and threw Sha Zhao a contemptuous look. "Honestly, he isn't the other's equal match."

People all chuckled with odd faces. They couldn't help but laugh as if they agreed with Cecilia.

Sha Zhao grimaced more.

It was a frozen swamp area with white mist hovering. Through the mist, people could see the massive glacier elongating towards the horizon. This area was the adjacent area to the glacier.

Crack! Crack!

The sound when the ice cracked arose. A figure appeared and stood on the iceberg with a cold face.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

People glided and pierced through the air. Shortly after, dozens of warriors stood behind him. They all had abundant and long breaths, giving people the sharp feeling of blades.

"Young Master, we've pierced through the barrier." Payton squinted, slightly bowed, and waited for Haig's order.

"Let me check."

He closed his eyes. A dark flame slowly arose above his head. It swayed like a small meteor and released the power of the haven flames together with the powerful soul energy.

After a while, Haig changed his face into a dark and confused complexion. "Damn it! What the heck do they think they're doing?"

"Young Master, what's going on?" asked Payton with surprise.

"It seems like Mia's and Phelps' teams are engaging in battle while those low pagans are watching them. I guess they had their mind occupied. They are doing something unimaginable! Damn! They will destroy our mission!"

Haig had two different auras that alternated each other in his body. Sometimes, he was so furious like the most powerful volcano while at other times, he was like a freezing chamber that could freeze people's souls.

The extremely cold energy and the heat in his body made him change his auras as he pleased, giving people a terrifying impression.

Haig had planned and carried out the plan to eradicate outstanding seeds of different big star areas. It was also the merit he wanted to show to the Elder Committee. To ensure the success of this operation, he had sacrificed a little bit to come here and help Mia and Phelps clear the obstacles.

He knew that this plan wasn't wrong. As long as they could kill all the warriors of the other star areas to fulfill this operation, he could get approval from the Elder Committee.

However, as soon as they got into this area, they found that their allies hadn't had any achievement. They were fighting each other! The volcano in Haig's mind erupted! "Get there at max speed! I want them to give me a good explanation for their deeds!"

He wouldn't allow anyone to interrupt his big plan!

Payton was confused, but he didn't dare to ask much. He nodded and turned to his soldiers, "Guys, urge your powers to the utmost. We must clear the troubles in the swamp quickly."

Strong warriors of Bradley kept silent. Thick murderous aura started to diffuse from their bodies. They all let their energy surge and answer Payton's order.

For the time being, explosions arose. Shadows began to dash away, which left dozens of deep holes on the ground.

Chapter 1121: Prevail

In the center of the swamp, the chaotic energy was wreaking havoc. Different energy attacks impacted, killing and clearing the entire area.

Members of the Ascot family gathered from different corners of the place as they got Watt's call through the Sound Stone. Their force became stronger.

Since Phelps's realm wasn't so high, Fick had to worry that he would be undergoing hardships in the ancient continent. Thus, he had assigned almost all of the elite warriors at Ethereal God Realm of the family to this operation so they could protect him. No one wanted anything bad to happen to him.

Thus, although Phelps's realm wasn't really profound, the general competence of the Ascot family's force in this swamp surpassed the Fernandez's.

Seeing more warriors of the Ascot family arrive, Mia's team was pressured even harder. Many of the Ascot's warriors had aimed at Mia. They wanted to force her to give them the Seven-colored Demonic Flower.

However, Mia was the strongest warrior with many divine weapons. At the same time, her skills were all mastered.

Watt and the other Peak of Ethereal God Realm experts were surrounding Mia, but they couldn't force her. Mia just had to endure a little hardship.

Mo Fou, Cecilia, and the others were onlookers. While watching, their faces were getting stern as they were frightened. They knew how strong Mia was. This woman of the Fernandez family was not only the smart and cunning mind but she was also an outstanding individual. Her personal powers were really intimidating. It was no wonder that she was appointed to the mission to this ancient

continent.

Everybody started to calculate. They knew that they must be careful when facing Mia.

Phelps sat neatly, his face cold and dark. His eyes were like icicles that pierced Mia. Sometimes, he even cursed.

While Shi Yan was holding Phelps, his face was calm and cold as if he was just watching a play. He looked like he was waiting until one side was defeated or even killed to give his other request. However, Shi Yan discolored all of a sudden.

The co-soul behind his head reflected an extremely fierce energy fluctuation!

Closing his eyes, Shi Yan focused on seeing. His Soul Consciousness extended, reaching the area outside the swamp...

He could sense the flows of extraordinary energy. It seemed like many intimidating creatures had entered this swamp area. Moreover, they were dashing towards his area!

After a while, he took a deep breath, his face so chilled. He could sense the aura and direction of Haig's team.

He had almost confirmed that the coming warriors belonged to one force of the God Clan, one of the twelve families. Just like Mia and Phelps, they came to this ancient continent to clear the prodigies of the big star areas. He didn't need to ask to know their purpose for coming to this area.

Shi Yan had planned to see how the situation develops. After sensing, he changed his visage and recalculated his plan.

He muttered in Phelps' ear and said coldly, "It's just a waste of my time and your time if you guys fight like this. It's not easy to deal with Mia. I think you guys have aimed at the wrong target. Yeah, you should attack Yue Man. If you can capture Yue Man, I think Mia will hand us the Seven-colored Demonic Flower."

Phelps' eyes brightened.

With a cold smile hanging on the corner of his mouth, Phelps threw Watt a glance and asked him to attack Yue Man.

Watt understood tacitly. He gave his Young Master a curt nod that was unrecognizable. He discreetly signaled the others...

Some members of the Ascot family who were attacking Mia slowly changed targets. Although they were harsh when attacking Mia, they didn't dare to attack her with lethal strikes. Mia was the key member of the Fernandez family anyway. If they killed her, it would lead to a war between the two families.

— They couldn't bear this responsibility.

Although Yue Man was also a member of the Fernandez family, he wasn't really important. Even if he was killed, it wouldn't cause a big commotion.

Watt's team secretly changed their target...

"Everything is going well!"

Wu Feng clapped his hands and excitedly calculated, "After the two families fight each other and get damaged, perhaps we will have a chance to overturn this situation."

The eyes of Mo Fou, Cecilia, and Sha Zhao became hot. Their lines of sight raked through Mia's and Phelps's rings as if they could see the rare and precious materials. They had to grasp for their breaths...

Throughout the recent five years, Mia's and Phelps's teams had joined hands and operated around this swamp area. They had killed many warriors of the other star area and harvested the materials that the others had collected. The warriors of the God Clan had also collected a lot of crystals and herbal materials. They had almost cleaned up the heaven and earth products in this swamp area.

They had been through many difficulties to get to this ancient continent for the precious natural products. They also knew what Mia and Phelps kept in their rings. They weren't ordinary items. That was why they had become so excited.

"As long as he agrees to help us, Mia and Phelps couldn't hide. Haha, I couldn't believe that we got such a marvelous encounter in this deadly situation. Seems like our time is coming!" Mo Fou also smiled.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Watt and the other three experts of the Ascot family suddenly ditched Mia. Before Mia could react, they had captured Yue Man.

Beams of gold light as big as a thumb wound around Yue Man's God Body like real chains. Those light beams slowly squeezed and sank into his flesh. If Yue Man wiggled, he winced in pain. His face was twisted.

"We can have a quiet moment now," Watt grinned and looked at Mia coldly.

He placed a shiny silver sword on Yue Man's neck. That sharp blade radiated a cold and dark halo. It looked like it could cut off Yue Man's head in a second.

Mia's soft body shivered. Her charming face turned as pale as a paper sheet. She gritted her teeth, her venomous eyes gazing at Watt. "You dared to attack my people. I'll remember this! I swear I won't let you go easily!"

Under her resentful eyes, Watt was chilled. He felt so uncomfortable. He glanced at Phelps and took a deep breath, "You know what I want."

Mia looked at Phelps.

Phelps wore a dark face and he laughed coldly, "My good sister Mia, I just want to live. Please help me. Yeah, you know me, right. You know that to survive, I can do anything."

"Such a coward who is afraid of death! Do you think you're worth receiving the position of the Chief of Ascot family? I think your father is blind!" Mia scolded angrily. Afterward, she stroked a ring on her left hand. A dark blue halo glowed. A yellow crystal emerged in front of her.

The amber crystal captured a peculiar flower, which had a beautiful woman face. That flower seemed to be frozen, but the exquisite facial features of that little beauty were still clear. It looked like a glamor was just sleeping.

That crystal was as big as a millstone. It hovered quietly in front of Mia. She pondered for a while and then pointed at the crystal, "For you!"

The crystal spun and slowly flew towards Phelps. It halted above his head. A strange, fresh aroma emitted from the crystal, which was so pleasant to the soul.

It was the Seven-colored Demonic Flower!

Shi Yan grinned, reaching his hand to grab it. The amber crystal turned into a yellow light beam that disappeared into his Fantasy Sky Ring. "It's real."

Mo Fou, Cecilia, and the onlookers sobered from their joy. They were bewildered and it became awkward.

—— This battle ends so quickly!

The battle between the Ascot and the Fernandez families hadn't cost any lives. There were some minor wounds, which wasn't the result that Cecilia and Mo Fou had expected. They looked regretful as the situation didn't turn out as they had hoped.

"Too quick. It shouldn't have happened this way!" Mo Fou frowned. He became tense. He hissed, "Would that kid stop his deed when he got the item?"

"No? Isn't his purpose to stir up the dispute between the Ascot and the Fernandez families? It's not that simple, right?" said Wu

Feng.

"Prepare to retreat now!"

Shang Ying Yue suddenly hissed. "That bastard came here for the Seven-colored Demonic Flower. He won't care about us. He won't cooperate with us, either!"

Hearing her, people changed their faces. The plan that filled their mind was now just a joke.

Without Shi Yan's cooperation, their calculation was just a lie to themselves and to the others. They weren't equal opponents of the Ascot and the Fernandez families. If Shi Yan didn't help them, their situation couldn't change a bit.

"He wouldn't help us? At all?" Cecilia bit her lower lip.

"Nope," Shang Ying Yue said curtly.

"Get out of here!"

"Get out of here immediately!"

"We should leave now!"

Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Sha Zhao discolored. They didn't dare to linger. As told by Shang Ying Yue, they quickly dashed away.

Mia and Phelps's soldiers didn't stop them. They were watching Shi Yan, Phelps, and Yue Man.

"I'm a man of my words."

Under the God Clan's warriors gazing, Shi Yan slowly drew the bone thorn in Phelps' chest and abdomen. He whispered to Phelps. "With your powerful self-recover, it shouldn't be a problem to recover. I wish you and Mia could get along well later."

Before he had finished his words, his figure became vague and slowly disappeared into nothingness. He vanished in people's sight.

Phelps wiped the trickles of blood on the corners of his mouth.

He waved at Watt, "Release him!"

Watt immediately untied Yue Man. Together with the warriors of the Ascot family, they handed back Yue Man who stood behind Phelps. Phelps was looking at Mia with cold eyes.

Mia and Phelps glared at each other for a few seconds. They didn't talk and they turned around. They walked in different directions like they were strangers.

The union of the two great families shattered from that point on.

Chapter 1122: The Servant Flower and the Master Flower

Shi Yan was sitting cross-legged on a brown stone by a crystal clear lake.

Swoosh!

A light flashed and the amber crystal emerged in front of him. Inside that amber crystal was a beautiful flower that had the face of a beautiful woman in her sleep. This flower was peculiar and yet marvelous.

Shi Yan took out the book that Shang Chen gave him. He read it for a while and compared the flower with the figure in the book...

Compared to the drawings, there was no doubt that it was the Seven-colored Demonic Flower. All the features of this flower including the beautiful woman's face, the jade roots, and a few leaves showed him that it was what he wanted.

A flow of Soul Consciousness was sent to the Seven-colored Demonic Flower. Shi Yan wanted to use the Soul Consciousness to check it deeper.

The amber crystal was used to seal this Seven-colored Demonic Flower, which would prevent the flower from shriveling. This crystal was made with some unique materials. It was filled with steam and energy fluctuation. It should be a magical, exquisite container.

His Soul Consciousness moved around and seeped into the demonic flower to sense...

Shortly after, Shi Yan frowned. His eyes sparkled with confusion. He pulled his mind and observed closely.

It didn't feel right!

His face changed silently.

According to the description in Shang Chen's book, the Seven-colored Demonic Flower had a demonic aura that gave people a feeling of seeing something evil and cold. It could hypnotize people. When using the Soul Consciousness to sense, the warrior would feel dizzy because of the invasion of the toxic air from the flower.

But Shi Yan didn't feel like that...

It was clean and clear. There were no pollutants. Its aura was fresh with a faint aroma that relaxed the soul. It was what he felt when he entered the flower.

Totally different!

His eyes darkened as the flame of anger ignited and burned his heart. The co-soul floating behind his head also moved fiercely.

A refreshing and immaculate aura flew out of the amber crystal, storming into his co-soul when he didn't recognize it. His co-soul stopped flickering. The auras of the heaven flames became distinctive.

"Oh!"

Shi Yan was astounded. He was bewildered. He looked at the crystal he was holding. Observing the fresh, blooming flower, his Soul Consciousness tried to sense further.

The magical aura from the beautiful flower had entered his co-soul and made the auras of the heaven flames forming his co-soul more distinctive. It calmed down his bouncing co-soul and made the flows of auras cling onto each other...

It didn't feel right!

Shi Yan retrieved his Soul Consciousness and his finger touching the crystal. He darkened his face, watching the fresh flower and frowning.

He knew something wasn't right. This flower wasn't similar to

what he understood. Maybe Mia had made a counterfeit and it could contain something dark and evil, which aimed at him. The more he thought about it, the bigger the possibility became.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

The sounds of wind tearing arose and approached his area. From the sounds, he knew that there wasn't only one warrior coming.

The co-soul transmitted soul fluctuations and sensed. He knew who was coming, so he didn't hasten to leave or hide. Shi Yan sat on the brown rock by the clear lake, waiting in silence.

After fifteen minutes, Mo Fou, Wu Feng, Wu Bai, Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, and Sha Zhao appeared. They watched here and there and even their back and then slowly came to him.

"Ah!"

Shang Ying Yue couldn't help but scream. She looked at him in fright. A little joy flashed in her clear but cold eyes.

Mo Fou, Cecilia, and the others were shaken. They didn't think much and gathered by Shi Yan instantly. Just like him, they stood or sat by the rock and looked at him curiously.

"Are they after you?"

Cecilia smiled sweetly and charmingly. Her beautiful body flashed and her curvy butt was bouncing as she stopped by Shi Yan. A mesmerizingly sweet aroma came to Shi Yan's nostrils with the wind.

Since everybody knew to whom she was talking to, they all looked at Shi Yan with hope.

"No."

Shi Yan wore a faint face. He frowned and didn't retrieve the amber crystal floating in front of him.

Hearing him, they exhaled in relief. No one doubted his words. Then, they relaxed and stopped being anxious anymore. Some lay

down or sat on the rocks by the lake, grasping for their breaths and using the divine crystals to refill energy.

Since they were all future leaders of the big star areas, they had many experiences in fighting. They wouldn't waste any minute as they would use them to recover. It was better to recover their energy and body condition to the peak to deal with the battle that could possibly take place in the next moment.

"Actually, you could have used Phelps for a little more. If we made them fight to the death, when one side got damaged, it would have been much easier for us." As Cecilia heard him, her seducing face was thrilled. She proactively approached him, her face bright, "If one of them was done, we would have taken the upper hand here. If you helped us chase them, none of them would have escaped."

Shang Ying Yue nodded. She looked regretful too.

Shi Yan glared at Cecilia and said coldly, "Well thought. Too bad it wasn't that simple."

"Why did you say that?" Cecilia's smile paused, her face earnest. "Did you find any new commotion?"

Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Wu Bai were using divine crystals to recover their powers. She had caught their attention. Everybody was waiting for Shi Yan's answer.

Unfortunately, Shi Yan pulled the cornered of his lips and didn't answer her. Instead, he looked at Shang Ying Yue. "You come and check this... Is it the real Seven-colored Demonic Flower?"

It'd been five years and it had worn out Shang Ying Yue's resentment against Shi Yan. Moreover, as she knew that she had to count on Shi Yan a lot, she didn't pretend and just frankly walked to Shi Yan's stone. She extended one jade-like finger, touching the amber crystal and releasing a flow of Soul Consciousness to sense.

She was Shang Chen's daughter. Of course, her knowledge of

peculiar and marvelous materials should be profound enough. In other words, her attainment shouldn't... be less than Shang Chen's.

It was because Shang Chen's knowledge of medicinal medicines came from An Liya, Shang Ying Yue's mother who was a brilliant alchemist.

Shang Ying Yue's fingertip touched the crystal. Her long eyelashes batted. Gradually, she furrowed her bold brows as if she had found something wrong.

Shi Yan's heart sank to the bottom. From her facial expression, he got the answer. He couldn't hide his anger.

Shang Ying Yue's furrowed brows twitched and then relaxed. She spoke as if she couldn't believe it. "It's not the Seven-colored Demonic Flower, indeed."

Shi Yan's straight back lowered. His face changed when he sighed begrudgingly, "I thought so. According to your father's description in the book, the Seven-colored Demonic Flower has a demon aura with a hypnotizing ability. Although that flower is gorgeous with a human face, its aura's completely different."

"Hm, you don't need to feel down, anyway." Shang Ying Yue looked at him, her eyes brightened. "Although it's not the Seven-colored Demonic Flower, it's much more precious than the Seven-colored Demonic Flower! This is a Seven-colored Spirit Flower. It's much more precious and rare than the Seven-colored Demonic Flower. It's the rarest priceless item at the Original Incipient Grade!"

Mo Fou and the others were still eavesdropping. Hearing her, they were all stirred up as they looked at her.

"Is it the true Seven-colored Spirit Flower?" asked Wu Feng with a stern face.

"It can't be faked." Shang Ying Yue nodded, "Mia must have taken

the Seven-colored Demonic Flower together with the Seven-colored Spirit Flower. She wanted to keep Seven-colored Demonic Flower to save someone called Yue Ke. Even though she had to give the Seven-colored Spirit Flower to you, I would think that she is angry now."

"Haha, if it's true, she has a big loss this time," Mo Fou laughed oddly.

They knew about the Seven-colored Spirit Flower. They started to discuss boisterously. Looking at the beautiful fresh flower, they were so curious.

Quite the contrary, Shi Yan was confused.

"The Seven-colored Spirit Flower and the Seven-colored Demonic Flower grow together. They are the servant flower and the master flower. The Seven-colored Demonic Flower is the servant flower. It will draw and transmit nutrients to the Seven-colored Spirit Flower to prevent that flower from withering before it blooms. As the master, the Seven-colored Spirit Flower can take the fluids and nutrients from the Seven-colored Demonic Flower to nurture and grow. After that, it will take the main roles."

Shang Ying Yue could see him doubting. She explained earnestly, "When they encounter danger, the Seven-colored Spirit Flower will become invisible. It will make the Seven-colored Demonic Flower bear all the dangers. It's strange, right? As Mia could take both of them, she surely prepared carefully before she came here."

"Tell me their functions directly," said Shi Yan with a frown.

"The Seven-colored Demonic Flower has the nickname of "the Soul Custodian." It can clear all the dirty things or pollutants in the soul altar. The Seven-colored Demonic Flower can clean them all. Aside from that, the Seven-colored Demonic Flower is the main material to refine many pellets that nurture the soul. It's really precious. It can even help the warriors who cultivate Mind power Upanishad."

Pausing for a while, Shang Ying Yue continued, "... the Seven-colored Spirit Flower has a magical function: it can combine the heaven flames with different natures! Also, it can fuse the powers Upanishads with similar characteristics."

Her eyes brightened up. She looked at Shi Yan without blinking even once. "I think it's really suitable for you!" She knew that Shi Yan had heaven flames.

Shi Yan became bewildered, his face strange. He just frowned and said nothing.

"It isn't really important as it can clean your soul altar unless your soul altar is infected. In that case, the Seven-colored Demonic Flower will be the precious treatment for the right disease. For example, that Yue Ke has the Soul Rotting Aphids in his soul altar. He needs the Seven-colored Demonic Flower to eradicate them. Aside from such a situation, the Seven-colored Demonic Flower can't perform its best. Compared to the Seven-colored Spirit Flower, it's not worth using. Anyway, nothing can compete with the spirit flower when fusing heaven flames or powers Upanishads," added Shang Ying Yue.

Chapter 1123: Getting Serious!

Just like Shang Ying Yue had assumed, Mia was indeed so angry that she wanted to vomit blood.

After diverging from Phelps's team, she didn't hurry to kill Mo Fou's group, the fish that had escaped her net. She chose a place to rest and contemplated with a dark face.

The group of the Fernandez family's warriors scattered around her, looking at her begrudgingly.

Yue Man bowed to her, his complexion embarrassed. "It's I who had messed up your business."

"No, it has nothing to do with you," Mia swung her hand, her face frosty. "It's Phelps and that damn brat! I didn't expect that he would be alive after five years raiding this area. I hate him! He broke my good business!"

"Miss, why did you give him the Seven-colored Spirit Flower? Compared to the Seven-colored Demonic Flower, its value is priceless!" Yue Man lowered his head and sighed as he was touched.

He, of course, understood why Mia did that. Besides vowing his life to repay Mia's deep favor, he didn't know what else to do

"It's true that the Seven-colored Spirit Flower is much more precious, but it can't save Uncle Yue Ke. Just let him take it. I will find another chance to take it back." Mia frowned, "But it'll be troublesome to talk with Haig about this. He wanted that Seven-colored Spirit Flower. He and I have dealt the price already. I didn't think we could encounter such things."

"Then what should we do?" Yue Man was frightened. "It's not easy to deal with Haig, though."

"It's okay. Just tell him the truth. It seems like we have to depend on Haig's force. Otherwise, I'm afraid that we can't capture that

brat," sighed Mia.

Not long after their conversation, the Sound Stone in Mia's sleeve vibrated. Haig wanted to talk to her.

While she was fighting Phelps, her Sound Stone transmitted many calls. They were all from Haig. It was obvious that Haig had found something. It was an urge to know Mia's and Phelps' situation. However, she didn't pick it up.

And now, when the dispute with Phelps ceased temporarily, Mia could ease her mind to talk to Haig. Also, she needed his help to clear all the obstacles in the swamp.

"What the heck were you doing?" Haig's snarl came from the Sound Stone. "I've just talked to Phelps. He said that you wanted him to die. You didn't want to use the Seven-colored Demonic Flower to exchange for his life. That's why you guys..."

Haig shouted right at the beginning and criticized Mia's inappropriate behaviors. His voice was harsh, indeed.

Mia wore a cold face. She didn't hasten to snap back. Waiting after Haig had finished, she replied indifferently, "It's much worse than what you've thought. I didn't give them the Seven-colored Demonic Flower. What I handed them was the Seven-colored Spirit Flower. It was the Seven-colored Spirit Flower you wanted! Do you feel angrier now?"

Haig quieted down his thundering.

After a while, he had recovered his placid mind. "It's just a servant. Why do you have to care so much? Why didn't you give that brat the Seven-colored Demonic Flower instead? You thought that I couldn't kill him when I arrived? You're always smart, but why did you suddenly act dumb this time?"

"I'm afraid you can't kill him anyway." Mia frowned, "It's true that you can lock his location and direction, but he's cultivated Space power Upanishad. Even though he can't escape the ancient

continent, he could run away in this area. This swamp is much bigger than a life star. It's not easy to catch him."

"What do you think?" Haig's voice recovered its coldness. "You've never wanted to bear a loss. I want to know your plan. I know you understand that this operation of mine shouldn't have any mistakes. I don't care about the grudge between you and Phelps. I will never let you guys break my plan!"

Haig said the last sentence curtly and resolutely.

"Don't worry. I know your situation. I won't cause troubles." Mia pondered for a few seconds and then said, "You help me find them first. I have a plan."

"Alright!"

By the crystal clear lake, Shi Yan was sitting on the brown rock and studying the Seven-colored Spirit Flower with awe for a long time. All of a sudden, he put it back to his Fantasy Sky Ring.

Just like Shang Ying Yue had said, the value of the Seven-colored Spirit Flower was evidently much higher than the Seven-colored Demonic Flower. To him, a warrior with heaven flames, it was constructive. With this Seven-colored Spirit Flower, perhaps he could fuse his different heaven flames into one or two flows, which would give him a magnificent boost.

However, he couldn't do anything to the Soul Rotting Aphis inside Yang Tian Emperor's brain. Shi Yan darkened his face. He hated Mia so much.

"Thank you for telling me the functions of the Seven-colored Spirit Flower." Lifting his face to look at Shang Ying Yue, he said faintly, "In return, I'm going to tell you something. Another force of the God Clan has entered the swamp. This force is much more intimidating than both the Fernandez and the Ascot families. If you guys were unlucky and let them found you, I think you

wouldn't have escaped death."

Hearing him, Mo Fou, Cecilia, and the others had their faces turn ash-gray. They felt so hopeless and desperate.

When Phelps and Mia had joined hands, they hardly had a chance to survive. And now, another dominant force of the God Clan had just arrived. Would they have a chance to survive?

"Please give us a hand."

Cecilia moved her sexy body agilely, looking at him with a begging face and speaking in a soft voice, "If you can help us, we can get over this tough challenge and wait until the day the Center opens."

"The Center?" Shi Yan looked at the others as he didn't have a clue.

"You don't know?" Mo Fou sounded surprised.

Wu Feng, Wu Bai, and Shang Ying Yue also wore awkward countenances.

Mo Fou suddenly felt reluctant. He hurried to explain. "The ancient continent is divided into five lands. In the first five years, the four surrounding lands will open. After five years, the center will be unsealed. That Center is the essence of the ancient continent. It has more natural defenses and much more precious materials. The Guiding Fruits for the next time will also appear in the Center. Well, in short, the Center is where all the forces fight against each other to take the best resources."

"You guys aren't afraid of the God Clan when you enter the Center?" frowned Shi Yan.

"I heard that the Center has many deathtraps. Dangers are everywhere. Although the God Clan is strong, it's not easy to pursue us all the time," Mo Fou explained with a dry smile.

"As long as you agree to help us go through the challenges, we can

negotiate anything," said Wu Feng.

"Well, then you guys kill Sha Zhao first," Shi Yan pursed his lips and looked at Sha Zhao, giving a malicious request.

Suddenly, Mo Fou, Wu Feng, Wu Bai, Jiao Shan, Cecilia, and the others lay their eyes on Sha Zhao. Their eyes sparkled with strange lights.

Sha Zhao felt chilled to the bone. He instinctively moved backward and summoned so many insects and venomous animals rolling under his feet. They covered him in layers. "You are really going to listen to that brat? We've fought against enemies together for so long. Just one sentence from him and you guys want to kill me?"

"If we have to sacrifice only you to exchange for everybody else... We can only say sorry to you," Wu Feng nodded coldly as he was ready to strike.

Sha Zhao discolored in fright. He looked at Shi Yan indignantly and shouted, "Don't bully me! I didn't gain anything at that time. You even hurt me! I have never thought about taking revenge! Do you really want me to die?"

Shi Yan wore a cold face.

Mo Fou's team looked at him as if they were waiting for his signal to kill Sha Zhao right in front of him.

"If one of us dies, our force will be a bit weaker. Can you guys... discuss your resentment later?" advised Shang Ying Yue.

Squinting, Shi Yan's face was harsh and cold. He sneered. However, as he was about to talk, he got startled.

His face became so serious. He immediately closed his eyes. The co-soul burned behind his head and sent clear soul fluctuations back to him. He was wholly concentrating.

Everybody was clueless. They didn't know why Shi Yan suddenly

acted weird at this critical moment. They knitted their brows and waited for his decision without bothering him.

"He's checking the situation around... Maybe Mia and Phelps are heading here." Shang Ying Yue reminded people, which made people intense.

Gradually, they found Shi Yan becoming sterner. In the end, he knitted his brows tightly as if he was encountering something he couldn't handle. Seeing him like that, everybody else became restlessly insecure. They became more cautious.

Swoosh!

The dancing flame above Shi Yan's head shrank, flashed, and then disappeared into the corner of his eye.

Opening his eyes, Shi Yan said in a low-pitched, serious tone. "It's much more troublesome." He didn't talk about asking for killing Sha Zhao anymore. Sha Zhao exhaled in relief as people focused on Shi Yan.

"Recently, a flow of Soul Consciousness had gotten here. It was sensing our commotions. If I'm not wrong, the new coming force of the God Clan must have a warrior whose soul isn't bound in this ancient continent like me. Within a specific range in this swamp area, even if you hide thousands of meters underground, he can dig you up."

People were so frightened. They could see the fear in each other's eyes as they were desperate in the dead corner.

"I wouldn't care about your lives," Shi Yan took a deep breath and said solemnly, "Because I could always dodge Mia and Phelps. If I wanted to hide, they wouldn't even be able to find my breath. But it won't work that way anymore. That guy came. He's a big trouble to me too. It seems like I have to group with you guys."

This time he didn't ask them to kill Sha Zhao or request any condition. He had directly agreed with their begging.

However, they still had to wear the earth-gray face. No one could feel happy. Right before the fight, they were dispirited. They thought that they couldn't use any bit of strength to resist the God Clan.

"We should have a better plan this time," Shi Yan's eyes changed. He pulled himself together and finally got serious to counter the coming waves.

Chapter 1124: Prepare the Ambush

By the clear lake, Shi Yan was crouching on the ground and using his hard finger to draw a big circle under his feet. He also marked four points inside the circle.

He pointed at the four points and clarified, "We're here. Mia's team is right next to us. Phelps's team is over there. The new coming team is at that position."

He had illustrated their positions on the ground. The four marks he drew on the ground looked a bit like a rectangle. They stood in one corner while Mia, Haig, and Phelps were in the other three corners. There was a distance between them and Haig was the furthest from them. It would take him several days at least to get here. However, Mia's team was closest to them...

Mo Fou, Cecilia, Wu Feng, and Shang Ying Yue squatted by Shi Yan. They focused on the map he had just drawn and frowned.

"Including me, we have twelve warriors here. But if we face them directly, I'm afraid that we can't stand any force of theirs. Even if we scatter to attack each of the three forces, we will never gain the upper hand," Shi Yan frowned and lowered his voice.

Haig's arrival had disturbed his plan. Now, Shi Yan had to group with Mo Fou.

If Haig hadn't come, he would have used his sharp senses and his power Upanishad to run away. He could have swagger in this area without worrying about Mia or Phelps going after him. He could have even hidden in the dark to trouble Mia and Phelps. Perhaps he would have had a chance to rob the Seven-colored Demonic Flower.

However, Haig's arrival had messed up his good plan. Haig's Soul Consciousness wasn't shackled, so he could merely locate Shi Yan's location. Wherever he hid, he would be dug up.

Thus, he wasn't going to have a peaceful time. Shortly after, Mia would find him. He would be confined.

Even though he could use the Space power Upanishad to run away, he couldn't use it unlimitedly. It was the ancient continent, so its space also had restrictions. Also, he couldn't use his Space power Upanishad to get out of this ancient continent. Every time he teleported, it would cost a lot of energy.

He used to consider carefully. Every time he tore the space to run away, he had to consume at least a quarter of his God power. After that, he had to meditate to recover. Or else, he could only escape four times.

If Mia, Haig, and Phelps scattered and formed a circle to attack him, every time he teleported away, Haig could always locate him instantly. The warriors of the three forces would come after him and give him no time to recover.

After running four times, his God power would be drained, which reduced his competence massively. He wouldn't be able to withstand the enemies.

Without Haig, they didn't have the ability to locate Shi Yan. Shi Yan wouldn't feel anxious. But it had already given him a headache.

"We got good news," Shi Yan's fingers fiddled around on the ground. He lowered his voice. "The one who used the Soul Consciousness to sense us doesn't know that I have a similar ability yet. He wasn't careful. His Soul Consciousness fell directly above us. That's why I got him..."

Haig hadn't expected that there would be someone like him in this area with the unbound Soul Consciousness. Thus, he had sent his Soul Consciousness around several thousand meters above Shi Yan's group, which had helped him count the number and assess their general competence. That's how Shi Yan detected his probing Soul Consciousness.

Different from Haig, every time Shi Yan used his Soul Consciousness to sense around, he would never be that reckless. As soon as he touched a life energy fluctuation, he would come back immediately. He wouldn't dare to probe for a long time to figure out the details.

One was careful and the other was too confident. It helped Shi Yan understand Haig's powers while Haig knew nothing about him. Haig didn't know that this swamp had Shi Yan as an unpredictable variable.

"We must exploit this well." Sexy Cecilia was so placid at this moment. Lights of wisdom twinkled in her eyes as she was planning something.

Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Wu Bai quieted down and listened to Cecilia. They knew that Cecilia could help them. Throughout the five years, every time they had planned anything wicked, Cecilia was in charge. She had proven her ability in this aspect.

Shi Yan was surprised. He started to observe this plump, sexy woman. He couldn't help but scan her body.

She was wearing a tight green leather skirt that lingered on her snow-white, slender thighs. Her delicate, fist-sized waist had outlined her ample breasts. She was truly a charming Nagini with breath-taking curves. She could arouse any man looking at her.

Cecilia parted her lips into a grin as she felt Shi Yan's eyes lingering on her body. She stretched lazily and arched her tiny waist, which had heated up Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Wu Bai. They seemed to temporarily forget the coming danger.

Shi Yan also had a flame in his eyes. He pulled himself together and said faintly, "Do you have any plan?"

For the time being, he hadn't had any solution.

Any of the three forces they were about to face was strong enough to smash them. With Haig providing the locations, Phelps's

and Mia's teams had a good guide. With this premise, they couldn't play any trick.

"Let me think carefully. It's really annoying and troublesome."

Cecilia charmingly placed a finger on her full-lip mouth. She slowly squatted and studied the map that Shi Yan had drawn. Because of this posture, her ample butts had showcased her sexy curves that were about to tear her tight leather skirt.

Sha Zhao and some men sitting behind her gawked and drooled. They couldn't help but swallow saliva, cursing that slutty woman.

Shang Ying Yue kept a cold face. She looked at Cecilia with disdain and then at Sha Zhao, Mo Fou, and Wu Bai. She couldn't hide her sneer.

Sha Zhao, Mo Fou, and Wu Bai laughed to cover their embarrassing situation. They had to put an effort in taking their eyes off Cecilia's hot body. Mo Fou gave a dry smile. "Everybody should think. Yeah, just try. We will have a solution then."

"Who knows what dirty things you have in your mind!" Shang Ying Yue scolded him.

They felt more shamed.

However, Cecilia seemed to not be bothered. She knew that Sha Zhao, Mo Fou, and the others had sneaked on her. She giggled. Her beautiful eyes flirted, raking through Sha Zhao, Mo Fou, and Wu Bai. Her seducing posture made people drool.

Oh, this slut!

Everybody gasped. They felt irritated and they felt annoyingly hot inwardly.

"You are all about to die, but your mind still has room for those things. Pathetic!" Shang Ying Yue rose her voice.

Since they didn't know when they would lose their lives in this damn place, they released their real desires. They wanted to enjoy

the pleasure right in front of them. As a woman, Shang Ying Yue didn't understand this negative thought of men. Thus, she became angry.

"There's a solution. I wonder if it works." She smiled at Shi Yan and only Shi Yan, automatically ignoring Mo Fou and Sha Zhao.

Mo Fou, Wu Bai, Jiao Shan, Jiao Hai and the others showed their admiration although they felt a little lost because Cecilia had paid her attention only to Shi Yan, the one with the special function here.

"Do tell," Shi Yan said faintly.

Cecilia looked like a ripe peach. She had the aura of a mature woman, which was an uncontrollable attraction to any man. Shi Yan wasn't an exception. However, since he had cultivated the unique power Upanishad which had made him continuously struggle with negative emotions, his ability to control his desires was much better than normal people.

Thus, he could quiet down his surging desire. He wouldn't have lustful thoughts when seeing Cecilia's sexy body. He could be sober when dealing with important issues.

At this point, Mo Fou, Wu Bai, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan couldn't compare to him. They didn't have experiences in fighting the negative desires.

Shi Yan's coldness and calmness had surprised Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue. They gazed at him and regarded him more highly. A man who could stay calm in the critical moment and could sober his mind from the negative emotions was an exceptional warrior, indeed.

The two women discreetly compared Shi Yan to Mo Fou, Wu Bai, and Jiao Shan. Their pretty eyes sparkled as they were touched.

Mo Fou, Wu Bai, Jiao Shan, and Sha Zhao were all outstanding talents of the great star areas. They were all future leaders of the

forces everywhere. Most of them had competences to challenge warriors whose realms higher than theirs. Their minds were made of steel...

However, those warriors couldn't be as calm as Shi Yan in the critical moments. It seemed like Shi Yan wasn't affected by the situation. Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia were scared. They felt lucky that they didn't cause grudges against Shi Yan and had him on their side.

"They don't know that we can see their direction. With this premise, we can prepare an ambush." Cecilia pointed at an area, which was also the lake. "This place is good. I cultivate Water power Upanishad. I can use this lake to set up many good things. Mo Fou, you have the Earth power Upanishad. You can do more. We can dig up the ground and set up traps here. We should prepare layers of barriers and restrictions. We will activate that at the moment they jump in. And we can even leave early."

"Not a bad idea," Mo Fou nodded immediately. He assessed the surroundings and grinned, "I have a lot of Fiery Earth Mines. Once it explodes, even Incipient God Realm experts can't dodge in the short distance."

"I also have the Yin Lightning Electric Lance!" Shang Ying Yue's eyes brightened.

"Right, we can do this!" Shi Yan continued, strange light sparkling in his eyes. "To make it more perfect, I can stay here as bait. We will guide them into our net."

Chapter 1125: Why Me All the Time?

"No!"

"No!"

"No!"

Surprisingly, when Cecilia, Mo Fou, and Wu Feng heard that he wanted to take risks, they discolored and stopped him altogether.

Shi Yan frowned.

Everybody noticed something strange. They all looked at Shang Ying Yue, waiting for her explanation.

Under people's gazing, Shang Ying Yue said coldly and reluctantly as usual, "If something happens to you, we won't have eyes anymore. We can't survive in the swamp afterward. So, anybody can take risks except you. We won't let anything unexpected happen to you!"

Everybody nodded and advised him.

"Cecilia has a good plan. If nothing unexpected happens, once we leave, the others will pass by this area to chase after us." Shi Yan calculated for a while. "Mia's team is closest to us. We just need to change our direction for a while. Then, she will definitely bring her force to chase after us. And to do that, she has to cross this area."

Shi Yan raked through the other warriors, his face cold and harsh. "Unexpected things happen all the time. What if Mia doesn't go this way? What if she isn't going to pass through this area? If she doesn't go this way, will we just waste our barriers and tools that we've set up here? If our first move can't hurt the others severely, our next step will be much more difficult."

Swinging his hand, he said resolutely, "I'll stay. When I see that the situation isn't right, I can teleport away. Except for me, who

can do that?"

No one answered him.

"Okay. Then, we'll carry out this plan. I don't want to discuss more unless you can nominate someone who will stay here and die instead of me," said Shi Yan indifferently.

Everybody instinctively looked at Sha Zhao with sinister eyes. The cold, vicious light in Mo Fou's and Wu Feng's eyes made people shiver without feeling cold. "What if we beat Sha Zhao up until he's almost dead and tie him here? Do you think it would be better?" asked Wu Feng in a cold voice.

Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Cecilia nodded gently. They thought that it wasn't a bad idea, and it was possible, anyway.

Sha Zhao felt so cold. He instinctively backed off and shouted crazily, "You motherf*ckers! Why single me out every time? Who did I mock among of you?"

He suddenly recalled something, looking at Shi Yan indignantly as his flame of anger shot up into the sky. "I know you want to earn his favor. He's useful to us. To please him and save him, you want to sacrifice me! Alright, I don't want to play with you anymore. I'll get going now."

Sha Zhao wore a cold face. He felt so disappointed with Mo Fou's team. He hated the wicked Mo Fou and Wu Feng more than he hated Shi Yan.

"Enough!" Shi Yan shouted solemnly, his voice icy cold. "It's true that I don't like Sha Zhao and I want to kill him. But not now! We're all in a deathtrap. Any force of the enemy is stronger than us. If you think about sacrificing Sha Zhao and wearing out your competence, I think I don't need to join hands with you guys because it's impossible to escape their pursuit going with you!"

Hearing him, people became embarrassed. No one answered him.

"It's you two! Why did you suggest such a dirty solution?" Jiao

Shan snarled at Mo Fou and Wu Feng. "He knows to prioritize the important matters. Why can't you? If you guys want that, our brothers will leave this group too. If you can sacrifice Sha Zhao, maybe it's our brothers the next time. What do you say?"

The others also nodded. Their faces looked resolute as if they were all about to separate from this group.

"I said I'd stay." Shi Yan was sitting on the brown rock by the lake. He lifted up his head to look at the sky. He released his co-soul and said, "Mia's team will arrive in one day and one night. I think it's time for you to prepare. I will watch over you guys. Once their Soul Consciousness starts moving, I will tell you to stop. We shouldn't let him figure anything out."

Sha Zhao stayed away from the others. He was ready to run for his life. At this moment, he hesitated.

If he left this group, once he encountered any team, he would be killed instantly. There was no chance to survive. Sha Zhao knew this very well. Unless he had no option, he would never want to leave.

"We admit that we were wrong. Don't go Sha Zhao. We won't behave like that anymore." Mo Fou pondered and bowed to Sha Zhao in the distance, raising his hand. "By the name of my ancestor, I'm sure I will never aim at you anymore! No more!"

Cecilia and Wu Feng also nodded. They understood that if Sha Zhao left, people here would feel distressed and it would be hard to get them united one more time.

They were the weakest in this swamp. If the number of their members were reduced, they wouldn't have a chance to survive when confronting the other three forces. Thus, they had to put their ego aside and beg Sha Zhao not to leave.

"I'm going to give you one more chance!"

Sha Zhao snorted. He walked back to them with a stiff back.

Actually, he had just sighed in relief discreetly.

He frowned, looking at Shi Yan who was watching the sky, his face awkward...

"Everybody, seize the time and work now!" Mo Fou screamed. "We should take the time when he doesn't notice us and take action. Quick, arrange the barriers!"

He took them to a clear ground, pitching his voice. "Move away! I'm going underground with the Fiery Earth Mines. I'll also set up a restriction. Once there's pressure on the surface, it will be activated. Don't stay too close to me."

Mo Fou's icy eyes flashed sinisterly. As people were watching, he slowly drilled into the ground, which hadn't troubled him. He could move underground as smooth as fish swimming in water.

Shi Yan squinted and paid attention. He found out that Mo Fou had entered one thousand meters underground and he was skillfully installing something.

"I will install the Yin Thunder Electric Lance on that tree. Don't touch its branches or leaves. It will affect my restriction." Shang Ying Yue's cold voice arose. She was moving like a zigzag lightning strike between the trees around. Her porcelain arms danced in the air, making many magical hand seals and imprinting on the trees. She had even hung some special treasures there.

"I'll check the bottom of the lake."

Cecilia smiled charmingly before jumping into the crystal lake like a beautiful mermaid. She didn't even make the water splash. She got into the bottom of the lake quietly.

The others also scattered and worked on their own barriers or restrictions. They had used many secret treasures that were fatally powerful. From this area, their ambush extended and made this area a field of terrifying barriers and restrictions.

"The energy fluctuations can be seen. Don't act rashly to stay

concealed. If they find us, our labor here will be in vain." While arranging her restriction, Shang Ying Yue reminded the others.

"Got it."

"We understand."

"Don't worry. I'm good at these kinds of ambush setups. I'm sure I will scare that b*tch Mia out of her wits!"

Many warriors here were from the influential star areas. They clenched their jaws and used the most intimidating tricks they had. They had prepared this area with danger at every step. Even Shi Yan felt chilled just watching them.

The Wu brothers had used many silver balls. Once they impacted by something, they would shoot countless beams of cold air, which could enter the soul altar directly and stab the Sea of Consciousness. Those sharp air beams would shatter the soul directly.

Sha Zhao from the Gu God Sect had released many demonic insects and venomous animals in the swamp. Those things were so tiny that Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness could hardly detect them. As they were merely invisible because they were so small, they could scatter in the air and earth and heaven energy around. Once the warriors took in the energy, they would enter their veins and body. They would be weakened unknowingly and they wouldn't be able to mobilize their energy anymore.

Feeling the toxic insects that were dozens of times smaller than a hair sinking into the swamp not far from him, Shi Yan tried to count how many there were. He found more than dozens of thousands.

Shi Yan felt his scalp tingling.

He suddenly felt lucky that he got the Poison-dipped Cold Bead. Otherwise, in the previous battle, not only could he not damage Sha Zhao, he was also poisoned badly. Sha Zhao could have killed

him.

Although this man's God power wasn't thick enough, he had many malignant tricks that were really hard to defend. Shi Yan had a feeling that if Mo Fou and Wu Feng had attacked to kill him, perhaps Sha Zhao could have killed some of them.

While Shi Yan was still thinking, Sha Zhao lifted his head to look at him, his face odd. He stooped and his voice was stiff, "I'll remember that you stopped them for me. I will repay this favor of yours. However, the grudge between us... it's not easy to be lifted up like that."

Shi Yan was surprised. He stayed bewildered for a while before he could chuckle. He just nodded and said nothing.

Splash!

The water rushing sound arose from the lake behind him. A sexy figure moved agilely like a swimming fish slowly emerged.

Her wet hair draped around her shoulders. Cecilia wore the leather dress that showcased her hot body. As her slender thighs moved in the lake, half of her body emerged from the water. She looked at Shi Yan in the distance and said, "I've installed an interesting toy under the lake. But I need to control it. If I stay, it can perform at maximum capacity, which can damage them badly. Hey... can you take one person with you in that critical moment? Can you bring me and escape the scene? I'm sure I can kill one or two instantly if they get into the lake and fight."

Shi Yan's eye flashed a strange light. He looked at Cecilia who was showing him her absolute confidence. He pondered for a while and then nodded, "I can take you with me. But you have to stay close to me and you can never leave for even a moment. Can you do that?"

"Of course I can." Cecilia smiled happily and talked seductively, "Don't worry. I won't cause you any trouble. I'm sure I will obey."

Oh yeah, I will stick to you."

Shi Yan frowned. He didn't look at her anymore and continued to watch the sky. He had to focus to prevent Haig's Soul Consciousness.

Cecilia smiled, her beautiful legs moving as she slowly sank into the lake.

Chapter 1126: The Fearful Formation Under the Lake.

It was a muddy road that meandered like a snake. Coin-sized leaves floated above the murky water and released faint, toxic gas.

Mia took Yue Man and the warriors of the Fernandez and moved along the narrow trail in the middle of a marsh at a normal pace. Yue Man relaxed. He didn't need to use his energy to trace the opponents anymore.

As Haig was giving them directions from time to time, he was free. Haig's Soul Consciousness could cover a larger area faster and more precisely than Yue Man can track with his energy. Thus, he didn't need to waste his energy.

Their speed wasn't so fast. Mia asked them not to hurry. They should consider recovering their energy first.

Mia clearly knew that Phelps and Haig were also heading towards Shi Yan. Comparing the distances, her team was closer. If nothing unexpected happened, they would encounter Shi Yan's team first.

But it wasn't what Mia wanted to see.

Mia assumed that Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and the others were in a dead corner. Haig's arrival had decided their fate. They had been backed into a deadly situation. If her team met them first, as the situation didn't go well, the others would risk their lives, which would possibly bring her team significant losses.

She had brought the warriors of her family to this ancient continent with the primary purpose of entering the Center. Before it was unsealed, she didn't want to lose many experts from her family.

She wanted her people to slow down because she hoped they could get to the opponent's gathering point relatively at the same time as Phelps and Heig, which could reduce the efforts to clear up

Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and the others.

Her precise plan had to change all of a sudden because of Haig's instant message...

"There's a couple in front of you guys by the lake. They didn't leave with the others. They are staying by the lake now." Haig sent her the message. "I've checked that man. He must be the one you asked me to focus on, the one who cultivates Space power Upanishad."

"He is staying there with a woman?" Mia's voice was getting colder.

"Yeah, they're staying by the lake... haha, I guess they seized the time to do something," sneered Haig.

Mia's beautiful eyes flared with cold light. She replied nonchalantly, "Understood. I'll get there quickly." She cut off their communication and called out. "Guys, speed up!"

Yue Man was surprised.

"The guy that has robbed the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree and our Seven-colored Demonic Flower is isolated. We need to arrange well and try our best to kill him before Haig and Phelps come!" explained Mia.

Yue Man's eyes brightened up. He nodded as he understood. Together with the warriors of the Fernandez family, they accelerated.

The lake was like a flawless mirror that was illuminated by the stars above. Their reflections twinkled in silver light on the lake surface.

Sitting on a green-brown rock, Shi Yan lifted his head and watched the stars twinkling in the sky. He squinted and stayed quiet.

The clear and cold starlight sprinkled from the sky, congregating above his head as if there was a funnel that led to his brain. It gave him a fresh, pure air that wouldn't leave any dregs.

The ancient continent moved around different big star areas. It wouldn't stop for a second as it was brutally crushing all the asteroids or dead stars standing in its way. The horizon of the ancient continent had deep blue halos that covered the entire sky. However, those halos were transparent and they allowed the light of the sun, moon, and stars to get through.

Sitting on the rock, Shi Yan didn't think about anything. He quieted down his mind and he didn't even gather the earth and heaven energy proactively.

Under that circumstance, he felt like he was getting close to this ancient continent. He felt like he had merged with the swamp and became a component of this ancient continent. The co-soul that was developed from the Origin of Grace Mainland was taking in the aura like a small tornado. Slowly, earth and heaven energy gathered and poured into the Ethereal Extent inside Shi Yan's soul altar.

Starlight sprinkled and disappeared into the Ethereal Extent, entering a brilliant star in there.

With the marvelous power of the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree, Shi Yan had reached Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm and his understanding of Star power Upanishad had made new progress. And many different abilities of the Star power Upanishad was still hovering in the tier of powers Upanishad. He just needed to sink his mind into the soul altar to touch the truth of Star power.

Mia's team hadn't arrived yet. He still had time, so he had to not waste it. Shi Yan began to understand the new Essence and ability of Stars.

His empty eyes looked at the horizon where the stars twinkling brightly. He suddenly hallucinated that he could reach the stars

unlimitedly. It felt like if he reached out his hand, he could touch the stars in the sky. The brilliant, vast galaxy with countless stars moving around seemed to have something resonate with him...

The dome of the sky of the ancient continent was covered by an icy blue halo, but it didn't prevent the starlight. The star energy reaching him was clear and swift.

He said quietly, feeling his body get refreshed and cooled. His bones and veins became crystal-like and started to sparkle after they were filled with star power.

He stood calmly to comprehend the essence of the Stars.

"Splash!"

A charming, graceful shadow emerged from the lake behind him. Cecilia appeared, her wet hair draping behind her shoulder. She smiled brightly, "I've completed the preparation. When will Mia arrive?"

Shi Yan was sinking into his own world. A long time later, he woke up, a little absent-minded. He didn't turn around and tried to sense for a while. His brows knitted together as he retrieved his Soul Consciousness. He pulled himself together and said in a low-pitched voice, "Two hours at most. They have accelerated much faster!"

At their previous speed, Mia's team would need half a day to approach this area. However, after his recent sensing, he found that Mia's team was really close to them.

Apparently, Mia's team had sped up several times. They were rushing to this area.

"That fast?" Cecilia was astounded. Her long eyelashes twitched. She parted her lips into a seductive smile. "There are so many barriers and restrictions outside the lake. If we sit by the lake like this, they will have doubts... I think we should hide."

"What do you suggest?" Shi Yan nodded and asked. He also knew

that it was suspicious if they kept sitting on the rock like this when Mia came. Thus, he asked Cecilia for her opinion.

"You and I will get under the lake to hide. At least we have to make sure that they won't see us. They would think that we are cultivating in the lake or doing something..." Cecilia's charming face blushed. Her curvy body shivered slightly but it was almost unrecognizable. "Well, we should deceive them and make them think that we don't recognize their arrival because we are too busy with our work. They will buy it and slowly creep in."

Shi Yan was moved. He knew that her idea wasn't bad. He nodded, "Okay."

As he hadn't finished talking, starlight twirled around him. He moved like a beautiful meteor, drawing a marvelous curve in the air and falling into the center of the lake where Cecilia was floating.

Seeing Shi Yan flying over, Cecilia's mesmerizing eyes glinted with joy. Her graceful body swayed a little. A massive bubble arose under her body and covered her entirely. Her jade-like hand made a cut and the bubble had a narrow slit. She waved her hand. "Get in."

This transparent bubble wasn't very different from the invisible light cage that Shi Yan had. It was spacious if Cecilia stood alone, but if Shi Yan got in, it would be a little tight.

Shi Yan couldn't help but frown.

"There are layers of restrictions down there. If you dive alone and touch them, you will waste my labor of preparing them." Cecilia understood his hesitation. She chuckled, "What are you afraid of? I won't bite! Moreover, you used to tell me that I have to stay close to you. I'm doing what I'm told."

Shi Yan didn't say more. He swayed through the narrow slit of the bubble, standing shoulder by shoulder with Cecilia inside the

bubble.

This five-colored glinting transparent bubble was half an air balloon. The two of them stood inside it while it slowly sank to the bottom of the lake. The water surface closed above their heads. This bubble had a fresh scent of water and the sweet aroma from Cecilia's body that could make people sink into it.

As the bubble lowered down, Shi Yan observed his surroundings. He was frightened at first sight.

After they've reached the depth of one hundred meters, Shi Yan saw so many transparent bubbles of various sizes. They were moving around in some trajectory and they didn't float up to the surface. There were hundreds of them. Each bubble contained fierce energy fluctuations.

Those energy fluctuations had resonated with the water in the lake. When the bubble moved, they could hide their energy fluctuations. If Shi Yan wasn't underwater, he wouldn't be able to find these strange commotions.

He couldn't help but release his Soul Consciousness to observe more...

Discolored, Shi Yan took a deep breath. He turned to Cecilia and said, "I think I can't run away if you want to kill me here." The dense bubbles in the lake were like terrifying energy bombs that Cecilia controlled.

If those bubbles exploded at once, the explosive power could burst off his body.

His eyes drilled at Cecilia. He suddenly felt cold inwardly. He urged his powers and prepared himself. If Cecilia showed a little action, he would use the Space power Upanishad to run away immediately. He would never let Cecilia control his life.

"Why would I have to trick you?" Cecilia smiled like a blooming flower." Her beautiful eyes could sink into people's souls. She burst

out laughing and said naturally, "You are too vigilant. Why do you think everyone else is your enemy?"

"Being careful isn't a bad thing," Shi Yan's face was still severe. His nerves were tense as he had always put up guard.

Chapter 1127: Stealth

The bright lake twinkled like a fish scale under the light of the star that was really clear and beautiful.

Hundreds of meters under the water surface contained so many bubbles in different sizes. Each bubble carried tremendous energy fluctuations that could destroy even the sky or Incipient God Realm warrior.

Inside one of those transparent bubbles were two shadows. The distance between them was around ten centimeters. It felt like they could even hear each other's breathing.

A pure fragrance filled the bubble and made the atmosphere romantic. Cecilia's charming face was rosy and it revealed her glamor. Her sexy, mature body looked like it could drip juice. She swayed at her spot, creating heat...

However, Shi Yan had nothing romantic in his mind. His eyes gazed at Cecilia with caution and strange intentions.

She had proposed this ambush plan. She had the chance to stay with him in the middle of a deadly great formation under the lake. She even got him here with her...

All the details matched. If someone said that Cecilia didn't have any other idea for him, Shi Yan would never buy it!

He could vaguely feel that Cecilia wanted to do something through him. She had made him enter the bubble and let him see the energy fluctuation inside those thick bubbles; it would be her next trick.

He had already sensed that the energy compressed in those bubbles was too much. Once they exploded, besides Cecilia, the one who had arranged this formation, no other people in this lake could survive!

Even Shi Yan himself!

"What do you have in mind?" The mature beauty in front of him smiled gently with her succulent red lips. Her face blushed as she released the stunning charisma that could heat up any man.

Shi Yan studied her as many thoughts flashing in his mind. He pulled himself together and chuckled, "Nothing. I just think you're too beautiful, jie-jie. I think I... can't control myself." He didn't wait for Cecilia to say anything and he grabbed her snow-white arm in just a blink of an eye. He talked, feeling hot. "Jie-jie, your skin is so marvelous..."

Cecilia's skin was porcelain white and as smooth as silk. Her bright skin felt so good under his hand.

He decided to take action proactively. He didn't want his life to be held in someone's hands. Whether Cecilia had lousy intentions for him or not, he had to assume it was the worst situation.

If Cecilia pushed him out or left this bubble alone and activated the formation in the bottom of the lake, he couldn't escape alive. Perhaps, he wouldn't have time to urge his Space power Upanishad. It meant that Cecilia was holding his life.

He wouldn't allow it!

As he gripped Cecilia's arm, he had a physical contact with her that would prevent Cecilia from ditching him in just a blink.

If Cecilia had the guts to ambush him, with this close distance, he was confident that he would smash her God Body quickly.

When he grabbed Cecilia by her arm, Cecilia became uncomfortable. Her beautiful eyes had a gleam of chaotic and fearful feelings. She smiled gently, "... Well, even if you like me, you can't behave badly to me though."

While talking, Cecilia quickly raised her arm, trying to get rid of his grip.

However, Shi Yan still clutched her arm, his eyes hot and his face passionate. He whispered as if he was dreaming, "Well, in fact,

when I first met you, I found that I couldn't control myself falling in love with you. Now that we're alone here, forgive me if I can't control myself anymore."

Cecilia changed her countenance slightly. She cursed Shi Yan under her breath for talking nonsense. However, she could only smile embarrassedly. She spoke reluctantly, "Get off me. We can talk. Don't touch me."

"I'm not going to let go of you." Shi Yan put on a perverted face, but his eyes were too calm and cold. His eyes drilled into her, "I really like you!"

The more frightened Cecilia got, the more certain Shi Yan was. His other hand reached out, grabbing Cecilia's waist and pulling her into his chest.

With a fragranced body touching his chest, Shi Yan couldn't control the vibe in his heart. Her soft back stuck on his chest. One hand of his placed on Cecilia's smooth abdomen and it didn't have a single scar. He could feel the bouncing, firm butt cheeks under his palm. He felt hot, indeed. "Well, we still have around two hours. We should do something fun to kill time... No one knows how the future will turn. If we get the chance to have fun, let's just have fun. We should enjoy life. We don't want to regret anything, right?"

Cecilia stood with her back to him, her face fearful and her eyes getting colder. "Can you let of me first?"

"I can't!" Shi Yan said firmly.

Cecilia felt chilled. She suddenly recognized Shi Yan's purpose and the reason why he had acted strangely all of a sudden. She got it...

"You said you like me. Is it true?" Cecilia relaxed her tense body, smiling and endlessly seducing. Her neck was red. "If you like me, agree with me on one thing, will you?"

"Tell me then."

Shi Yan's eyes were calm. He held Cecilia by one hand while the other hand was placed on her belly. It gave him a marvelous feeling. He stroked her belly and brought his mouth near her left earlobe, talking huskily.

As he had a sexy woman in his arms, even if he was so cautious, his body still had a masculine reaction. His lower body got erected eventually and he placed by Cecilia's beautiful-shaped, curvy butt. He could feel his blood boil.

"I want to get to the Center. There's something I must have. It matters a lot to my future and my position in the family."

Feeling Shi Yan's ambiguous move, Cecilia cursed him for being despicable. She quickly pulled herself together. She didn't want her mind to be disturbed by Shi Yan, which would lead her to make the wrong decisions.

"You want me to help you, eh? What can you give me in return?" Shi Yan grinned. The hand wandering around her smooth stomach slowly rose to the spot just under her ample breasts.

Cecilia jolted back. She hurried to press his mischievous hand. Her smile became more begrudging. "Didn't you say that you liked me? Does it require a condition to help the one you like? It doesn't sound nice, though."

"Well, I like a lot of people. If I've come to help every single of them, how could I reach the realm and attainment I have today?" Shi Yan sneered and he arched his lower body so his hard shaft could be placed between her soft, plump butt cheeks. Feeling a wonderful warmth there, his desire rocketed. He thought that it was really hard to control now.

This woman was so juicy and sexy. It has been a long time since he had touched a woman... Hmm, if it continued this way, he wouldn't be able to help it anymore...

Cecilia immediately felt that something was wrong. She halted right in front of the edge. She turned around and pushed Shi Yan's hands, her face sober. "Alright, I admit that I want to ask you to help me with something. But I don't want to use my body in exchange! Please show respect!"

Her usual charming face disappeared. She seemed to turn into someone else who was dead serious.

Shi Yan couldn't react properly. He studied her and then gave a cold smile, "You don't want to ask me for a favor. You want to force me, right?"

Glancing at the bubbles around, Shi Yan spoke calmly. "I'm holding you now. If you dare make any wrong move, I will kill you quickly. I won't show mercy."

Cecilia changed her look. But then, she smiled again. "Yeah, it's true that I've had other thoughts. But I have none at this moment. And you've used me. We will consider that nothing happened. I will let you hold my hand. We'll talk. What do you say?"

"Well, I think that the way we've talked wasn't bad," Shi Yan grinned evilly.

Shi Yan moved his mischievous hands. Just like Cecilia had suggested, he clamped her hand to ensure that she couldn't do anything evil to him. Then, he frowned and asked, "Okay, tell me. If I can help you, what will you offer me?"

"What do you want?"

"You. Is it possible?"

"No!"

"Then what can you give me?"

Cecilia quieted down. Her bright eyes gazed at Shi Yan. She suddenly had a headache. Shi Yan's smart-wit and deliberation made her powerless. She knew that it wouldn't work if she wanted

to ambush him.

"If you need a woman, how about Mia?" She thought for a while and then said with bright eyes. "If Mia falls into the lake, I'm sure that I can confine her! If you can bring her and escape instantly, you can do anything to her. What about this condition?"

"If Mia or Yue Man enters the lake, you just need to help me confine one of them." Shi Yan said, "I want to use one of them to get the Seven-colored Demonic Flower. If I get what I want, I will consider your request."

"That's not good enough!" shouted Cecilia. "Why do I have to help you confine Mia or Yue Man just so that you will "consider" my request? Why can't you just agree to my request?"

"It's simple. I agreed to go with you guys; it's a big favor already. Otherwise, the God Clan would have killed you quickly," answered Shi Yan coldly. "You don't have the right to bargain with me. You didn't have that right from the beginning. And I hate women who set me up the most. If you do it once again, I will kill you directly. Ah, right. I may not need to do it myself. I just need to tell Wu Feng, Sha Zhao, or Mo Fou that I want you dead. They will kill you. Do you believe that or not?"

Hearing him, Cecilia didn't have a tinge of color on her face anymore. She looked at him in rage. She shouted, "You don't talk with reason!"

"You're the one who plotted against me first. Don't blame me." Shi Yan smiled faintly and took a deep breath, "Alright, pull yourself together. Help me with this and I will consider your request. After that, we can talk about the conditions."

Pausing for a while, he lowered his voice, "Mia's team is coming."

Chapter 1128: The Sudden Incident

Inside the marsh, the group of warrior tried to reduce their auras and slow down their pace. They continued to move forward but moved more discreetly.

Yue Man was the leader. He frowned and electric beams shot out of his deep eyes as if he was trying to look further ahead of them. He looked careful.

Mia and the Fernandez followed behind him. None of them looked impatient. They were all following Yue Man's instructions. They all trusted him.

"Haig's news isn't wrong." Yue Man stopped after sensing for a while. He looked at the lake far in front of them and said, "Many warriors used to gather there. They seemed to have struggled against each other for a while..."

Yue Man picked up a pinch of mud under his feet, rubbed it between his fingers, and then looked at the trees around. "Those people... used to walk around the place. It seems that they had arranged something."

Mia was astounded. She suddenly held her porcelain's white arm high.

All the members of the Fernandez family halted and stood quietly at their spots. They were vigilant, watching their surroundings.

"You means they could have perhaps arranged some restrictions?" asked Mia.

Yue Man nodded, pointing at the ground in front of them where there were a lot of thick bushes and lush trees. He answered firmly. "From some traces, those trees have been touched. They did it secretly. Fortunately, I've been familiar with this area for years. I can see their small streaks."

"It's strange." Mia was bewildered. "Did they know that we would

pass by this area? If not, why had they set up barriers and restrictions here?"

"I'm not sure." It was also what Yue Man couldn't reason.

They didn't know that Shi Yan was like Haig: his Soul Consciousness wasn't bound by the ancient continent. He could guess the location they had to cross with the direction they were going. That was why he had asked the others to prepare this area.

"Maybe it's not aimed at us. Perhaps, they've prepared these things for Haig or Phelps. Anyway, no matter what, we have to be careful." Mia thought and then smiled. She turned to talk to Bai Hao's team of four, "You guys go and scout first."

Bai Hao's team darkened their face at the same time.

They could listen to Mia and Yue Man's conversation clearly. They knew that the muddy ground, the bushes, and even the small forest in front of them had a lot of dangers that could take their lives. As Mia was afraid that her family members would get hurt, she wanted the four of them to be sacrificing pawns, which enraged Bai Hao's team.

However, they didn't dare to show that. Mia's team was so domineering. They had proven that, indeed. At the same time, before they came here, their Chief had asked them to obey Mia's orders.

Bai Hao could only reluctantly agree.

"Everybody be careful. The area in front of us isn't safe." He was so tense. Abruptly, his mind became clear and cautious. He urged the God power and circulated it in his body.

The other three warriors of the Bai family followed him. They urged and accumulated energy that then turned into the phantom of a fighting eagle and the python. They stood at their spots and sent the fantasy beasts to explore the area at a slow speed.

Mia's icy eyes flashed with a gleam of heartless intention. She

coldly looked at Bai Hao's group and then turned around to signal the members of the Fernandez family to back off a little further.

Several hundred meters deep in the lake.

Shi Yan stood inside a transparent bubble, still clutching on Cecilia's arm like they were lovers without any distance. The atmosphere between them was ambiguously romantic. However, they both looked stern as if the battle was taking place right in front of them.

"So?" Cecilia exhaled, her breath as tender as the scent of the orchid. Her beautiful eyes were filled with anxiety and uneasy feeling.

The God power in her body was streaming around continuously. It had synchronized to the different-sized bubbles around them. The explosive energy inside those bubbles was connected to her thought. She could trigger the bubbles at any time she wanted.

Those bubbles were a kind of peculiar treasures. It could gather the steam in the lake or the ocean and compress them. When she triggered them, they would burst at the same time and create a terrifying energy wave. She had fabricated those things herself, so she understood very well how tremendous they could be.

She had planned to use the instant-destructive power of those bubbles to damage Mia's team severely. It would give her more chances to survive.

She had also proposed and carried out this ambush plan. She didn't want to see any mistake that would make people doubt her talents. Thus, she was even more anxious.

"It isn't really going well."

Shi Yan's face was cold and stern. He glanced at her and then closed his eyes. The flaming co-soul behind his back swayed and released the soul energy fluctuation.

Cecilia was really nervous. She screamed, "What's happening?"

"That Yue Man has mastered tracing skills. He seems to have found something. Mia's team has halted now. Mia has sent the Bai family's warriors to scout." Opening his eyes, Shi Yan knitted his brows. "Does Yue Man know how to track people? He can read signs and streaks and connect them to figure out information?"

"Damn! We forgot this man!" Cecilia regretted and said worriedly, "Throughout these five years, Mia and Phelps have depended on Yue Man's tracking skills to find us one by one. Although he doesn't have the power like the Soul Consciousness of the man who you've mentioned, Yue Man isn't an ordinary warrior."

"It seems like our plan won't go as we've estimated." Shi Yan rubbed his chin, light flashing in his brain as he contemplated.

"Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, and Shang Ying Yue had used a lot of precious weapons and efforts to arrange those restrictions and barriers. If they can't work, they will be very upset. I'm afraid that we don't have the chance to set up other traps." Cecilia furrowed her bold brows, her charming face filled with an anxious look. She was trying to formulate another plan.

"Ah?"

Shi Yan suddenly let out a low-pitched scream.

"Wait a minute!"

While Bai Hao's team sent their beast phantoms to scout, they were walking towards the lake. Mia stopped them all of a sudden.

Everybody was surprised. They looked at her without a clue. Bai Hao's face was more grimaced. He forced his temper down and gave her a bad face. "Lady Mia, what else do you want us to do?"

Mia chuckled and waved her hand. "Don't rush. Haig said that

the man in the lake can use Space power Upanishad. Once you trigger the barriers and restrictions, he can leave immediately. We can't catch him then."

From Yue Man's judgment, Mia gave an assumption that she thought was correct. She assumed that Shi Yan had set up those restrictions so he could do his business with Cecilia under the lake. When his restrictions were touched, he would be alerted immediately and he could use his Space power Upanishad to flee.

With such an assumption, Mia didn't want Bai Hao's team's activity to alert the others. She calmed down and said to Yue Man, "We should have a better plan. We should disorganize the space around here so he can't use his Space power Upanishad to escape."

"We still have time to plan while he knows nothing about. It should be more than one solution." Yue Man smiled sinisterly. "For example, we can stir up the earth and heaven energy here like a storm. It could create magnetic energy storms that shatter space. Another plan is..."

Yue Man contemplated and smiled coldly. He was giving plans to Mia while Mia earnestly listened to him with nods.

At the bottom of the lake.

"How is it?" Cecilia was about to crack from seeing Shi Yan's strange reaction. Her mesmerizing face was dark. "Something even worse?"

Shi Yan forced a smile. "You got it."

"Ah!" Cecilia covered her mouth and hissed.

"They know we're under the lake. They also know our identities. They're going to stir up the space here so I can't use the Space power Upanishad to run away." Squinting, he sensed and said, "Every space has critical points. When they are shattered or blocked, warriors who cultivate Space power Upanishad can't use

them to run away. They are trying to seal those critical nodes as they thought that I don't know what they are doing. After that, they can catch us like fish in a fish tank."

Listening to him, Cecilia discolored and screamed, "If our plan can't work well, we don't need to stay here. We should go now!"

"Hmm, if all of your bubbles in this lake explode at the same time to create a blasting destruction, how many people can it kill?" asked Shi Yan all of a sudden.

"Even if the First Sky of Incipient God Realm expert comes here, he will die!" Cecilia was confident, but then she changed into a depressed mood right after that. "What's good with it now though? If we have to pay the big price that's our deaths, it isn't worth it. We should go before they finish that. If we linger, something bad will happen to us."

"Well, we can play a little bit."

Shi Yan took a deep breath, his face grave. "They don't know how savage our outer barriers are and they also don't know the formation you've arranged here. They thought that the barriers we've set up are to alert us."

"How to play? If we fail and you can't take me out of here, isn't it different from dying under the lake?" Cecilia continued to shake her head, her face fearful. "I think it's not worth our lives."

"Whether it's worth or not, I'll decide. You just need to listen to me." Shi Yan suddenly smiled and gripped Cecilia's arm, talking to her in a stiff voice. "Don't worry. Even if they can confine the space, they can do it only in a small area. As long as we storm out, I can leave with you immediately."

Cecilia paled. Looking at his cold face, she felt so chilled. She cursed him under her breath for his boldness.

Shi Yan gripped her for a while and then released her. While Cecilia was confused, Shi Yan grinned. "They've successfully

finished. If you kill me now, you will die later. No doubt. And you will reveal your secret under this lake. I think you're not that stupid!"

Cecilia stared at him for a while, her beautiful face filled with reluctance. As the situation had come to this, she pulled herself together and rolled her eyes at Shi Yan. "Forget it. I will play with you for a while. I hope we will survive."

"Don't worry. We will survive," said Shi Yan earnestly.

Chapter 1129: Instant Kill!

Under the lake, transparent bubbles bobbed slowly.

The bubble that was holding Shi Yan and Cecilia swayed and fell towards the bottom of the lake. It was heading to a rigid area that had a lot of dazzlingly, sparkling crystals.

However, they weren't free to enjoy the beautiful surroundings.

"All the barriers and attacks will be triggered at the area where Mo Fou hid the Fiery Earth Mine. If the Fiery Earth Mine doesn't explode, everything will be. The Fiery Earth Mine will be activated by tremors, vibrations, or weight applied on the ground. As long as someone's walking or dropping something, they will be triggered instantly."

"I don't know many pieces of Fiery Earth Mines Mo Fou had installed. But if one of them explodes, the rest will explode all together and will activate the restrictions set up by Shang Ying Yue, Sha Zhao, and Wu Feng. Instantly, the most furious restriction storms will burst off!"

Cecilia explained with a stern face. "If we want to trick them, the first thing we must ensure is that the Fiery Earth Mines won't go off before they come. Everything will be fine."

"Then, I will improve the energy in the ground around here. It will not make the Fiery Earth Mines explode by weight and vibration." Shi Yan nodded.

He stopped by the corner of the lake, placing the palm of his hand on the mud wall of the lake. Starlight sparkled as he sent his God power into the soil.

Squinting, he used his Soul Consciousness to trace his energy, which slowly moved and extended underground. It created a layer of starlight that ordinary people couldn't observe when hiding several meters underground.

He wasn't worried that Cecilia would attack him.

Mia and Yue Man knew that they were in the lake. And he had sealed the place now. Without his power, Cecilia would never be able to escape Mia and the others' besiege.

With this precondition, Cecilia wouldn't disturb him and she had to ensure his safety too.

It happened as he had planned. Before Mia's team came, Cecilia could use her arrangement in this lake to bargain with Shi Yan. If she blocked Shi Yan or wounded him, she could run away easily and leave everything to Mia's team. That way, she could give Mo Fou and the others an explanation.

She couldn't do that now, so she could only stay with Shi Yan and cooperate with him.

The giant ape, the fighting eagle, the python, and the demonic dragons were beast phantoms that Bai Hao's group had created. They were patrolling the swamp. Although they were phantoms, they still had a certain weight and they could attract fires if any. However, when they walked around the lake, they didn't cause any commotion.

Bai Hao's tense nerves were relaxed. He felt lucky that he had dodged a kalpa. Since those phantoms were connected directly with their souls, once they were affected, Bai Hao's team would also be damaged.

Bai Hao was prepared to receive a big attack. And now, seeing that their phantoms were alright, he was actually surprised and happy.

"Perhaps, I thought too much."

At this moment, even Yue Man started to doubt his presumptions. "If they don't have a member who can recognize things like Haig, perhaps they were just lingering here for a while and they didn't set up any serious barriers and restrictions."

The giant ape had come near the lake. If anything should happen, it would have happened already. Mia began to relax. She smiled and ordered Bai Hao, "You guys should go to the lake to check personally."

She was still cautious. She was afraid that the phantoms couldn't check the area thoroughly, so she asked Bai Hao to go and check themselves.

Bai Hao's group cursed her under their breath. However, they couldn't do anything but agree. They walked forward with a dark face, gingerly taking each step. It took them a while to reach the lake. Finally, they could exhale in relief.

Yue Man nodded and smiled, "It shouldn't be any problem. We destroyed the control points of space around here. He can't escape anytime soon."

Mia smiled happily. Her beautiful eyes sparkled. She spoke through her gritted teeth. "This time, he must die. No doubt!" She nodded to the warriors of the Fernandez family.

Right after that, the warriors of the Fernandez family started to move under Yue Man's and Mia's directions. They followed the trail that Bai Hao's group had taken. At a normal pace, they glided through the dangerous area and stood together with Bai Hao's team near the lake.

Nothing happened.

Everybody relaxed. They thought that they had just overthought. However, they didn't know that it was because someone had carefully prepared the earth-shaking danger in the center and it hadn't exploded yet.

"Right in the bottom of the lake." Yue Man stood on the rock by the lake. He squinted and said in a cold voice, "They can't hide!"

Mia smiled and hesitated for a while. She talked to Bai Hao, "Force them to come out."

Mia, Yue Man, and Bai Hao thought that Shi Yan and Cecilia hadn't recognized that they had fallen into a deadly situation because they were busy with their romantic affair under the lake. Thinking like that, they felt relaxed.

The four of Bai Hao's group glanced at each other. They nodded and sent their phantoms made of energy towards the lake and entered the lake.

"Here they come!"

When the giant ape, the fighting eagle, and the other two entered the lake, Cecilia hissed, her face sharp and savage.

"They're just shadows created by energy. They aren't worth our great explosion. We must make them use their real bodies." Shi Yan was still calm. His God body moved inside the bubble and floated up to the surface. Looking at the four giant shadows slowly sinking, he grinned fiendishly. "Give it to me."

"No! Give it to me!" Cecilia smiled and stopped him. She said confidently, "We are under water. This place is the critical area that I've set up. I've cultivated Water power Upanishad. What do you say?"

Shi Yan was surprised. He stopped moving and just watched with interest.

Cecilia's pinky finger of the left hand rattled like the snake tail. A magical wave rippled through her bubble, intriguing something in the lake...

A human-head-sized bubble floated up. The energy in it burst out instantly, which gathered billions of cubic meters of water in the lake and created an animated water dragon.

The water dragon was several hundred meters long. It looked lean but powerful as it continued to draw the torrential steam. It attacked the giant ape and the fighting eagle immediately.

The lake surged fiercely. The water dragon rolled with Cecilia's

full power. The water also attacked the phantoms Bai Hao had created.

Cecilia squinted, her eyes glowing in a cold halo. The energy in her body moved like a murmuring stream and sent splashes everywhere as she was gathering the power inside the bubbles in the lake to send to her water dragon temporarily.

The water dragon suddenly had an endless power that could tear the phantoms created by Bai Hao's group. Standing by the lake, Bai Hao's group discolored. Their soul altars were damaged severely.

"There's a b*tch wreaking havoc there!" Bai Hao shouted, his face ferocious. "Get there and kill her!"

As the four warriors of the Bai family were enraged, they jumped into the lake directly and didn't wait for Mia's order. They wanted to use the energy of their real bodies to strike Cecilia to death.

"Ando, go help them." Mia frowned and pointed at a man. "You've cultivated Fire power Upanishad. You burn and evaporate that water dragon and get their backs."

An expert of the Fernandez family bowed to her and then jumped directly into the lake. Together with the four from Bai Hao's team, he drilled towards the bottom of the lake.

"What should we do?" Cecilia's exposed skin looked like the water rippled. She looked like a woman made of flowing water. She now was beautiful in another marvelous way. Seeing Bai Hao's group of four and a warrior who cultivated Fire power Upanishad, she hurried to ask for Shi Yan's opinion. "Do you want to kill them? Once you attack them, the traps we've set up in the lake will be triggered. We can kill five or six people. But it won't be dangerous anymore. Tell me, what should we do?"

"Five people. All are at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm. So strong, indeed." Shi Yan squinted and considered, "Cecilia, if you use your best power in this lake, how many warriors can you deal

with?"

"Without those barriers, I think I can deal with the expert from the God Clan who cultivates Fire power Upanishad. I guess I can gain the upper hand, but I won't be able to take care of more," Cecilia answered immediately.

"Oh," Shi Yan shook his head. He could only give up his thoughts, "It seems like we can't stop them and attract more people to get into the lake. If it's so, we will attack curtly. You strike them right now!"

"Okay!"

Cecilia's soft body released the tremendous energy fluctuations. She gave people a feeling of something deadly and dangerous. Bubbles rose from her eyes like the storm energy. "Don't leave this bubble. Or else, you will be damaged too!"

While talking, the bubble they were staying inside lowered to the bottom of the lake and headed to a cave entrance, entering deep into the ground under the lake.

While they entered deep into the ground under the lake, Cecilia continued to create a lot of hand seals. Wisps of Soul Consciousness were triggered. Her fingertips shot out rapid streams, soaring up to the surface of the lake above her head...

The bubbles turned to the most furious energy storms. The crystal clear lake was like a shattering mirror. It cracked strangely and then dissolved into many pieces while the water inside the lake exploded continuously. Even the mud wall of the lake was pressed until it burst off.

The clear lake had turned into the most horrible hell in just a blink of an eye. Bai Hao's group of four and Ando of the God Clan who cultivated Fire power Upanishad hadn't recognized anything before their God bodies were dismembered. They burst and died. Even their soul altars were smashed and burned into ashes.

The five warriors at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm had perished both their souls and bodies without a scream.

Even Mia's team by the lake was affected by the shockwaves. They were blown away. Many of them gushed out blood, staggering and trying to steady themselves.

Behind them was also the area where there were dense barriers and restrictions that Shi Yan had activated.

Chapter 1130: Use the Old Trick Again

The lake had been quiet and clear a moment ago. Now, it was the Purgatory on earth. It had swallowed Bai Hao's team and Ando, leaving nothing, not even a piece of bone.

From the lake as the center, the surroundings looked like an image of the day of the apocalypse. Earth-shattering changes happened. Extremely destructive explosions arose from underground. Sharp spikes jutted from the ground. In the grumbling explosion, the ground shattered and also triggered more hidden restrictions.

Many sharp spikes shot out, falling like rain.

Those sharp spikes were gold and silver. They were smaller than the needles but much sharper. They could enter the God body or soul altar easily. Many warriors of the Fernandez family had many bleeding holes on their bodies.

Sizzle! Sizzle!

Strange noises echoed from the branches and leaves of the nearby trees. Significant bolts shot out, aimed at Mia and Yue Man's team as if they had their own consciousness.

The clouds of scorching fire emerged from the ground, floated up to the sky, and heavily pressed down above the Fernandez family's warriors.

Dense sleet with icicles and bolts of lightning howled. Sharp spears jutted from the ground when the earth was splitting. All the restrictions were urged at the same time, giving the area around the lake the picture of the apocalypse.

Mia, Yue Man, and more than ten warriors of the Fernandez family were so indignant. Almost all of them got hurt and had to use their God powers a lot. Their soul altars were also damaged in different levels.

The restrictions that Mo Fou, Wu Feng, Sha Zhao, and Shang Ying Yue had set up were really earth-shattering when they were activated. They were restrictions that they shouldn't be regretful of.

Buzz! Buzz! Buzz!

While the toxic insects were buzzing, a Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm warrior of the Fernandez family suddenly became dull and baffled.

Mia's face was cold. She turned around to look at him. The flames of rage rolled in her heart.

A gray cloud that looked like a shabby sheet of fabric fell on him. Under a melee of bolts of lightning, sharp spikes, and fire, he didn't notice that. He just used the light cage to protect his body. However, that gray, fabric-like thing was a cloud of tiny insects.

Easily, those microscopic insects got through the light case and entered his head through his nostrils, eyes, ears, and mouths.

Black blood oozed out of the seven holes on that man's face giving him a shocking look that cracked people's nerves and courage. Even Mia felt her scalp tingling.

She was sure that his soul altar had been nibbled and destroyed. He didn't even have the hope to resurrect later.

Buzz! Buzz! Buzz!

More gray insects flew out of the cracks in the ground or the trees. They moved in masses like fabric sheets in the air. The warriors of the Fernandez family had to avoid them like they were running away from ghosts.

"Ah!"

Shrieks and extremely terrible screams arose. More members of the Fernandez family got trapped. The restrictions had damaged their God Bodies or eroded their soul altars. Those warriors had to

drain their energy quickly to resist. They felt like their mentalities were going to collapse at any minute.

Until this moment, they were sure that Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia had plotted this before. They were surely well-prepared to counter them.

"Secure our formation!"

Mia called coldly. She urged her God Blood to transform to the God Undying Body. Standing like a perfect transparent piece of art in this chaotic ruin, her God power circulated in her body like a stream of water, giving her a mysterious beauty.

The lake in front of her had gradually calmed down after that earth-shattering commotion.

However, the clear lake was now a murky pond with dirty water, blood, and even pieces of human flesh blending in, which nauseated people. The auras of Bai Hao, Ando, and the others had vanished in the filthy water so fast that it shocked Mia. She stood baffled for a while as she felt that it was so inexplicable.

After the soul and the body of an Ethereal God Realm expert had been shattered, he was dead for sure. Even the God Clan didn't know how to resurrect this kind of dead warrior.

However, at this high level, after they had fallen, the powerful energy and the soul in their bodies wouldn't return to earth and heaven in just a blink of an eye. There was some kind of last process that took time, perhaps several minutes...

However, in Mia's conception, Ando, Bai Hao, and the others were killed in just a blink. Their auras had also dissolved at an unimaginably fast speed after their bodies and souls perished.

Mia thought that it was so strange, but she didn't linger much. She assumed that Ando and Bai Hao had died. That was why they had disappeared shortly after.

Of course, she didn't know that there was a man under that

murky lake excitingly taking all the scattering energy!

Inside the bubble, Shi Yan stayed quiet as if he didn't know the horrible changes above his head or Cecilia get excited standing by him. He just stood still.

Bai Hao, Ando, and the other three were experts at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm. The Essence Qi scattered when they were killed instantly and it was like wisps of smoke that the naked eye couldn't see. Shi Yan's acupuncture points quickly took it in. He had even let the black hole in his soul altar out to swallow thousands of soul wisps...

Cecilia was restless at her spot as she was proud of this ambush. However, she felt something when she looked at Shi Yan.

Usually, it was almost unrecognizable to ordinary people when Shi Yan was taking in the Essence Qi. However, this time Cecilia stood too close to him. When she quieted down and sensed, she could feel the change of energy. Her beautiful face now had an awkward look when she eyed him suspiciously.

The extremely turbulent restrictions bursting that had taken place above their heads wasn't finished yet. However, its power began to cease. The clear lake was now a muddy swamp. It didn't look fresh and beautiful anymore.

"Besides the five that died instantly in the lake, there were three killed by the restrictions out there. The other nine, including Mia, are wounded." Shi Yan's eyes brightened. He suggested suddenly, "You get out first and try to control the situation for a while. I want to capture Yue Man."

"Try to control the situation?" Cecilia winced.

"You cultivate Water power Upanishad. You just need to emerge above this muddle bog. You just need to separate Mia and Yue Man. Don't worry. I can capture Yue Man really quickly. I won't let you fall into danger." Shi Yan's face was ice-cold, his voice chilled.

"Whatever you want me to help you with later, it costs your cooperation. I'm giving you an opportunity now. It's you who decides whether to take the chance or not."

Cecilia was shaken. Her charming face became strong. "Okay, deal!"

Because of the terrible explosion in the lake, all the restrictions there were gone. Cecilia urged her energy and swayed like a beautiful Nagini in the water, riding the current to travel to the murky surface. She emerged directly above the lake, which was now a pond of mud.

She smiled sweetly, her face mocking Mia, Yue Man, and the others who were still ducking the attacks. She said deliberately, "Well? My restrictions are interesting, right? We will slowly repay what you've treated us throughout the recent five years. It's just the beginning. More fun is awaiting you."

This was a naked provocation!

Mia's beautiful eyes became cold and sinister. She gazed at Cecilia, shouting indignantly. "Where is he? He has the guts to ambush us but not the balls to show himself?"

"Well, when you guys were killed disgustingly, we were..." Cecilia's charming face blushed as she pretended to be embarrassed. "You know, right? Listening to your shrieks and screeches... you don't know how excited we were! Muahahaha!"

"Lowly b*tch!" Mia was so angry that her body shivered. She couldn't help but shout. "Kill her! Kill her now! Kill that b*tch for me!"

All the fatal restrictions around them had completed their functions. The warriors of the Fernandez family were exhausted mentally and physically. Their souls and bodies were affected differently. They had to find something to vent out their anger on.

Cecilia is what they needed now.

Mia had ordered the members of the Fernandez family and made them burst out with murderous auras and bloodthirsty desires. They all stormed towards Cecilia.

The brutally wild air currents rose like evil dragons. Cecilia changed her visage. She felt her power pressed by these air currents. She didn't think much and immediately went into the muddy lake. She gathered energy and sent twirling muddy tornados that swept through the area.

"Watch out!"

Mia shouted as she recalled something.

Yue Man rose his arm and made a gesture to ask people to halt. Electric beams from his fingertips stormed into the swamp. After a while, he told them, "The lake is safe."

Hearing him, the Fernandez warriors didn't hesitate. Many Ethereal Extents were activated. Grand mountains stormed out and grumbly pressed down on the muddy swamp. Instantaneously, strange powers of earth and sky were urged. Explosions reverberated in the lake again.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

The terrifying hissing arose. Three bone thorns appeared abruptly and assaulted Yue Man.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

The scorching flame created a sea of fire that snatched over Yue Man. Flows of earth and heaven energy rolled fiercely. They spread and swarmed as if someone was controlling them. Also, they were pressing down on Yue Man.

A massive scorpion created by starlight twinkled in the horizon. It swung its tail and stormed towards Yue Man.

Shi Yan urged his powers Upanishads without any hesitation. Space and Star power Upanishads together with the heaven flame,

the soul energy, and the co-soul had gathered emerged in just a blink. They all aimed at Yue Man and left him no space or strength to resist.

In fact, Yue Man felt overwhelmed when many attacks were aimed at him at once. He didn't know what to do to defend.

Boom!

Just like the vast ocean pressing on him, Yue Man's skeleton echoed of cracking sounds. His face was also deformed under the pressure, his energy chaotic.

Shi Yan appeared like a ghost right behind Yue Man. Just like when he assaulted Phelps, he stabbed one thorn in Yue Man's abdomen and another one in his heart.

Looking at Mia coldly, Shi Yan was nonchalant, "You know what I want."

Chapter 1131: Achieve his Desire

"You know what I want."

After capturing Yue Man, Shi Yan looked natural and calm. He quietly eyed Mia, a cold smile hanging on the corner of his mouth.

As the Fernandez warriors were striking the muddy lake, they halted, their faces dark, cold, and indignant. All gazed at Shi Yan.

Rumble!

A rapid current arose. Cecilia stood atop the water current. The fear on her face had vanished. She giggled and gently swayed her delicate waist as she descended by Shi Yan.

The Fernandez warriors didn't dare to act rashly, their complexion begrudging.

Mia's exquisite face twisted. Cold resentment sparkled in her eyes. She took a deep breath, forcing herself to calm down. She gestured to the other members of the Fernandez family.

Everybody quieted down, scattering as they saw her gesture. Instantly, they circled Shi Yan and Cecilia in layers.

"Lady Mia, don't mind whether I die or not. Please kill him!"

Yue Man's eyes were distressed and sorrowful. His abdomen was bleeding, but he didn't look fearful. He said calmly, "He's much more dangerous than anybody else. If he's alive, he will affect the great plan of our clan!"

Yue Man could feel the significant risk from Shi Yan.

When the three bone thorns appeared, he had been cautious enough to gather the energy of his body. However, the fierce attacks from Shi Yan's formidable three powers had struck him. He couldn't bear that and Shi Yan got him in the end.

When the bone thorn stabbed into his soft abdomen, Yue Man felt so cold. He was frightened. He began to observe Shi Yan's

power. He figured out that Shi Yan was a time bomb and he didn't know when it would explode in this swamp. He was so intimidating with Space power Upanishad and tremendous competence.

He now understood Phelps's feelings at that time. He knew that it wasn't because Phelps was useless. His opponent was too strong.

"I don't know what you want. Can you make it a little clearer?"

Mia didn't look at Yue Man or listen to him. She just glared at Shi Yan while thoughts rolled in her head as she thought about how to deal with this tough challenge.

"Swoosh!"

The bone thorn stabbing in Yue Man stirred from time to time. Blood splashed from the cut, dyeing the grass in front of him blood red.

Yue Man's face winced in horrible pain. He clenched his jaw, trying to endure and not to scream. However, the elegant features of his middle-aged face had gone. He looked ashen now. Evidently, his wound was really terrible.

Shi Yan looked deliberate even though he was busy. He studied Mia, his face wearing a cold smile. "I know that the God Clan has an amazing self-recovery ability. You can heal your wounds fast, but the pain is something you can never control, right? Can you feel the pain?"

He grinned. Another bone thorn appeared. He grabbed it and thrust it into Yue Man's leg and then slowly moved it all together with the other two...

Yue Man couldn't endure it anymore. He cried crazily and crouched. His leg now had a bleeding cut that was deep to his bone that made people jolted up when they saw it.

Many warriors of the Fernandez family felt chilled. They were scared as if they had to endure such terrifying torment. Some

didn't even dare to watch. They turned away as they didn't want to see Yue Man wailing in pain.

Pffft!

Blood splashed. Some drops of blood splattered on Cecilia's clothes, creating the crimson flowers. Cecilia looked at it in disgust. She hurried to step backward and stood behind Shi Yan. Now, she had to look at Shi Yan with a complicated complexion.

Too sinister and savage, indeed!

Cecilia screamed inwardly. She had made up her mind. If she had to fight Shi Yan, she would rather let him kill her instantly than fall into his hands. This man didn't seem to have human emotions.

"Wait! I'll hand it to you!"

Mia gritted her white teeth. Colors faded in her exquisite face. She didn't want to linger and let Yue Man suffer from more torture.

She touched a green ring on her finger. A shining light flashed. A beautiful crystal emerged with a peculiar-smiling-woman flower inside.

The crystal floated and flew towards Shi Yan slowly, releasing the demonic aura. People could feel its powerful energy.

Cecilia's pretty eyes brightened. She eyed the Seven-colored Demonic Flower and squinted to sense. Before the flower had arrived, she said, "This flower is real. The aura is just right and the energy fluctuation matches. It should be real."

"I won't joke about this on my Uncle Yue Man's life." Mia hissed coldly. "Hurry and release him!"

Shi Yan rose his hand and waved, using his energy to drive the crystal and putting it into his Fantasy Sky Ring. Then, he grinned. "Wait for a moment. We must get out of this area first. If we linger, you will kill us immediately, won't you?"

The deaths and wounds that Mia and the Fernandez family's warriors had to bear came from the restrictions and the secret treasures that Mo Feng, Sha Zhao, Wu Feng, and Shang Ying Yue had left. Although they weren't related directly to him, he knew how dominant Mia's team was. He knew that when Mia alone troubled him, he wouldn't have a chance to run away.

At the same time, Cecilia wasn't strong enough to deal with the other warriors. If they were besieged, Cecilia and Shi Yan wouldn't be able to escape quickly, which only left them with the road of death.

Mia didn't say more. With a dark face, she waved at her warriors. Those people knew what to do. They proactively stepped aside to give way to Shi Yan and Cecilia.

Shi Yan was still holding Yue Man. Under the murderous look of Mia's team, they walked out of the area at a normal pace. After Shi Yan found that the space nodes outside were normal, he nodded to Cecilia. Cecilia came close to him and hooked her left hand on his elbow. She was smiling and being happy.

"Hey Mia, we have to go now. I'm looking forward to meeting you guys again," teased Cecilia.

"You will all die! I'm sure you will all die!" snarled Mia coldly.

Shi Yan halted, but he didn't release Yue Man. He just furrowed his brows at Mia, "I want to ask you one thing. Has the Fernandez family joined hands with the Ascot family to invade Agate Star Area?

Mia startled. She nodded without much concern. "Yeah, it's true. Plus the Bai family. We've joined hands to swallow Agate Star Area. We've already discussed the shares. The Ascot family will lead this operation. The Bai family will just cooperate with the Ascot family. What does it matter to you?"

She got it when she saw the change of Shi Yan's countenance.

"You're from Agate Star Area?"

"... The Bai family, the Ascot family, the Fernandez family... Good then." Shi Yan muttered and grinned fiendishly at Mia, "I will eat you up. I will eat the people of these three families, one by one on this ancient continent.

I will make your three forces bury your bodies in this ancient continent. First, I will take a small price from your warriors."

"Crack! Crack!"

Yue Man's skeleton was broken, his vein exploded directly. Blood gushed out from his body while his old face winced in a pain of the cutting flesh torment.

"Here, take your warrior." Shi Yan grinned, "It's no problem for him to recover fully later. I know how strong your God Undying Body is. It will just take him some time. He will be alive in the end. It's not against what I've agreed to you. Help yourself."

Shi Yan let off Yue Man. The man sagged down like a puddle on the ground. Shi Yan took Cecilia jumping into a space slit he had torn behind them. They disappeared shortly after.

"I will kill you! I swear I will kill you!"

Mia shouted like crazy. She dashed to Yue Man. Looking at his shattered body, she didn't hesitate to take out many fragranced aromas and crystal pellets in her Fantasy Sky Ring. She shoved them into Yue Man's mouth and urged him, "Stay with us! Uncle Yue Man, you must resist it. Dissolve the medicinal efficacy of those pellets to recover quickly."

Yue Man had a lot of blood on his face. He even had bubbles of blood on the corners of his mouth. He looked terrible and seemed to be dying. While Mia was crying and encouraging him, he strenuously urged his energy to circulate and absorb the pellets.

The survivors of the Fernandez family gritted their teeth indignantly while looking at Yue Man. They looked darkly sinister

at this moment. They vowed to stab Shi Yan thousands of times so he wouldn't have a decent death!

Splash!

Shi Yan and Cecilia fell into a pond, which was really far from Yue Man and Mia. They couldn't come here in just a short time.

Cecilia still gripped Shi Yan's arm, which made her generous breasts stuck on his arm. This warm weight would have made people's blood boil. Her beautiful thighs moved for a while and she emerged from the pond. Looking at Shi Yan, she smiled charmingly, "Good brother, I've helped you get what you want. Shouldn't you agree with me to help me get what I want?"

Her beautiful face wore a tender smile, her eyes filled with hope.

"Let's talk about it later." Shi Yan coldly sprang from her grip. He frowned. "Mia's core team is still here. Phelps's team is also alright. The newcomers are even stronger. I'm not sure if we can survive in the swamp until the Center opens or not. Even if we talk more, it's just talking about things in vain. It's a waste of time and effort."

Cecilia discolored. She eyed Shi Yan for a while and couldn't help but curse this bastard for his harshness. But she couldn't do anything to him.

"Where's Mo Feng's group? Shouldn't we gather with them now?" she pondered for a while and tried to press down her anger.

"You can leave first. I want to cultivate for a while. I don't like you staying and disturbing me," Shi Yan talked indifferently. Pointing in a direction, he said deliberately, "Go this way. After one hour, you will see Mo Feng's team."

Cecilia felt chilled. She looked skeptical in the direction he had just pointed out. She said unnaturally, "It... I should go with you. I can guard you when you cultivate."

"Haven't I made it clear? When I cultivate, I don't want people to bother me!" frowned Shi Yan.

Cecilia was so angry. She gently regarded the eighteen generations of Shi Yan's family. With a gingerly face, she watched her surroundings along her way as she was afraid that Shi Yan had shown her the way to death.

Chapter 1132: Who is the Backbone?

As soon as Cecilia left, Shi Yan glided around the place to set up some small restrictions.

Right after that, he found a lush, ancient tree and went inside the tree. Closing his eyes, he circulated his energy and adjusted the energy in his acupuncture points, making himself sober.

Shi Yan had taken in the Essence Qi of Ando who was part of Bai Hao's team killed and was in the lake and the warriors of the Fernandez family who were killed by the restrictions of Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, Shang Ying Yue. He was filtering and refining that kind of energy in his acupuncture points.

This flow of Essence Qi was too abundant to him. During the filtering process, it was going to put him into the chaotic mental state. Of course, he wouldn't let Cecilia watch it.

After he had refined the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree to break through to Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm, the Essence Qi Ancient Tree in his body had grown tremendously, increasing the amount of room to store more God power.

The Essence Qi from Ando, Bai Hao, and the others were enough to satisfy him. They had filled his Essence Qi Ancient Tree, which made his God power brimming and refined. Perhaps he could reach the upper limit of his Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. It also facilitated him to put more effort in understanding powers Upanishad.

Inside the big tree, he quieted down and waited for the energy in his body to be refined.

Inside a small forest with grass reaching their waist, Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, the Wu brothers, Shang Ying Yue, and Jiao Shan were scattering and creating a vague circle. They were using the divine

crystals to refill energy.

They also knew the free time they got to rest was precious because they might not have free time to recover when another big war consumed them. Perhaps they had to fight until they died.

Thus, as soon as they got time, they had to recover their energy first, so they could be in their best condition all the time to resist the possible dangers. It was because they were cautious that they could live longer than the others who were killed already.

Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Shang Ying Yue had recovered first. The divine crystals in their hands exploded and turned into chips of rock that scattered.

Wu Feng frowned and looked at Shang Ying Yue, "What kind of man is that guy?"

Mo Fou also looked at Shi Yan, his face solemn. "His presence matters to our lives, all of us. We want to know more about him. Please give us the details."

As Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness wasn't shackled by the ancient continent, he could be their eyes to help them locate the enemies or escape the besiege. His role was crucial, indeed.

Strictly speaking, their lives were dependent on Shi Yan. If Shi Yan wanted to trick them, Phelps's and Mia's teams could find them and kill them quickly.

Mo Fou and Wu Feng were the leaders of their families. They didn't like the feeling of being dependent on someone else. They were also afraid that Shi Yan's wrong assumption would lead them to a fatal consequence. Thus, they were all cautious.

"I don't actually know him." Shang Ying Yue's clear and cold eyes twinkled, her long eyelashes batting. "He got the Guiding Fruit from my father. Because of this, I hated him a lot before we got to the ancient continent."

Shang Ying Yue merely narrated how she met Shi Yan. Pausing

for a while, she added, "That man is cruel and heartless. He only cares about himself. He won't bat an eye on people's lives. In other words, if we are no help to him in resisting the God Clan and if he can escape without counting on us, he will not care about our lives!"

Mo Fou and Wu Feng changed their visage.

"Someone is coming!"

Sha Zhao stood up, the dark green light in his eyes rippling. He seemed to use the toxic insects to sense something.

A moment later, Sha Zhao exhaled and said, "It's Cecilia."

People relaxed. However, right after that, they changed their faces as they suddenly remembered something. Mo Fou screamed, "Where's Shi Yan? Did you sense him?"

Sha Zhao shook his head, his face complicated. "No. Only Cecilia."

The warriors who were sitting to cultivate all jolted up, their faces grimaced. "What's good if Cecilia can come back?! If he isn't here, we are blind. How can we resist the God Clan?" Wu Feng said gloomily and coldly.

They all nodded in agreement. In their mind, Shi Yan's life was much important than Cecilia's.

"Something unexpected happened to him?" asked a warrior.

People's faces darkened. Mo Fou snorted and said coldly, "Cecilia is really trash. She can come back and she didn't bring him with her!"

People nodded again.

"Who said I'm just trash?"

Right at this moment, Cecilia's voice came. Her face was frosty as she scanned through them. They were all studying her with cold eyes. Cecilia felt so indignant. She couldn't help but cry. "Don't you

feel shameful? While I risked my life with Mia's team, you guys were staying here and recovering your powers in peace! I'm back and I have to endure your mocking?"

"Where's Shi Yan?"

"Where is he?"

"Why did he not come back with you?"

"Is it because of you that he got hurt or something unexpected happened?"

No one minded Cecilia's rage. They just wanted to know where Shi Yan was. They wanted to confirm his status first.

Cecilia looked at each of them and felt so helpless. She now recognized that she had no means to compete with Shi Yan. She had nothing to bargain with him like he had mentioned. If Shi Yan wanted her to die, he didn't need to do that himself. He just needed to tell Mo Fou and Wu Feng.

She immediately felt dispirited. She didn't nag more. "He's alright. He just wanted to cultivate alone for a while. He said he would catch up with us later."

Hearing her, people exhaled in relief. Their tense nerves were relaxed. Then, they asked to know if she was okay. They clamorously asked her what had happened and whether or not their restrictions had worked. They wanted to know if their death traps had damaged Mia's team badly.

"The four warriors of the Bai family were dead. I gave them an instant kill in the lake together with a warrior of the Fernandez family who cultivated Fire power Upanishad at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm!" said Cecilia arrogantly.

Everybody was astounded. Shang Ying Yue was so excited. She balled her fists, her soft body shivering.

She had a deep grudge against Bai Hao's team. She always wanted

to eliminate the Bai warriors. As she heard that the four warriors of the Bai family were killed, she couldn't hide her joy. The dark cloud in her mind was also swept away.

"The restrictions you guys set up had damaged all of them. It seems like three or four were killed. Mia's team had a significant loss this time," continued Cecilia.

People grinned and laughed. They cheered happily. Throughout five years, they had been running helter-skelter all the time. They had been in a bad situation and had never given Phelps and Mia any damage. To them, this was a rare triumph that gave them a gentle pat of encouragement on their shoulder.

"Well, Shi Yan had especially captured Yue Man to ask for the Seven-colored Demonic Flower from Mia. He had wounded Yue Man severely too," Cecilia smiled and added.

"Awesome!"

"He could use the old trick again! Excellent!"

"How could he capture the key person every time? Psychopath!"

Everybody praised this battle. They were so excited as if they had won this battle personally.

Cecilia made a forced smile. She understood that only Shi Yan was important in this event and that only he would be able to guide people to the exit alive. No matter how significant her merit was, no one had ever noticed.

In other words, she couldn't be like Shi Yan and become their "Eye." Thus, she couldn't get such treatment.

Until this moment, Cecilia had woken up. If she got Shi Yan's support in this team, she could do anything she wanted on this team. It wouldn't be hard, though. She pondered and strange light glowing in her eyes. She seemed to have new ideas.

The ground had many holes and the lake was turbid. Mia's team was watching Yue Man carefully.

Yue Man had swallowed a large number of pellets. After a long time to digest them, his breathing had been steadied. The open wounds in his body were closed. He was sound asleep now. At this speed, Yue Man's body was secure. If he didn't need to work strenuously for the next several years, he wouldn't bear any adverse consequence.

Mia exhaled in relief. She took out the divine crystals to recover her energy. The other warriors of the Fernandez family also sat by Yue Man to refill energy.

After an unknown time, Mia opened her eyes and gave a snort.

Shadows emerged from a further distance. Haig and Phelps were approaching. They looked at her with an odd countenance. Observing the surroundings, their faces were getting solemn.

Phelps looked at Yue Man and some headstones far from them. He grinned coldly, his face showing a gleam of satisfaction.

Haig snorted.

Phelps shut his smile, his face scared. He didn't keep that mocking countenance and became more cautious.

"What happened?" Haig frowned and looked at Mia, "I felt the energy of a fierce battle here. The energy surged terribly. There were just two of them and they could give you a lot of damages like this?"

"They'd arranged everything. They had set up a lot of restrictions and mines here." Mia bit her lower lips and stared at Haig, "Your news wasn't wrong. That brat stayed in the lake with a woman. But you didn't tell us they had installed the restrictions!"

Haig was surprised and said awkwardly, "I don't have much energy to watch them in every second. But there were just two of them. Couldn't you finish them?"

"He cultivates Space power Upanishad!" Mia reminded him in a cold voice. "If he wanted to leave, we wouldn't be able to hold him down. In short, he's adamant to deal with."

Haig frowned and shook his head, "It shouldn't be like that."

Chapter 1133: Predestined Mortal Enemy

"Before you got there, didn't you seal the space first? Mia, you are not acting consistently. You would never be that reckless! I know you well."

Haig looked at her and Yue Man who was as pale as a sheet of white paper, "What happened after all?"

"He kept Yue Man hostage." Mia sighed all of a sudden. "He has only Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm, but he could approach Yue Man in just a blink of an eye. He had suppressed Yue Man's God power and captured him. I couldn't accept that fact, either."

Hearing the word "hostage," Phelps grimaced. He snorted and then said, "That man is wicked. He seems to be able to summon the earth and heaven energy in this area. It's hard to prevent it though. I was beaten because of this."

"He could urge earth and heaven energy in this place?!?"

Haig's voice went sharper. Instantly, his face became odd and dark like an icy sword stabbing Phelps. "Tell me in detail."

Phelps and Mia were frightened.

"I told you to clarify!" Haig had a gleam of brutality in between his two brows. His voice was so chilled that it could even freeze people's bones.

"He can use the earth and heaven energy here. I'm sure about that!" Phelps hurried to speak. "I was pressed by the earth and heaven energy and I almost suffocated. Watt was attacked the same way. It's true!"

Phelps blabbered. He was filled with suspicion since he didn't know why Haig suddenly cared about this. However, he didn't dare to go against Haig.

Haig was the future heir of the Bradley family. He was appointed.

Many Elders of the God Clan had approved him. They all agreed and treated him as the future leader of the God Clan. Whether it was his state or position, he was much stronger than Phelps. Thus, Phelps knew what to do.

"Our Young Master told the truth. That man can summon earth and heaven energy. When I came to rescue my Young Master, I was bounced back by the earth and heaven energy. I'm sure it's completely true," Watt also said.

Haig fell in silence.

Payton stood by him, looking absorbed in his thoughts. He seemed to guess something. His face changed as he was startled. He whispered, "Young Master, is it possible?"

Mia and Phelps were puzzled. They looked at Haig and guessed inwardly the reason why he became that odd. They knew that Haig rarely became anxious or restless. He was always placid and harsh. He would never be frightened by something trivial.

They contemplated and recognized that Haig had figured something out. They became even more curious.

"I'm not sure, but it's possible." Haig looked at the terrible ground and frowned. He continued coldly, "If they could set up the ambush that was activated when you guys arrived, it wouldn't be just a coincidence..."

Mia looked at him in surprise, "What do you mean?"

"Does he use the flaming power?" Haig asked instead of giving an answer.

"Yes!"

A member of the Fernandez family screamed immediately. "When he attacked Yue Man, I saw clearly that he used a fire sea and covered Yue Man directly.

Haig discolored slightly. He was more certain with what he had

in his mind. He nodded and said, "I have an assumption..."

Phelps, Mia, Watt, and the others focused on Haig, waiting to hear his assumption. They were all stern as they knew what Haig was about to tell them that was really critical.

"He's like me. His Soul Consciousness isn't bound in this place. He can see the tiny commotion in the swamp." Haig looked at Mia and took a deep breath. He said, "He must have known your direction and route. He had predicted and installed the restriction to give you a terrible ambush."

Phelps, Mia, and the others changed their visages dramatically. They couldn't believe what Haig had told them and just watched him in astonishment.

They knew what it meant...

Haig was the heir of the Bradley family and he had the Origin of the Ancient God Star, the ancestral planet of the God Clan. With the favor from God, he decided to use "Desolate" as the bait to eliminate the talented seeds of the other star areas. He wanted to catch all of them by throwing one net.

The reasons why Haig was so confident were because of the intimidation of the God Clan and his advantages in the ancient continent.

Only the warriors with the Origin of the ancient continent wouldn't be bound on "Desolate."

They could precisely locate the enemies and gather the thick earth and heaven energy. This kind of warrior in the ancient continent was the existence that went against natural orders.

Haig thought that the Heaven had favored only him. Mia and Phelps thought the same. Now, they knew that it wasn't like that. They couldn't help but feel heavy-hearted.

"Haig, are you sure? If that man has such superpowers like you, will your plan succeed in the end?" asked Phelps worriedly.

Haig's face was dark and cold. He said, "Well, let check it out."

Then, he sat down cross-legged and touched his glabella. A shining silver flame flew out of his pupils, spinning, which was pretty similar to Shi Yan's co-soul!

Haig urged his power Upanishad right in front of everybody. He released his Soul Consciousness, extending rapidly...

Life energy fluctuations in the areas where his Soul Consciousness passed would be reflected in his mind. He seemed to have thousands of eyes that helped him observe the swamp. It searched every tiny corner and didn't miss a life.

Phelps, Mia, Watt, Payton, and the members of the God Clan all wore heavy countenances while looking at Haig and waiting quietly.

After a while, Haig's eyes brightened!

In a very far distance, Shi Yan was sitting cross-legged on a rock, his face ferocious while murderous aura soared up into the sky. His eyes were filled with brutal, wild, bloodthirsty, and sinister intents. He was like a roaring beast showing its powers and domineering aura.

Flows of negative emotions flooded his heart, puzzling his consciousness. His soul gradually entered a manic state that left him with only negative, and murderous thoughts.

However, the co-soul floating behind his back was like a flame and it wasn't affected by his host soul.

An icy aura emitted from the Poison-dipped Cold Bead in his Ethereal Extent. It felt like a bucket of cold water was poured on the head on a scorching summer day. Shi Yan's hot-tempered state was cooled down quickly.

Shi Yan suddenly felt like someone was peeping on him. He

opened his eyes, his indifferent look gazing on the horizon. A wisp of Soul Consciousness shot out.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

Lightning flowers exploded above his head up in the sky as if two lightning bolts had collided and released fierce Soul Consciousness fluctuations.

His body shook for a while. A drilling pain shot in his brain when his wisp of Soul Consciousness with Space power was smashed. It also hurt his soul.

Lifting his head looking at the nothingness, Shi Yan's face became so stern. Flows of Soul Consciousness were condensed as sharp as needles. They directly stabbed the sky above his head.

Boom! Boom!

Beams of lightning appeared inside the clouds. Lightning strikes flashed and crushed all gray clouds.

Shi Yan had released his flows of Soul Consciousness to strike the same sharps needles or spears hiding in the clouds. They both shattered at that moment. His soul altar shivered for a while when his Sea of Consciousness was stirred up and his Ethereal Extent felt like it got stabbed. All gave him head-splitting pain.

It was a battle between souls!

"I am Haig!" A cold wisp of Soul Consciousness appeared above his head. "I know where you are. I'll find you and kill you. Wait for me. Muahahaha!"

Shi Yan's face became dark, malicious, and he grimaced. He lifted his head to look at the sky, but he still sat quietly.

Shi Yan was startled. A smile of awe appeared on his face. After a while, beams of pure energy circulating in his acupuncture points fiercely overflowed his Essence Qi Ancient Tree. His power was boosted immediately.

The strange aura that had appeared above his head vanished.

On the other side, Haig's body had shaken several times. He suddenly gave a sinister smile.

Phelps, Mia, and Payton were waiting for his response. They all felt a little anxious.

"We're correct. He's like me. We both have the Origin of the ancient continent." Haig sounded excited. "Marvelous! Excellent! He's like me. He isn't shackled by Desolate's restriction. He can also mobilize earth and heaven energy. He has fused with the Origin. Interesting! Too good for me!"

His face resumed a stern appearance as he talked in a low-pitched voice. "I will kill him and take his Origin. I will use him to complete me. He will be my biggest harvest on this trip. Haha, no one can rival me. This is my destiny!"

Phelps, Mia, and the others were shocked. They gasped. "There are a lot of strange things in this vast universe, indeed. Someone like you has the Origin of the ancient continent. And you are about to meet him in Desolate. Perhaps it's predestined in the unseen world that you guys need to fight to see who will win," said Mia deliberately.

"Do you think he can beat me?" grinned Haig.

Mia and Phelps contemplated. They nodded in agreement and then spoke in unison, "Indeed, he can't resist you."

Watt and Payton also smiled. In their eyes, Shi Yan, the warrior Haig had laid his eyes on, was already dead.

"I want this person's life!" Haig pondered for a while and then spoke to Mia and Phelps. "If you guys are well rested, we should depart now. I can't wait longer. From now on, we can't relax because Shi Yan also knows our whereabouts."

"We know what to do," Phelps nodded.

"Then, we should move now," Haig decided.

The warriors of the three great families including the Bradleys, the Fernandez, and the Ascots became busy after receiving his orders. They headed to the area he had pointed out.

Chapter 1134: Great Responsibility

Shi Yan stood up. Lifting his head to look at the empty horizon, he closed his eyes to sense for a while. Taking a deep breath, he dashed towards the area where Mo Fou, Shang Ying Yue, and the others were gathering.

The Essence Qi of Bai Hao's group and Ando was filtered and refined. All were poured into his Essence Qi Ancient Tree. After this kind of energy was treated, it could bring him massive benefits. However, it wasn't enough to fill his Essence Qi Ancient Tree to the upper limit of Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

After entering the new realm, he had recognized that the realm required doubled the amount of energy and understanding of the realm.

There wasn't even one-tenth of the Essence Qi of Bai Hao's team and Ando after being filtered and refined. The production loss of this refining process was extremely astonishing. The amount given couldn't make him reach the peak of his Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm yet.

While dashing fast, Shi Yan's face was heavy as he furrowed his brows.

The God man called Haig made him feel threatened. Just like him, this man wasn't bound on this ancient continent. He could also use the immense energy of earth and heaven on this planet. And his realm was one level higher than Shi Yan's. He was at the peak of Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

He tried to sense for a while and found that the intensity of Haig's body energy had surpassed the warrior at the ordinary First Sky of Incipient God Realm. He seemed to have more secret energy fluctuations!

This man had a profound realm assisted by tremendous energy

accumulation. He could transform to the God Undying Body too. From any aspect, this man wasn't very different from Shi Yan. He made Shi Yan feel insecure and he was his mortal enemy. At the same time, Mia and Phelps had to listen to Haig in this ancient continent, giving him absolute advantages.

Haig's arrogant laughter still lingered in his ears and made Shi Yan grimace.

He could clearly feel that the three forces of Haig, Phelps, and Mia had diverged. Like three currents of a flood, they were heading towards Shi Yan and Mo Fou's team, forming sieges to block them.

It made Shi Yan more restlessly anxious.

Swish!

Gliding like a lightning strike above the swamp, Shi Yan suddenly appeared in front of Mo Fou, Shang Ying Yue, and Cecilia. Mo Fou and the others were running away. Seeing him, they were all happy, smiling and appraising him for the excellent play.

"Awesome! We cost Mia's team a big price this time! We've been fighting them for a long time in the swamp but we have never caused them such a big loss!"

"Is it true that you can capture people that easily? Phelps couldn't dodge you and even Yue Man at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm couldn't. So if you want, you can subdue Mia, right?"

"With you on our side, we can make it to the day when the Center will be unsealed. I'm suddenly confident now."

". . ."

Mo Fou, Wu Feng, Jiao Shan, and the others were so excited as if they had won the battle themselves. Seeing him arrive, they started to clamor.

Even Shang Ying Yue now had a rare weak smile on her face. She was happy, indeed. She thought that it was Shi Yan's merit to kill the Bai family's soldiers. She assumed that Cecilia was just his assistant and that she wasn't really useful.

Their praising stopped shortly after because they all saw his weird face. Since he had arrived, he had put on a dark, frowning face.

"What happened?" Cecilia was calm as she asked, "You don't look cheered up at all. You have the Seven-colored Demonic Flower. You've cultivated too. You've damaged Mia's team badly. What makes you uncomfortable?"

The others were also confused.

"Do you know a guy named Haig?"

He suddenly asked as he thought that Mo Fou, Cecilia, Wu Feng were the outstanding talents of the big star areas so they had to be familiar with those domineering future leaders of the God Clan. They must know this strong expert.

Indeed, when he said that name, everybody quieted down, their faces getting stern.

"Why did you mention him all of a sudden?" asked Mo Fou, his face unnatural.

"I used to tell you guys that the new force entering the swamp has a man like me. He isn't bound by the ancient continent. His Soul Consciousness can sense the little commotions and he can gather earth and heaven energy..." Pausing for a while, he said seriously, "Today, I've confirmed that Haig is that person."

Everybody wore a dark face. Their eyes seemed to be covered by a layer of a dark cloud. Cecilia explained, "I should have guessed that it was him early on. He's the heir of the Bradley family, the biggest family of the god clan. He's the leader appointed by the Elders of the God Clan. He's the brightest star of the new generation..."

As Cecilia was talking, people became heavy-hearted. They felt like they had a heavy rock placing on their chests that suffocated them.

Looking at the fear on Mo Fou's face, the stern visage of Wu Feng, and the restless appearance of the others, Shi Yan changed his face slightly. Without further explanation, he knew how intimidating Haig was.

"Haig isn't like most of the other young members of the God Clan. This man is calm, heartless, and really smart. His fighting experiences are various, though." Cecilia rubbed her temples as if she had a headache, "The Bradley family had exiled him to the most chaotic and dangerous star area where he had to seek for life in perilous situations. He had created miracles and great benefits for the Bradley family. Not only does he have a domineering personal competence, he was also good at commanding legions. He prioritizes benefits over anything else. He doesn't have a clear weakness."

"He doesn't like women too. In his eyes, women are just some sort of tools he can use and advantages he can take for granted," added Shang Ying Yue in a cold voice.

"This man is the toughest warrior of the current generation of the God Clan. Almost all of his opponents were killed," said Wu Feng with a cold face.

While they were giving him information, Shi Yan's face became more grimaced. After they've finished, he took a deep breath and then said, "I'm giving you bad news. He found out that I can use the Soul Consciousness like him. He has challenged me. Right now, he, Phelps, and Mia are diverging in three directions. They are heading towards us."

All of them discolored and their hearts sank into the abyss. They felt begrudging as if they couldn't escape the cage.

"We should run quickly!" Jiao Shan shouted.

Pouting his lips, Shi Yan eyed him with mocking eyes, "Run? Run where? There are four directions: East, West, North, and South. Phelps, Mia, and Haig are heading to us from the East, West, and South. North of us is the barrier that connects to another piece of territory. Tell me where to run."

"Perhaps, we should head to Mia. Mia's team is damaged. Perhaps we can defeat her team?" said Cecilia.

"Haig has prepared her," Shi Yan looked at her and said faintly, "He has strengthened her team with more experts. Now, Mia's team can beat us up easily."

"Phelps's team has never been damaged, so we aren't their opponent. And Haig's team... it's impossible," muttered Mo Fou, his face solemn. "So, we have only one choice, which is heading North. Let's see if we can drill through the barrier to get to the other territory to dodge this sharp spear."

"If the warriors like us are all killed by a troop of the God Clan in that new territory, what should we do?" frowned Wu Feng.

Everybody fell into silence.

As things came to this, they knew the God Clan's conspiracy. What Wu Feng said could be true. In the new territory they wanted to go through, there might be a strong God Clan troop, which had cleared all the warriors there and was waiting by the border. If they got through the barrier, they would be killed shortly after.

"Shi Yan, can you sense the commotions in that territory?" asked Shang Ying Yue all of a sudden.

"I can't. It has the barrier. I have to get inside to sense the commotion of living beings there," Shi Yan shook his head.

"What should we do?"

"What to do now?"

"Which way to choose?"

"..."

Everybody was restlessly anxious because they knew that Mia, Phelps, and Haig were getting closer every minute they'd lingered here. This kind of pressure made them restless. They were on the edge of collapsing.

Shi Yan looked at them and felt anxious. He knew that he must come up with a direction. Whether it was correct or not, at least they would have a target that wouldn't make them wait for death passively.

"Head North. We're going to that barrier. We have to make this bet." Shi Yan ordered resolutely. "Staying in this swamp, one of the other three teams will get us and slowly kill us. As Haig is with them, we can't hide. We don't have any hope to live. We must get there."

Everybody else was flustered at the moment. They thought that only Shi Yan could give them guidance. Thus, no one opposed his idea. They nodded in agreement.

Shi Yan didn't talk more. He led the group and moved, "Follow me. Use your God power. We must rush!"

Just like sharp swords, they followed Shi Yan and flew North of the swamp.

When they departed, Haig was talking to Phelps and Mia to show them the way. He had them updated with their location every minute.

"Young master, they're heading to the thick woods. If nothing's unexpected, it's where Yu Jia is in charge," reminded Payton.

"Although Yu Jia is also arrogant and self-righteous, he has the competence. I guess he has finished clearing his area." Haig pondered and frowned, "But we still need to clarify a little bit. I will ask him to get to the barrier and wait for the preys. We're going to give them a beating."

"Excellent," said Payton in excitement.

Haig took out the Sound Stone, checking and then talking directly, "Yu Jia, it's me, Haig. I'm in the swamp territory with Phelps and Mia. Some fish from our area are heading to you. Come to the border and wait for them. Don't let them escape..."

Haig advised and then he became bewildered. Looking at the Sound Stone, his face became awkward.

The Sound Stone glowed, which meant that Haig had connected with Yu Jia, but Yu Jia didn't answer him. Haig felt like something was wrong here, but he didn't know what had happened.

After a while, a calm female voice arose from the Sound Stone, "The man you want to contact is dead. The people he brought here are also dead." Then, the Sound Stone dimmed out. The other had cut off the connection.

Haig and Payton discolored in fright.

Chapter 1135: Cross the Border

Haig and Payton halted.

The warriors of the Bradley family were bewildered. They also stopped and scattered around the two, looking at them cluelessly.

Haig's fingers fiddled with the Sound Stone. He wanted to talk more, but the Sound Slow didn't glow anymore. He couldn't form the connection with the other side.

Payton grimaced. He knitted his brows and showed his agitation.

Yu Jia came from the Baramos family. He was at Peak of Ethereal God Realm, his competence too domineering. He had brought a retinue of many experts. His team's general competence was stronger than Mia's or Phelps's. However, Yu Jia couldn't lead his dominant team to clear his territory. Quite the contrary, his team was all killed...

Payton found it hard to accept.

Hesitating, he looked at Haig and muttered, "Yu Jia was from the Baramos family. If they were all killed, it would be hard for us to explain. If we can't finish their enemies, we can't give the Baramos family a proper explanation."

Haig squinted. Pondering for a while, he nodded, "I'll give them a proper explanation."

He hurried to contact Mia and Phelps, asking them to continue chasing after Shi Yan's team. And he carefully asked them to not cross the border to the new territory. They had to wait until he came.

Mia and Phelps were confused, but they just agreed without asking for more details.

At the end of the swamp was an area where toxic green air

hovered as thick as water. The poisonous air gathered in masses, creating natural tents that kept people out.

Mo Fou, Cecilia, and Wu Feng stood in front of the area of toxic green air, wincing instinctively. They looked at Sha Zhao.

Sha Zhao didn't wait for them to give him a request. He released a lot of demonic insects and poisonous animals. Those tiny creatures buzzed, rattling and flying into the center of the toxic area.

After a while, Sha Zhao looked so worried, frowning tightly. "The poison of this toxic air is really terrible. It can intrude the Sea of Consciousness and the soul. It will paralyze the soul altar and affect even the Ethereal Extent. Behind the layer of toxic air is a barrier leading to another piece of territory. It's a natural barrier that is hard to break."

Pausing, Sha Zhao said bitterly, "None of the insects I've released could cross it."

"Can we break that toxic air curtain?" Wu Feng was agitatedly waving his fan. He walked to the adjacent area with the toxic air, frowning and assessing. He released a flow of Soul Consciousness to sense.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

A faint smoke arose from the green toxic air area. Right after that, Wu Feng paled and shouted, "This f*cking toy can affect the Soul Consciousness too!"

"I said it could intrude the Sea of Consciousness. Of course, it can affect the Soul Consciousness. I suggest not using the Soul Consciousness to sense anything," said Sha Zhao seriously.

"Do you have any idea?" asked Cecilia impatiently.

"I know how to use the toxins, but I'm not good at dissolving them. I can only treat the toxins of my Gu insects. I'm afraid I can't do anything to other poisonous substances," Sha Zhao shook his

head.

Hearing him, everybody was baffled. Now they all looked at him in disdain.

"I'm from the Gu God Sect. Our Sect cultivates Gu insects and we harvest the toxins from them. We don't refine poisons or potions. You must know that. We aren't poison alchemists!" Under people's gazes, Sha Zhao winced and said indignantly.

"What should we do now?" Mo Fou stood up, his line of sight raking through the Wu brothers, the Jia brothers, and Shang Ying Yue. "If you have any solution, please do tell. We don't have much time."

Everybody was frowning. They were trying to figure out how to solve this problem. However, due to the trivial output, they could contribute, no one had stood out to say anything.

People then lay their hope on Sha Zhao once again. Cecilia said, "Only you have some knowledge of toxins and poisons here. If you can't do anything, I think we will have a lot of trouble."

Everybody agreed, their faces dark.

"Not only me though," under everyone's gazes, Sha Zhao glanced at Shi Yan and said hesitantly, "We don't have the ability to solve the toxic air here. Unless you help us..."

Everybody was astounded.

He... knows how to deal with poisons too?

"I remembered the first time I've fought with you. I used the secret technique of the Gu God Sect to deal with you and attempted to intrude your soul altar. I lost that battle." Sha Zhao took a deep breath and said, "I know you can solve this. If you don't help us, we will be all in trouble."

Hearing him, Shang Ying Yue also remembered the battle taken place five years ago. Her brows twitched, her bright eyes looking at

Shi Yan with hope.

Sha Zhao and Shang Ying Yue's expression had affected the others. They all eyed Shi Yan and found that he didn't pay attention to their discussion. He looked anxious, indeed.

Everybody exchanged looks. They assumed that he was using his Soul Consciousness to check the situation. Although they were all impatient, no one dared to bother him.

"No one knows what's waiting for us on the other side of the barrier. Do you really want to go here?"

Shi Yan wore a strange face, frowning after he had pulled himself together.

Through the barrier, he could vaguely feel the powerful life energy fluctuations over there. However, since they weren't in the same territory, he couldn't sense clearly. He couldn't differentiate whether it was the God Clan or warriors from the other star areas. He felt anxious because of the energy he had sensed, which was so strong that it had made his soul shiver in fright...

"Do we have any better choice?" Cecilia forced a smile.

Everybody shook their heads.

"Alright, I'm going to open the barrier. You guys have to get through it quickly." Shi Yan nodded and while the others hadn't reacted yet, he dashed into the area covered in the toxic green air and disappeared.

Everybody was startled.

"He... Does he know how to solve the toxic air?" Cecilia looked at Sha Zhao, her bright eyes surprised. "Why does he know a little bit of everything? He can solve the poisonous air curtain that you can't do anything about? What do you think?"

"Seems... that he did it successfully," Mo Fou cried, his face filled with inexplicable fright.

Cecilia turned her head to watch.

They then saw the toxic green masses like the clouds thinning under some strange power. The green clouds thinned, faded, and drifted away from their area...

Sha Zhao, Shang Ying Yue, and the others gasped in astonishment. They felt like they saw ghosts in daylight!

This speed is too fast, eh?

Swish!

An eye-catching blood-red light appeared like a curtain that was torn by a murderous aura and shooting up into the sky. A fresh air swarmed over and whirled on their faces.

It was the sign of the cracked barrier!

"Get in! Quickly!"

Shi Yan shouted. They didn't dare to linger. They shot over like lightning bolts, swaying through the cut. Their auras disappeared from the swamp shortly.

The green toxic air curtain that had disappeared gathered again from other directions. It became thicker and thicker after seconds. After several minutes, the toxic air hovering above the area reappeared. The cut on the barrier closed as if nothing had happened here.

Four hours later, Mia, Phelps, and Haig gathered in this area. They watched the surroundings with a strange countenance. A strange halo emitted from their eyes.

"Clearing that vast forest was Yu Jia's task." After Haig had arrived, he said simply, but his words were bombs, "Anyway, Yu Jia died."

Mia, Phelps and the members of their families were baffled. They all felt a sudden chill. They had a clear gleam of fear on their eyes

when they looked at the barrier. Some God warriors who stood near the barrier couldn't help but take several steps backward, coming to where their leaders gathered.

It felt like a monster was hiding deep inside the green toxic air curtain that they couldn't see. It made them restlessly anxious.

"When I contacted Yu Jia, a woman told me that. She said that Yu Jia and his family's warriors were all dead." Haig was still calm, looking at Mia and Phelps. "What do you think?"

"Yu Jia's force was really strong. If his warriors and even himself were killed, it means that the enemy is even stronger." Mia gave an explicit answer.

Phelps said with a dark visage, "Seems we need to discuss more."

"We don't know whoever is behind that barrier and how strong they are. We shouldn't act rashly. We should gather all our warriors. We must not make any mistake." Mia pondered and said, "I think we should contact Harson the Madman."

Everybody couldn't help but knit their brows.

"Although Harson has a little mental problem, his competence and his men are solid. Much stronger than Yu Jia's team. If he comes with us, we can be more certain of our triumph." Mia looked at Haig and said earnestly, "I know you and Harson don't get along well. Anyway, you've proposed this operation, if it fails, I think you..."

"No need to say that. You contact Harson. I hope he wouldn't die yet." Haig waved his hand, his countenance really bad.

Mia nodded and took out her Sound Stone.

There were many islets scattered around a vast ocean like stars decorating the sea. This was another territory of the ancient continent, which looked dreamily beautiful.

From a bird's view, people would find a group of God warriors gathering on a small island not far from Mia and Phelps. Lying disorderly on the rocky island were bodies of warriors from different races, males, and females from different star areas.

A group of God warriors had blood stains all over their bodies. They looked manic as if they were extreme disciples of some wicked cult. They were drinking blood from the bowl they held in their hands.

A fire was burning fiercely in between them with a delicate grill where a jade-white female arm was being roasted. Those mad men were drinking fresh blood and roasting the woman's arm to amuse themselves.

The young man leading this group was bony. He was swinging his hands while moving delightedly in bizarre dance moves. He looked freaking crazy with blood dripping from his mouth. A lozenge Sound Stone was glowing in his hand, but he didn't notice as he was busy in a crazy dance.

"We've just finished cleaning this place. We're throwing a party here. I'm not interested in Haig's stuff. Tell him to mind his own business. I'm not going there."

The gaunt young man that looked like a starving ghost threw the Sound Stone to his side, continuing his party with his retinue, the ones who had the same freaky appearance. He didn't even bat an eye.

Chapter 1136: The Four Great Creatures

It was an endless forest with big, lush trees. Each of them was hundreds of meters high. The trees looked no different from the mountains.

The fresh auras slapped their faces, making Shi Yan's team astounded after they went through the barrier. Gradually, they pulled themselves together to observe the surroundings.

"Oh!"

Cecilia couldn't help but scream, her beautiful face anxious and gingerly. Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, and the Wu brothers also changed their visages and frowned. They solemnly looked at the warriors standing in front of them.

Under the shade of a towering tree, many warriors from different races were standing, their auras brutal and abundant. They were gazing at the newcomers, their faces strange.

Evidently, they weren't members of the God Clan.

The leader of this group was a woman who looked tall and thin. She had a faint green hair reaching her waist. Outlining her body was a long green dress that touched the ground. Her face was so exquisite with a perfect ratio for her facial features. She had a green crystal imperial crown on her head. She was noble and arrogant. She was looking at the newcomers with her cold, crystal clear emerald eyes.

Standing on her sides were four male warriors who apparently were from the same tribe. They wore shining armor, their faces stern and cold, surrounding her.

Many warriors from different star areas and races scattered around this woman. They protected her as if she was the moon and they were stars. They had considered her life their top priority to protect.

A group of green flames was flickering above her head, releasing the clear soul energy fluctuation.

Shi Yan glanced at the woman, his pupils shrinking. He was astonished.

Lucky for him, before he had gone through the barrier, he had retrieved his co-soul into his soul altar. Otherwise, they would know his secret immediately when she saw him...

Because that woman was like him. They were the sort of special existences that had fused with the Origin. On this ancient continent, they weren't be bound. The green flame floating above her head was another soul of hers that could sense the different commotions of the ancient continent.

Shi Yan was frightened.

First, it was Haig and now, it was this woman. This ancient continent was really marvelous as it had attracted the most outstanding warriors from the universe, gathering in one place.

Looking at the unknown woman, thoughts crossed his head rapidly. The more he thought, the more frightened he became...

If she was still alive, it spoke up to the fact that the God Clan's troop in this territory was cleaned up!

This finding astounded Shi Yan. He became more cautious looking at the woman. He was considering his words and how to talk to them.

Mo Fou, Cecilia, Wu Feng, Sha Zhao, and the others were also bewildered. They all looked strange. From what they heard from Shi Yan, they knew the woman in green in front of them was like Haig. She was a peculiar existence that the ancient continent didn't shackle. They became excited, their faces bright.

"You guys have killed all the God Clan's warriors in this territory?" asked Mo Fou excitedly.

Including that woman, this group had twenty-six warriors from different races. Their realms and powers were tremendous. Compared to them, their force had only twelve warriors including Shi Yan. Apparently, their general competence was behind the others.

Moreover, Mo Fou could see that this force of twenty-six warriors was enough to deal with Haig's, Mia's, or Phelps's troop. As Mo Fou's team was in the dead end, they were forced to get through the barrier to reach this territory. And now, seeing twenty-six warriors whose situation was almost similar to theirs, he had a joy of finding the exit in the deathtrap.

Unfortunately, what the woman was about to tell them had smashed his excitement...

"You guys have two options," said the chilly, arrogant woman. From her bearings, it seemed like everybody had to listen to her orders and should bow on her feet. This was some kind of the innate dominant personality she was given. "Listening to my order, working for me, or... returning to your territory. I've exerted my efforts to clear this place. People who don't obey aren't allowed to stay."

Mo Fou's team knitted their brows.

"I think you know about the God Clan's clearance operation in the ancient continent. Just like you guys, we're also victims. Haig, Mia, and Phelps have chased after us. Begrudgingly, we had to cross the barrier to this area. We hoped that we could unite and resist the God Clan."

Cecilia gave an unnatural smile and explained, "If we return, we can't escape from Haig's team one more time. We could be..."

"It has nothing to do with us," the woman intervened her and said faintly, "I will repeat one more time. Listen to my order or leave this place. Otherwise, we will kill you all."

As soon as she said that, the sharp aura was shot out by the other twenty-five warriors of her team. They were like needles stabbing Mo Fou, Cecilia, and the others, making them agitated.

"Why?" Wu Feng's face was dark and gloomy.

"You aren't qualified to bargain with me." The woman turned impatiently, walking deep into the dense woods and leaving them cold words. "I'm giving you five minutes to consider."

The four warriors from her clan followed her, walking into the forest to protect her. The other warriors lay down or leaned against the trees. They looked cold and harsh when looking at the others.

"Polk! You are Polk, right?" Sha Zhao suddenly screamed as he spotted someone.

It was a hunky Dark Spirit man. He looked a little surprised, gazing at Sha Zhao for seconds before he could react. "You are Sha Zhao of the Gu God Sect?"

"It's me." Sha Zhao forced a smile and probed, "Could you tell me what's going on here?"

The Dark Spirit man he called Polk looked at the members of his team. Seeing that they were indifferent, he hesitated for a while and then said, "Audrey is the princess of the Imperial Dark Tribe. Without her command, we would have all been killed by Yu Jia. We've cleaned all the warriors of the God Clan in this territory. All is thanks to Audrey's extraordinary abilities. Since we are friends, I advise you to listen to Audrey. That way, you can save your life."

Polk stopped after he said that and shrugged.

Cecilia, Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and the others listened carefully. When they knew that Audrey was the Princess of the Imperial Dark Tribe, they looked genuinely shocked.

Sha Zhao changed his visage and contemplated. Next, he turned to Shi Yan and then Cecilia, Mo Fou, asking silently.

Cecilia gestured and they retreated, remaining a distance so that the others couldn't see them with naked eyes. They set up a soundproof barrier before starting their discussion.

"The woman called Audrey is the Princess of the Imperial Dark Tribe. What is that clan?"

"You... don't know the Imperial Dark Tribe?" Cecilia was surprised.

Shi Yan shook his head.

"The Imperial Dark Tribe is the royal family of the Dark Clan. They are in Dark Star Area, a mysterious galaxy in the universe. The God-blessed Mainland, one of the five ancient continents in Dark Star Area, is the ancestral star of the Imperial Dark Tribe. It is the cradle of the Dark Clan. The Imperial Dark Tribe rarely forms a relationship with the other star areas. This tribe is superb. No one can compete with them in understanding the soul altar. I heard that they have a special method to cultivate their soul altar, which is indeed mysterious and unpredictable. Different from the Dark Clan with the lanky physique, the Imperial Dark Tribe has tough bodies. Dark Star Area is also the holy land of the Dark Clan in this universe. The Imperial Dark Tribe is also one of the Four Great Creatures," explained Cecilia.

"So the Imperial Dark Tribe is mighty? To what level?" Shi Yan was more surprised.

"Okay, it's like this. At the dawn of this universe, the Imperial Dark Tribe was one of the most combative races in the world. Just like how the God Clan conquered the big star areas, their force was really enormous. However, after a bloody battle where they were defeated, they had lost a large number of clansmen. It has taken them more than dozens of thousands of years. Yet they haven't recovered yet. Thus, they've stayed within Dark Star Area until now. They haven't risen any storm ever since," continued Cecilia.

"You said the Imperial Dark Tribe is one of the Four Great

Creatures. What are those?" Shi Yan didn't have a clue.

Honestly, he didn't have much knowledge of the mysteries of the universe. Raging Flame Star Area wasn't a high-level star area. And at the same time, it was closed and conservative, which led to the limited information Shi Yan had of many great events taken place in the vast universe.

Cecilia, Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and the others were different. Their star areas often exchanged things with the others. They knew many strange and exotic things in this vast sea of stars that Shi Yan didn't know. Shi Yan really appreciated their information.

"He's from Agate Star Area. It's my father's homeland. But this star area has closed all the space canals. Thus, they can't contact the outer world. They just live in their small star area." Shang Ying Yue cleared voice arose. She looked at the others and said, "Let me explain the story of the Four Great Creatures. I think I may know more information."

Everybody knew Shang Ying Yue's father was Shang Chen, the Fate Traveler who had visited many star areas. Thus, they didn't oppose her idea and nodded in agreement.

"Please tell me," Shi Yan looked earnest, focusing on her to listen for more helpful information.

"You know we have five ancient continents, right?" asked Shang Ying Yue.

Shi Yan nodded, "The Ancient Demon, the Ancient God, Desolate, Grace Mainland, and what's the other?"

"It's the God-blessed Mainland." Shang Ying Yue's eyes were clear but cold. She continued naturally, "The five ancient continents were born at the dawn of the universe. Besides Desolate where we are now, the other four ancient continents have given birth to magical and unique creatures. Ancient Demon Continent gave birth to the Immortal Demon Clan. Ancient God Continent bore

the God Clan. God-blessed Mainland delivered the Imperial Dark Tribe. And Grace Mainland, the ancient continent that had disappeared for years, had the Immemorial Monster Clan and also the Heavenly Monster Tribe."

Shang Ying Yue paused for a while and then continued, "God Clan, Immortal Demon Clan, the Imperial Dark Tribe, and the Heavenly Monster Tribe are the Four Great Creatures that came from the four ancient continents."

Chapter 1137: Heavenly Monster Tribe and Imperial Dark Tribe

"Wait a minute, what's that Heavenly Monster Tribe you've mentioned?" Shi Yan intervened anxiously.

Grace Mainland was one of the ancient continents. Shi Yan understood that, but he didn't know the Heavenly Monster Tribe Shang Ying Yue had mentioned that was born on Grace Mainland.

He suddenly recalled the words of "Heavenly Monster"...

The Vault of Heaven Sea Area in the Endless Sea had a mountain range called the Heavenly Monster Mountain Range. Ghost Hunter, Holy Spirit God, Devouring Gold Silkworm, and the King of Demonic Insects had received an inheritance in the Heavenly Monster Mountain Range and found the space passage that led to Agate Star Area. Would it relate to something?

He was puzzled.

"I heard that the Immemorial Monster Tribe in Grace Mainland is called the immemorial creatures. Legends say that the four Holy Beasts including the Vermilion Bird, the White Tiger, the Black Tortoise, and the Azure Dragon were great ancestors of the Heavenly Monster Tribe. Cecilia has mentioned the decline of the Imperial Dark Tribe tens of thousands of years ago in a bloody battle that had shut them for years. The tribe that had fought them was the Heavenly Monster Tribe. The consequences of that battle were that the Imperial Dark Tribe hasn't gotten up yet and the Heavenly Monster Tribe has gone secluding. It seems that their ancestral star, Grace Mainland had vanished altogether. No one could find it," said Shang Ying Yue.

Shi Yan was shaken hard.

Grace Mainland used to have three different eras, which were the Immemorial Epoch, the Antiquity Era, and the Ancient Time.

Legends said that immemorial creatures were born in Immemorial Epoch. They were the kind of living beings with massive bodies that could connect to earth and heaven energy directly, and their Life Seal carried the essence of power Upanishad.

Because of their existence, Grace Mainland, an ancient continent, couldn't hold it anymore. Its earth and heaven energy was drained fast, which lead to an exhaustion of energy.

During the Immemorial Epoch, they had left the Grace Mainland to outer space, moving in different star areas. According to Shang Ying Yue, they were called the Heavenly Monster Tribe, the ancestors of Monster Clan.

The current Monster Clan was their descendant after they had scattered in different star areas. They could only call themselves Monster Clan instead of Heavenly Monster Tribe...

If the Heavenly Monster Mountain Range was the cradle of the Heavenly Monster Tribe and if the four Holy Beasts were the precursors of the Heavenly Monster Tribe, after Ghost Hunter got the inheritance from the Heavenly Monster Mountain Range and Zuo Shi got the inheritance from the Black Tortoise, would they become members of the Heavenly Monster Tribe?

"God Clan, Immortal Demon Clan, Imperial Dark Tribe, and Heavenly Monster Tribe are the Four Great Creatures. Throughout billions of years in this vast universe, these four races were always the key members of the universe. In some era, the Immortal Demon Clan could rule the whole world. And in the next era, the Imperial Dark Tribe would be the main characters, or perhaps it would be the Heavenly Monster Tribe. Most of the time, they have fought against each other. These four races were born gifted. Their existences were the nightmares to the other races. The other clans or tribes would always be their backdrop. When these four races were strong, the others could only be their feudal vassals or be killed. They had never had the slightest change to top these four races..."

Shang Ying Yue was speaking while Cecilia, Mo Fou, Wu Bai, Wu Feng, Jiao Shan, and Sha Zhao were giving compliments as if they hated that they weren't from these four great clans.

"In our era, the Immortal Demon Clan and the Heavenly Monster Tribe are secluding somewhere. They rarely show up. The Imperial Dark Tribe guards their Dark Star Area. They don't want to contact people from the outside. However, no other clan or force dared to provoke them. The God Clan is now the tyrannical overlord of this era. However, no matter how arrogant they are, they don't dare to operate around Dark Star Area." Shang Ying Yue looked at Shi Yan, her face solemn. "If Audrey's the Princess of the Imperial Dark Tribe, and she has the Origin of the God-bless Continent, she will have the competence to battle Haig."

Shi Yan stayed quiet while the others nodded.

"No wonder why she's so arrogant. Turns out that she's the Princess of Imperial Dark Tribe. No wonder!" sighed Mo Fou.

"The members of the Four Great Creatures have never put any other creature in their concern. They only know each other as they considered the others as their rivals. They were born with a sense of superiority. I can understand Audrey, though," added Cecilia.

Shi Yan was surprised.

After those people knew the Princess title of Audrey of the Imperial Dark Tribe, the discontent they had for her was washed away. They thought that Audrey's arrogance was something natural. No one felt offended.

It seemed that somehow deep in their minds, they had acknowledged the high position of the Four Great Creatures. They thought that Audrey should behave like that as it suited her noble echelon.

"Currently, the Immortal Demon Clan and the Heavenly Monster Tribe have been secluding. We can guess that they are resting to

recover and that's why they don't mind the current picture of the universe. If there's any clan who isn't afraid of the God Clan, it will be the Imperial Dark Tribe alone." Cecilia paused for a while before continuing all of a sudden. "Let's talk about the main business. What do you think?"

"Listen to her. If she's the Princess of the Imperial Dark Tribe, I don't want to go against her," Mo Fou expressed himself.

"Yeah, if we stay with her team, we can fight Haig," Wu Feng also nodded.

The other people voiced their opinions. After they knew that Audrey was the Princess of the Imperial Dark Tribe, they quickly unified. They even looked excited as if they wanted to fight against Haig, Mia, Phelps once under Audrey's command.

And Shi Yan. . .

He was surprised for a while, but he didn't know whether to cry or smile. Begrudgingly, Shi Yan nodded and agreed with people's decision.

Should he tell them that he was a pureblood of the Immortal Demon Clan?

It could work because it had rooted in their heads that only the members of the Immortal Demon Clan, Heavenly Monster Tribe, and the Imperial Dark Tribe could resist Haig's team. However, Audrey's team was stronger. He couldn't be their leader, anyway.

Thus, it was the same whether he told them or not. It was better to shade his corona and hide his identity and real competence. He should listen to the others for the time being.

"Audrey may not know that I have the ability like hers and that I'm not bound by the ancient continent. Agree with me and say no word about me. So when she has bad intentions towards us and makes us the sacrifice, I can get it and tell you guys. We won't die unknowingly," said Shi Yan.

He had stressed his good intentions, which was to protect everybody but himself. He knew that Cecilia, Wu Feng, and the others cared about them first. They would consider everything related to their welfare their priority.

Indeed, Mo Fou, Cecilia, and Wu Feng didn't need a long time to consider and agree with his suggestion.

Shi Yan didn't need to say more. He knew that the others had made up their minds. They wouldn't disclose his identity. It wasn't that they wanted to give him face. It was because of their safety and their welfare.

"What else do you know of Grace Mainland?" After they had agreed with him, Shi Yan calmed down and asked Shang Ying Yue, "You said that Grace Mainland is one of the ancient continents and that after the war between the Heavenly Monster Tribe and the Imperial Dark Tribe, it has never shown up until now?"

"No," Shang Ying Yue frowned, "They rumored that the Heavenly Monster Tribe had moved Grace Mainland away and pushed it to the edge of the universe. No one has rediscovered this ancient continent yet. Just like Ancient Demon Continent, Grace Mainland is the most mysterious. It's possibly because of their defeat that they didn't want the enemy to hunt them down to the last member. The Immortal Demon Clan was defeated by the God Clan. Their Ancient Demon Continent also disappeared. No one sees them in the sea of the stars. That's how they could be strong once again in the future."

Shi Yan nodded in his head.

He pondered and then figured out that although he had seen the starry sky in Grace Mainland, those stars should be pretty far away from him. And there wasn't any warrior from the other planet who came to tell him whichever star area Grace Mainland belonged.

Grace Mainland was an ancient continent and a star. Logically, it should stay close to many other life stars. However, Shi Yan had

never found any warrior from the other life stars paying a visit.

Today, listening to Shang Ying Yue, he knew that Grace Mainland was placed at the edge of the universe that didn't belong to any star area or had any neighbors. It existed in a secluded area to be exact.

He bought whatever Shang Ying Yue had told him related to Grace Mainland. Finally, he knew that Grace Mainland used to have times of glory. It was one of the five ancient continents of the cosmos and it had given birth to the Heavenly Monster Tribe, one of the Four Great Creatures.

And as for the Heavenly Monster Tribe that used to be domineering, how many members of them had survived? Where were they? Would they return to Grace Mainland one day?

Since Shi Yan had the Origin of Grace Mainland, did it mean that he had a close relationship with the Heavenly Monster Tribe? Were Ghost Hunter and Zuo Shi members of this great race? Could they sense and contact the members of their tribe? If they got stronger, would they have to battle against the Imperial Dark Tribe?

All of a sudden, Shi Yan had so many questions in his mind and his heart was a messy ball of cotton threads. For the time being, he had immersed in the mysteries of the Four Great Creatures and the ancient continents.

Stroking the Blood Vein Ring, he thought that the Ring Spirit could give him some assistance. Unfortunately, the Ring Spirit was still dormant. It didn't give him any response for quite a long time.

"Time's up."

Suddenly, Mo Fou hissed and told them to come back and give Princess Audrey of the Imperial Dark Tribe their answer.

"Yeah, we should get over there. She's the Princess of the Imperial Dark Tribe. Only she can lead us to fight against Haig. We

may get the triumph at the end." Wu Feng nodded, waving his fane and gently moving forward.

Sha Zhao, Jiao Shan, Cecilia, and the others didn't talk more. They left with happy faces as they had finally found a big rock to lean on.

In their minds, Audrey was now indeed much more important than Shi Yan. She was their new backbone.

Chapter 1138: Join Hands

Mo Fou and Wu Feng led them back to the gathering point of the other team.

Princess Audrey of the Imperial Dark Tribe stood under the shade of a big tree, her face cold and arrogant and her posture superior. Waiting for Mo Fou and Cecilia to come, she said impatiently, "Are you done thinking?"

"We've made up our minds. We are willing to be under your command." Wu Feng gently waved his fan and beamed brightly. He represented the group to give the answer.

After he had known that Audrey the Princess of the Imperial Dark Tribe, when Wu Feng eyed the woman, he had a gleam of secret admiration in his eyes. He seemed to like Audrey a lot. This man always wore a dark and stern face. However, his countenance was bright and smiling now.

Wu Feng's expression made Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue disdain him discreetly. The two women had their bright eyes observing Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, Jiao Shan, and the others.

Cecilia's and Shang Ying Yue's bold brows knitted slightly as they found that most of the men on their team didn't look different from Wu Feng. Their looks attached to Audrey with obvious emotions.

Shi Yan was the only exception. When he treated Audrey, he still looked cold and stern as usual. He didn't have any different change on his face.

Cecilia and Shi Yan nodded secretly as they appreciated Shi Yan more. They knew that it wasn't just his luck that he could gain the upper hand in dealing with Mia and Phelps. In their eyes, Shi Yan wasn't ordinary.

"Good." Audrey nodded. Her line of sight raked through them as

she said, "Tell me in detail about the force of the God Clan in your territory. I want to know their specific competencies to prepare better." She looked at Wu Feng.

"There are Haig of the Bradley family, Mia of the Fernandez family, and Phelps of the Ascot family. These three leaders have forces staying in the swamp opposite to us. Haig has just arrived. Previously, we were fighting Mia and Phelps..."

Wu Feng frankly told her the situation he knew. Then, he added, "Haig isn't bound by the ancient continent. His Soul Consciousness has a strong ability of detecting. Thus, we couldn't hide there. We have to move here."

"Haig has the Origin of the Ancient God Continent; of course, he wouldn't be shackled in this continent. I know that." Audrey wasn't surprised and she said deliberately, "Anything else I need to pay more attention to?"

Wu Feng frowned and glanced at Shi Yan unconsciously. He then saw Shi Yan's cold face with a warning gleam in his eyes.

His mind flickered before he shook his head. "That's the situation over there."

"You guy stay here. Do not leave the barrier. Let's see if Haig's team dares to come here." Light danced in Audrey's green pupils. She walked towards Mo Fou's side. The other four members of the Imperial Dark Tribe followed her on her sides so she would be at the center.

Audrey stopped in front of the layers of toxic air. Looking at the thick masses of poisonous air hovering and sensing the powerful energy of the barrier between the two territories, she asked, "How did you get here?"

Just like the situation of the swamp area, this side behind the barrier also had layers of toxic air. And at the same time, the barrier between the two areas was really tenacious. Ordinary

people couldn't just simply break it. Especially because of the masses of toxic air, Audrey couldn't help but frown after sensing the toxic air.

With her in-depth knowledge of the soul altar, she knew that this kind of toxic gas could erode the soul and make the Sea of Consciousness change unpredictably.

Audrey's cold and arrogant eyes scanned Mo Fou, Wu Feng, Cecilia, and eventually, Sha Zhao. She asked curiously, "Did you break it?"

Sha Zhao shook his head.

"Then who?" Audrey continued asking. She felt surprised, indeed. In this group, she found that only Sha Zhao from the Gu God Sect perhaps knew how to deal with the toxic gas. She didn't see this special ability in other people.

Pausing for a while, Audrey continued speaking, "We used to visit this area when we were chasing after Yu Jia. As they didn't have anywhere to run, they had tried to cross this barrier to enter the swamp territory. He failed in the end. We've tried to get through it and go to the swamp area. However, we found it too troublesome to dissolve the toxic green air. I want to know who opened the barrier. It's very important!"

Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, Wu Feng looked at Shi Yan at the same time after Audrey had said that.

Audrey was surprised. It was the first time she studied Shi Yan, her voice strange, "Was it you?"

Among Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, Cecilia and the others, Shi Yan at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm wasn't outstanding at all. Moreover, he didn't urge his energy but concealed it. Thus, right from the start, Audrey hadn't concerned him...

When Mo Fou and Sha Zhao looked at him, Audrey also eyed Shi Yan for the first time.

Her fulgent emerald green eyes focused on Shi Yan. A flow of unknown Soul Consciousness like a stream of transparent, cool water came out and ran directly into Shi Yan's head, which made him discolor.

He suddenly recognized that Audrey was using her strong sensing ability to check his soul and body. She wanted to see every tiny thing he was hiding. It was a special power of the ones who had fused with Origin. Just like Shi Yan, he could see the realm of the enemy at first glance.

A thought emerged and Shi Yan's soul altar changed immediately. Starlight dots glowed and twinkled inside his head, covering his soul altar entirely.

When Audrey's Soul Altar came near, it was blinded in that mysterious and bright light curtain. It was like she an intense beam of light struck her eyes. She couldn't see the mysterious features of Shi Yan's soul altar. Reflected in her Soul Consciousness, Shi Yan's soul altar was a piece of a twinkling galaxy that was indeed mysterious and she couldn't see through it.

She wasn't so persistent. After a slight frown, she retrieved her Soul Consciousness and said faintly, "If you don't want me to see your secrets, I'm not going to force you. I just want to ask you one question. If I request you to break the barrier, can you do that?"

Shi Yan turned his head to see the thick toxic gas masses behind them and nodded, "If it's the area behind us, it's not a big problem. However, I need my full God power to do that."

"Excellent," appraised Audrey.

"But if you want me to break the barrier and return to the swamp, it's not a good idea." Shi Yan didn't look at Audrey but the layers of green gas. He said in a low-pitched tone, "The combined force of Haig, Mia, and Phelps is one level stronger than us. If we face them directly, we can't gain the upper hand."

"I know that," Audrey nodded, her voice cold. "We will wait for them to get through the barrier then. We will install the restrictions here. Let's see if they dare to come!"

Everyone's eyes brightened.

It was true. If Haig's team wanted to pursue them, they had to cross the barrier first. If they could set up a lot of restrictions here, they could damage the others severely.

"We can do that," said Cecilia.

"Then we should hurry and prepare."

Audrey delivered a series of orders. The warriors started to take action under her commands. She divided the barrier into many sections, arranging teams and team leaders. Under her management, people began their works orderly.

"You don't need to take action. You just need to maintain your best condition for us."

When Shi Yan was about to join them, Audrey shouted coldly, "I don't care how you break the barrier, but I want you to know that when I need you to break it, you must try your best. Or else, I'll let you die a terrible death that will be much worse than if Haig kills you."

"Oh yeah, I don't have much to do then." Shi Yan didn't mind that. He found a big tree trunk to sit down and closed his eyes to rest.

On the other side of the barrier.

"Harson doesn't want to come," Mia reluctantly put her Sound Stone away. "It seems like we have to do it ourselves."

Phelps squinted, looking at the thick masses of toxic gas with a dark face. After a while, he waved his hand, "I can't break this barrier. Unless you have a safe method to open it, I'm not going to

get there in vain."

He looked at Haig.

All the warriors looked at Haig too. At this moment, they obviously assumed that Haig could always give them a way.

"Harson always acts alone. He doesn't get along well with people. I knew we couldn't count on him." Haig didn't change his visage. He wasn't enraged because Harson didn't want to cooperate. Looking at the thick toxic gas in front of them, he said calmly, "If we can get here from the land of ice, of course, we can get into the forest area too. It's not a problem for me to break the barrier."

"Then, what is making you hesitate?" Phelps didn't understand.

"I'm worried if there is a deathtrap behind the barrier." Frowning, Haig looked stern. "I think something is wrong. The woman who killed Yu Jie sounded too placid when I talked to her. She... is not afraid of us."

"Eh? They are not afraid of us? Is there someone in the sea of stars not afraid of our clan?" Phelps said haughtily.

Many warriors of the God Clan looked arrogant. They acted as if their clan was the sole powerhouses of this vast universe. They didn't want to put anyone in their eyes.

"Right, she isn't afraid of us." Mia suddenly cried. With a strange light in her pupils, she said, "If she's a member of the other three clans, it's true that she won't be wary of us. This trip to the ancient continent is really interesting. I've met one of them..."

Hearing her, Haig, Phelps, and the other members of the God Clan were shocked.

"Who? These clans?" Haig said sternly.

"It's the man cultivates Space power Upanishad. He has the Immortal Demon Blood. He can transform into the Immortal Demon Body." Mia gritted her teeth, "He and I used to fight. To be

honest, I'm not sure if I could defeat him."

Haig, Phelps, and the others changed their visages. Their arrogance faces vanished. They began to consider the matter seriously.

The God Clan was arrogant and stubborn. They wouldn't be afraid of most of the other races. However, when facing the Immortal Demon Clan, the Imperial Dark Tribe, and the Heavenly Monster Tribe, they would never be so haughty.

Chapter 1139: Deadlock

Ancient continent.

The vast swamp and the forest were just a barrier apart. This barrier separated the God Clan's team led by Haig, Mia, and Phelps, and Audrey and Mo Fou's team.

The toxic gas and the barrier fenced them off. No party dared to act rashly. Audrey's warriors were busy installing restrictions and mobilizing their powers. They scattered around the barrier and waited for Haig.

"That brat is a surviving member of the Immortal Demon Clan," said Phelps, his face changed. "No wonder he has such big guts!"

First, Shi Yan had abducted him and used him to exchange for the Seven-colored Demonic Flower. He had attacked his body and his ego. Then, that brat had ambushed Mia and took advantages from her. Phelps couldn't understand that. Now listening to Mia, he finally knew why.

After Haig knew Shi Yan's identity, he became cautious. He didn't hurry to break the barriers but released the Soul Consciousness...

Haig had fused with the Origin of the Ancient God Continent. His Soul Consciousness was really sharp. Although they were in different territories, he could still sense commotions in the forest when he focused. Of course, it wasn't really clear.

His Soul Consciousness swayed and flickered through the layer of toxic gas. Just like a wisp of smoke, it gently and slowly entered the barrier, falling amidst the gas curtain on the other side.

Flows of powerful life energy fluctuations reflected in his brain. Haig's pupils shrank and became more gingerly.

All of a sudden, a wisp of cold Soul Consciousness like a sharp icicle precisely stabbed his Soul Consciousness. He felt tingly and

then numb. His flow of Soul Consciousness perished.

The images of things behind the barrier vanished in his mind. He couldn't sense anything unusual.

Jolting up, Haig woke up immediately. A brutal gleam crossed his eyes. He swung his arm and said, "No one is allowed to attack the barrier!"

His cold shout had frightened most of the members of the God Clan. They looked at him inexplicably as they didn't know what had happened. Only Phelps and Mia who had observed him knew what he had just done. He had used his special ability to probe and go behind that barrier. They both fixed their eyes on him.

"A flow of my Soul Consciousness had crossed the barrier. They have many members in their troop. They are installing many restrictions right behind the barrier in front of us." Haig said with a heaven face. "If we go there, we will bear a significant loss."

Listening to him, Mia and Phelps discolored. They then turned around to advise their troopers and asked them to be more cautious.

"According to you, they aren't weaker than us. At the same time, they are preparing traps awaiting us. If so, will we have a chance?" Phelps shook his head. "If so, why do we have to idly stay here?"

Mia also frowned.

"With our current force, it's not easy to defeat them." Haig pondered for a while and then said, "We should find a way to lure them here."

"Would they dare to come?" Phelps didn't know whether he should laugh or cry.

"The opposite force is really strong. I found a troublesome woman too. Perhaps they dare to mess with us," said Haig.

"Do you have any good solution?" said Mia.

"Let me think," Haig narrowed his eyes. He was still very placid. He wouldn't let his greed of Shi Yan's Origin affect his sound mind. He had stopped his reins right before the cliff to save his force from a big loss.

On the other side.

Under Audrey's orders, Cecilia, Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and the others were in charge of a section. They were using their special powers to strengthen that section while setting up a lot of traps.

Many warriors of Audrey's force were busy on the ground, climbing trees or working in the cracks and canals. They were installing earth-shaking energy traps. As long as Haig's team came, those traps were going to be triggered, which would create an unpredictable, fatal consequence.

Of course, Shi Yan thought that those restrictions and traps couldn't create the desired result because Haig was like him: He could vaguely feel the commotions on this side.

"Almost done," Cecilia stopped working and wiped the beads of sweat on her forehead. She giggled while walking towards Shi Yan. "What do you think?"

On a high tree, Shi Yan looked at the barrier in front of them. He shook his head indifferently, "Nothing impressive."

Mo Fou, Cecilia, Wu Feng, Shang Ying Yue, and the others had used their best treasures when they had set up the deathtrap by the lake. They didn't have a lot of good stuff to use now.

Shi Yan could tell that the section where Mo Fou and Cecilia in charge of couldn't bring a fatal effect to Haig's team as its power was limited.

"I also think it's nothing much." Cecilia smiled like a fresh, blooming flower. She said sweetly, "I think it's not as lethal as what we had done before. The two of us joined hands and killed

eight Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm warriors. The traps we are installing now are worse."

"Well, they can scare the others," Shi Yan glanced at the barrier. "If Haig is as smart like as what people said about him, he won't come. If I were him, I wouldn't take risks to come here."

The twelve of them and Audrey's twenty-six warriors were enough to fight Haig, Mia, and Phelps once. The deathtrap they had set up by the barrier could trouble Haig.

Anyway, if Haig was smart, he wouldn't let his warriors cross the barrier and would tell them to stay put.

"I also think that Haig won't come." Cecilia smiled, jumping up to Shi Yan. She sat down by him on a big tree branch. Her slender thighs dangled mesmerizingly, "You used to say that you would help me when we get into the Center. Will you keep your word?"

"If the condition is enough to move me... I'll keep my word." Shi Yan squinted, his hot eye scanning her voluptuous body.

Cecilia's sexy body stiffened for a moment. Her smile looked reluctant on her charming face. "Do you really want me that way? Aside from that, you don't want to talk about any other condition?"

Shi Yan was surprised. He laughed loudly all of a sudden. "Oh, will you tell me what you can offer me?"

"The most precious treasures of the ancient continent can be found in the Center. However, they will come with deadly dangers. Different from the other four territories, the Center has death traps everywhere. Once you make a wrong step, you will be consigned to eternal damnation." Cecilia had an earnest face, "I know something about the Center of the ancient continent. If you agree to help me when the time comes, I will tell you what I know."

Shi Yan eyed her and said, "We can talk about it later when we get to the Center."

"Alright," Cecilia thought for a while. She knew that it was a little early to talk about that now. She smiled and nodded.

"Why don't you ask Audrey? Honestly, don't you think she can help you better?" asked Shi Yan all of a sudden.

"Audrey is powerful, indeed. The ancient continent doesn't shackle her, so her soul detecting skill is really amazing. And she's the Princess of the Imperial Dark Tribe, one of the Four Great Creatures. Anyway, can't you see that many people are servile to her?" Cecilia chuckled and mocked, "Ever since they've seen that woman, Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, Wu Feng, and Jiao Shan all surrounded Audrey. No one has a say on her commanding style. They've forgotten who has brought them to this place alive."

Indeed, Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Sha Zhao had focused on Audrey after they knew that she wasn't bound by the ancient continent. Gradually, they forgot Shi Yan.

Before they had gotten here, Wu Feng, Mo Fou, and Jiao Shan had always surrounded Shi Yan and centered on on him. They would ask for his opinion whenever they needed to do anything. However... it was different now. They apparently deemed that Audrey would make a better leader.

The reason why they acted that way besides her Origin and her position as the Princess of the Imperial Dark Tribe was because she was really beautiful. It would be hard to not lay their eyes on her.

Audrey's glamor was elegant and celestial. Her beautiful, noble makings were like that of a Goddess who had lived for a long time in a deep place in heaven. She gave people a feeling that they had to lift their heads up to admire her. She would give people pressure that had suffocated talented gentlemen from different star areas.

Thus, if that noble, cold and proud Audrey looked at them more than one time and acknowledged them, she would make them so thrilled.

Shi Yan followed Cecilia's line of sight to look at that cold and proud woman. He also couldn't help but appraise the woman, "Can't blame them though. That woman has a noble echelon. She's really intimidating and she's the boss here. Of course, she's like a magnet to other people. It's reasonable that they are servile to her."

"Then why don't you do that?" Cecilia eyed him.

"Me?" Shi Yan rubbed his nose and laughed, "I also want to do so. But you can see so many people there. I can't sway through that crowd, right? Thus, I should focus on my cultivation, which is better for me."

Cecilia's pretty eyes fixed on him. She knew that he was telling lies, but she didn't try to call him out. She just burst out laughing.

"Hey guys, quiet down. I'm going to talk."

At this moment, Audrey, with the protection of the four experts of the Imperial Dark Tribe, walked to the center of the place. Her cold eyes raked through the crowd and she said, "There are eleven warriors who have just joined us. They're from the swamp area. Through the last five years, they also had some harvest. As the others haven't come yet, we still have a little time. If you don't mind, show the others your items and see if you can exchange for something suitable for your cultivation. You should increase your realm and power fast."

"That's good."

"We agree."

"It sounds good."

Whether they were from Audrey's team or Wu Feng's team, they nodded in agreement.

This group of warriors had spent five years in the forest, so they also had some harvest. Just like them, Sha Zhao, Wu Feng, and the others had struggled for a long time in the swamp to get something

precious. They then showed their items and exchanged for the items that were helpful for their power Upanishad and realm. It was a good method to increase their overall competence, indeed.

Thus, no one opposed this idea.

Chapter 1140: The Scarlet Flaming Heart

Twenty-six experts of Audrey's team and twelve experts of Mo Fou's team including Shi Yan as per Audrey's request gathered and showed each other their harvests.

In the shade of a thick-leaved, towering ancient tree, everyone scattered and grouped, showcasing piles of spirit herbs, grass, strange stones, crystals, treasures, and even wooden logs with thick energy fluctuation.

Audrey, standing in the protection of the four warriors of the Imperial Dark Tribe, was by the ancient tree and watching everybody and the materials they had.

She had focused more on the newcomers of Mo Fou's team. The ones who had followed her earlier would have this trading activity periodically. Thus, she knew what they had. She didn't want to pay more attention to them.

Shi Yan and Cecilia jumped off their tree and walked to Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, and Shi Yan to observe a lot of the sparkling materials.

It was like a small market.

Everybody showed items in a small area. They saw what the others had. If they were interested in something, they would come and negotiate. They could exchange by trading items or divine crystals.

Shi Yan and Cecilia approached them. Looking at many rare and strange materials, Shi Yan was amazed.

They saw different kinds of crystals, chalcedonies, beautiful grass, flowers, knots of bamboo with the pure aura of wood, rare containers, and more. However, not all of these items came from this ancient continent. Also, there were many items that they had collected and accumulated over many years. Now, they could use these to exchange for items suitable to their realm and powers

Upanishads.

Just like the others, as she was the originator, she had a lot of materials showcased in front of her. There were three plants with crown-like flowers. She also had three pieces of jade that emitted lightning energy. Those jades had fine natural textures. Sometimes, they flashed and released the scorching electric beams.

Shang Ying Yue's bright eyes moved around this group. Her eyes then fixed on the three pieces of jades that had lightning energy. Her soft body shivered. She jolted up.

Her jade-like hand swung and retrieved the materials she had displayed. Shang Ying Yue walked to Audrey without a bit of hesitation. Her eyes were fixed on the three jades in front of Audrey.

Apparently, those three jades were helpful for her.

Also, there were items displayed in front of Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, and Wu Feng. It seemed like they harvested something after five years.

In everybody's sight, only Shi Yan didn't have anything showcased. It didn't look right.

"You got nothing after five years?" Cecilia asked him. She sounded very surprised.

Piled up in front of Cecilia were many crystals in different colors. Those crystals had sounds of cracking ice and howling wind with clear energy fluctuations. Besides the crystals, there were many bizarre plants with tentacles that were fluttering with the wind. They looked weird, indeed.

"I used them all," said Shi Yan indifferently.

The time he had spent in the swamp wasn't long. He had absorbed the Hundred Kalpa Soul Thread and the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree already. Today, he had only the Seven-colored Demonic Flower and the Seven-colored Spirit Flower in his ring. The Seven-

colored Spirit Flower was used to fuse his heaven flames and the Seven-colored Demonic Flower was prepared for Yang Tian Emperor.

Thus, it was true that he didn't have anything to exchange. Standing in this area, he looked weird, indeed.

Audrey didn't say that everybody had to exchange stuff. She didn't force them, so she didn't say anything even when Shi Yan didn't present anything to swap.

"Windy Ice Mystic Crystal!"

A surprised scream came from afar. It was from a Ghost Mark man of Audrey's team who had many magical tattoos on his face that looked like malicious, frightening cuts.

He stayed at his spot and put his materials into the ring. He appeared in front of Cecilia shortly after, his eyes scrutinizing the crystals.

Those crystals were white, bright yellow, and purple. They could hear the cracking of ice and the wind howling from those crystals. Some of them even had cracking sounds and were howling at the same time.

Shi Yan and Cecilia stood next to each other. They both saw the man coming, so they quietly checked his aura for a while. They were shocked, indeed.

This man had only Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm, but he had cultivated Ice and Wind power Upanishads at the same time. The energy fluctuating in his body was really strong. He even had wind withering in his bones while his vessels were as cold as ice. This man wasn't weak and his soul altar was pure.

"Another fierce fella," Shi Yan assessed.

"True, they are Windy Ice Mystic Crystals. These mystic crystals have two different powers: Ice and Wind. They strike each other and create a natural magnetic field that keeps the essence of the

two powers Upanishad." Cecilia smiled charmingly. "It was tough to get these Windy Ice Mystic Crystals. I got them from a God warrior, which cost a lot of my efforts. This kind of crystal is very good for warriors who cultivate Ice or Wind power Upanishad. Anyway, it's the best for warriors who cultivate both the powers at the same time. For example... your Excellency."

Her white fingers fiddled the crystals for a while. The sound of ice cracking and the wind howling became louder. Some white crystals looked like they were about to explode.

That man's eyes looked so hot. He took a deep breath and asked frankly as he didn't want to conceal his desires or beat around the bushes. "I'm Riello. I want those Windy Ice Mystic Crystals. What do you need?"

"Splash! Splash!"

Cecilia extended her arms. A narrow water current arose. As she was moving her arms, it changed into different shapes including a bridge, water monsters, and a water curtain. This happened as much as she pleased.

At first glance, Riello knew Cecilia cultivated Water power Upanishad. He knew what she wanted. However, he frowned and said reluctantly, "I don't have any material suitable for you."

"Oh, so I'm sorry," Cecilia parted her lips to smile, her hands covering the Windy Ice Mystic Crystal as she shook her head.

Surprisingly, Riello didn't look disappointed. Riello's eyes fixed on Shi Yan, asking. "Is he your man?"

"My man...?"

Cecilia was surprised. She giggled and covered her mouth attractively, "Oh, sure. What about it?"

Shi Yan was astounded. Frowning, he looked at Riello thinking whether this man had his eyes placed correctly on his face. What kind of look was that?!

However, what Cecilia said and the strange feeling in her eyes had sent a vibe to him...

"I got something suitable for him." Riello's face was serious when a dark green ring on his finger glowed. A scarlet stone emerged, which had a heart shape and special carvings of a sealing charm on the surface to cover the energy fluctuation of the stone. At first glance, it wasn't anything special.

"This trashy stone?" Cecilia shook her head as she laughed, "Nothing special, eh?"

Riello didn't look at her. His eyes were studying Shi Yan as he spoke in a low-pitched tone, "What do you think?"

Shi Yan's eyes had a beam of divine light he couldn't hide. He gazed at the heart-shaped scarlet stone. Taking a deep breath, he said abruptly, "Cecilia, take this stone for me. I agree... with what you requested me."

Cecilia was puzzled.

"Dude, you have keen eyes!" Riello appraised. "Since you've cultivated Star power Upanishad, this Scarlet Flaming Heart suits you the most. The Scarlet Flaming Heart comes from Scarlet Flaming Star. It's a solar star in the sea of stars. This Scarlet Flaming Heart is the core of that solar star."

"Here are your Windy Ice Mystic Crystals." Cecilia was bewildered for a while before she could react. She said determinedly, "I'll give you the Windy Ice Mystic Crystals and then you'll give him the Scarlet Flaming Heart, okay?"

"The Scarlet Flaming Heart is much more valuable than those Windy Ice Mystic Crystals. Besides the crystals, give me those things too." Riello pointed at the peculiar plants.

Cecilia winced in pain as she nodded, "Take them."

Riello smiled and handed Shi Yan the sealed stone. He asked, "Do you need a hand to unseal it?"

"No, thanks. I'll do it myself." Shi Yan received the Scarlet Flaming Heart. He put it in his Fantasy Sky Ring and turned to nod at Cecilia.

"You take them all." Cecilia opened her arms. The Windy Ice Mystic Crystals and the plants flew up, falling to Riello. The man then put them into his ring.

"I wish you guys will be happy together." Riello smiled and stroked his Fantasy Sky Ring contentedly before leaving. Evidently, he was in a good mood.

Shi Yan also touched his Fantasy Sky Ring, his face smiling in satisfaction. He talked to Cecilia who was a little agitated, "I agree with you. When we get to the Center, if you need my help, I won't ignore you."

"Is that Scarlet Flaming Heart good for you?" Cecilia calmed down as she asked for information.

"I've cultivated Star power Upanishad. To me, the sun, moon, and stars are objects I need to study and comprehend. My Ethereal Extents need the nucleus of the solar star, the moon star, and the stars, of course. The nuclei are the things I want the most," explained Shi Yan as he felt so pleased.

This vast universe had many solar stars and moon stars. And among those solar stars, the Scarlet Flaming Star was a famous one.

From Shang Chen's book, Shi Yan knew that the Scarlet Flaming Heart was one of the broken pieces of the Scarlet Flaming Star's nucleus. It was the top treasure for warriors who cultivated the extreme Yang power or Star power. It could improve and increase the God power of those warriors. Also, it could facilitate the warriors cultivating Fire power Upanishad. More importantly, it gave sunlight and warmth to the Ethereal Extent of warriors cultivating Star power Upanishad.

After Shi Yan had comprehended the Essence of Star power Upanishad and the Brilliant Star Fruit Tree, he had reached Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. However, his Ethereal Extent didn't have any significant change.

Ethereal Extent was the key point to break through to the Incipient God Realm. When the Ethereal Extent had been developed to the Incipient Extent, it was a challenge to break through to Incipient God Realm. Shi Yan had studied and vaguely found a new direction. His Ethereal Extent that looked like a vast sea of stars... when it could have the marvelous wonders of the real cosmos, perhaps... he could make it an Incipient Extent then...

The Scarlet Flaming Heart of Scarlet Flaming Star was a precious material that would boost his Ethereal Extent. It would lend a big hand to his progress of creating the Incipient Extent in the future. More importantly, it could give his Star power Upanishad the power of the Sun!

Chapter 1141: Refine the Ethereal Extent

Finally, Cecilia and Shi Yan had an agreement.

Stroking the Fantasy Sky Ring, Shi Yan's face was filled with satisfaction. He suddenly found that he had collected a lot of rare treasures on this ancient continent. Now, he was eager to see what was awaiting him.

Being one of the five ancient continents, Desolate wasn't similar to the other four. It didn't give birth to any creature, but it contained a lot of earth and heaven natural products. It would open every ten thousand years. No one knew if this planet had full consciousness.

Thinking about the possibility that the ground under his feet was a special living being, Shi Yan felt his hair rise on his nape.

It felt like there was a pair of eyes observing everybody every minute. Each warrior placing his feet on this continent couldn't dodge its observation. At the same time, they would never know what the planet had in its mind or what it thought.

No doubt it was really annoying.

"You guys... traded with other people?"

While Shi Yan fell into his thought, Shang Ying Yue came, her face hanging a satisfied smile. She was in a good mood, indeed.

Shi Yan was bewildered for a while. He couldn't help but look at Audrey over Shang Ying Yue's shoulder. He saw that the woman was still coldly and proudly sitting quietly. The other four warriors of the Imperial Dark Tribe were surrounding and protecting her. Their faces scared off people.

"In fact, she's nice." Shang Ying Yue thought for a while and then talked in her cold but clear voice. "It's not hard to talk to her. She's fair and reasonable. She's not as haughty and tyrannical as we thought."

The transaction between Shang Ying Yue and Audrey was likely delightful. Since they had arrived here, Shang Ying Yue didn't like Audrey and now, she was saying good things about Audrey. It surprised Cecilia a lot. She then looked at Shang Ying Yue with a little bit of oddness.

"When I came here, she told me that Haig didn't dare to come. She said we could go around freely but shouldn't go too far away. We don't want to see troubles. She asked me to tell you that you shouldn't consume your energy too much." Shang Ying Yue looked at Shi Yan.

"Why does she care about Shi Yan a lot?" Cecilia had many thoughts in her mind. "Does she want to break the barrier? Haig's force is on the other side of the barrier and they are really strong. We should be thankful that they didn't come to us. I hope she won't do anything stupid."

"Harrumph!"

However, at this moment, Audrey's cold voice arose. Her cold eyes gazing at Cecilia had chilled the woman and made her change her face.

Audrey's realm was profound and the Imperial Dark Tribe was famous for their attainment in cultivating the soul altar in the whole cosmos. Her sensibility was super strong. Thus, even if she didn't want to eavesdrop, something could still come into her ears.

"Cough! Cough! I think we should cultivate for a while. Haig's troop hasn't come yet. We still have time, right?" Cecilia jolted up reluctantly, looking at Shi Yan and then at Shang Ying Yue. She suggested, "The three of us should team up."

Some people had completed their transactions. Some still stayed but some had already left quietly.

They would group up. In any circumstance, they would never go alone. Apparently, they wanted to use the materials they've just

got to cultivate and increase their realm and power, especially their fighting competence.

It wasn't their home here so everybody had to be very careful. They had to stay alert of ambush. To ensure safety, they could find a partner to watch out for each other. It was the safest way to cultivate here.

People left in pairs or more than two and scattered.

"Should we leave out of the range of one hundred miles," Audrey's voice arose all of a sudden.

"What do you think?" Cecilia looked at Shang Ying Yue and Shi Yan.

"I'm cool with that," Shang Ying Yue nodded. "It's necessary to watch out for each other. I can ease my mind if I go with you guys. I agree." She looked at Shi Yan.

As she had just sealed her deal with Shi Yan and she needed his favor, Shi Yan assumed that Cecilia wouldn't harm him. At the same time, Shang Ying Yue was Shang Chen's daughter. Spending time with her for a while, Shi Yan knew that this woman looked cold but she actually had a warm heart. It was worth being friends with her.

Compared to Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, and Wu Feng who were cunning bastards, Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were much safer choices. If he cooperated with them, everybody could feel safe.

"Okay, let's do that."

Shi Yan stood up, smiling and walking away.

Mo Fou, Wu Feng, Jiao Shan, and Jiao Hai saw him leaving. They thought and then clamored as they wanted to pair with him to cultivate. They knew Shi Yan could see the commotions around. As they needed a secluding place to cultivate, they remembered Shi Yan's ability.

Unfortunately, Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue had grouped up with Shi Yan one step ahead of them. Seeing the man leaving with the two women, they all had confused looks.

Audrey also looked at Shi Yan's group of three. Her long eyelashes twitched and gave an unrecognizable frown.

Shi Yan's group of three left the horde of people and slowly speeded. Shi Yan guided them and dashed away, going into a deep area where big trees towered and shaded the whole sky. They stopped by a grand mountain.

The flank of this mountain was filled with many jet-black caves where the wind howled and whistled fiercely. It seemed like this mountain was strangely hollow.

Shi Yan took in the picture. He frowned and then said, "Someone is in there. We need to find another place. Follow me."

Ten minutes later, they appeared by a big, crystal-clear lake surrounded by big ancient trees. Under the bright light from the stars, this lake looked like a fulgent mirror without a single ripple. The fresh steam hovered and sent them a refreshing feeling.

The pretty eyes of Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue twinkled. They both saw joy in each other's eyes. The women hesitated for a while before starting to cheer.

"Shi Yan, we want to take a bath in this lake for a while. You watch out for us first. After we're done, we'll guard you." Cecilia turned her head and smiled charmingly. She couldn't conceal the joy on her face.

All women loved to stay clean and hygienic. As they'd went through the swamp and many other things, they had a lot of dirt and stains on their bodies. Seeing that beautiful lake, they, of course, wished to enjoy it.

"Okay, enjoy. I'll stay close by to watch over you guys. I will stop anyone who comes near." Shi Yan nodded, perching on a branch of

a big tree and backing from the lake as if he wouldn't sneak on them.

"It's okay. I'm not afraid that you would sneak on us. Haha, you've seen a lot of mine, anyway."

Cecilia smiled charmingly. She jumped into the lake, swimming and drifting around like a mermaid. She looked really joyful.

She was swimming in the lake, but she didn't use the light curtain to cover herself. Thus, she got wet immediately. The clear lake made her porcelain body visible even from underwater, which was mesmerizingly creamy and shiny.

Shang Ying Yue was a little hesitant. She glanced at Shi Yan. Eventually, she couldn't endure the enticement of the lake. Just like a blue bolt of lightning, she shot into the lake and tried to stay away from Cecilia and further away from Shi Yan. She immersed in the lake. While watching Shi Yan, she took off her clothes gingerly. She was afraid that Shi Yan would turn around to peep on her.

Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia enjoyed the coolness and rare. It was refreshing and they were joyous from the lake. They played with water, splashing and bathing their bright skinned bodies.

Shi Yan stood neatly in the thick woods. Hesitating, he released the co-soul to check around to make sure that no one came near. Then, he took out the Scarlet Flaming Heart he had just got.

The Scarlet Flaming Heart was slightly bigger than his fist. It was as garnet as the red iron. However, it felt natural in his hand without fierce energy fluctuations. At first glance, it was dull and nothing special.

Of course, Shi Yan knew its real face wasn't that.

Sizzle! Sizzle!

Space power was sent to his fingertip. A space blade slowly emerged. When he flickered his finger, the seal covering the

Scarlet Flaming Heart was torn off as if it was made of fabric.

As the seal was broken in the corner, a flow of flaming energy rolled out massively. Shortly after, the seal was burned down. A warm, beautifully red stone appeared in the palm of his hand. It had a powerful flaming aura of the sun. It felt like he was holding a sun in his hand.

His hand started to smoke. Even his tenacious God Body couldn't stand its heat. His palm was burned and it was smoking.

His thoughts flickered in pain. He immediately urged the soul altar to use Star power. Countless dots of starlight twinkled, covering the Scarlet Flaming Heart instantaneously. The fiery aura that could burn Shi Yan's God Body was covered by the starlight shortly after.

A hot aura immediately emitted, mingling with the Star power Upanishad in his soul altar. It also had a subtle, marvelous connection with the star in his Ethereal Extent.

Shi Yan smiled suddenly.

He quietly grabbed the Scarlet Flaming Heart and squeezed. The Scarlet Flaming Heart disappeared abruptly and left no beam of aura.

Inside the Ethereal Extent, the Scarlet Flaming Heart that was as vast as the galaxy reappeared. It was now a sun releasing light and heat in his Ethereal Extent, bringing warmth to his freezing cold Ethereal Extent. It also sublimated his soul.

The Scarlet Flaming Heart wasn't really precious to Cecilia and Riello, but it was very valuable to Shi Yan. When the Scarlet Flaming Heart had entered his Ethereal Extent, his soul altar also changed. A gold light curtain of the sun was now covering his soul altar and deepening his knowledge of Star power Upanishad.

Shi Yan quieted down his mind to comprehend and cultivate.

A hidden aura was suddenly reflected in his mind. Shi Yan who

was happily studying the Essence of the Ethereal Extent had to wake up and he frowned.

The co-soul danced away from his pupil. Shi Yan used the co-soul to sense for a while, retrieved it, and then got up. He glided like a ghost with a dark face to a corner of the lake.

He detected someone sneaking up on him and coming near.

That person had a clear purpose. He wanted to get into the lake and peep on Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue. He possibly wanted to do something ambiguous.

Chapter 1142: Little Fatty

By the clear lake on a steep grassy slope lay a white, fat body. He fixed his eyes on the figures in the lake.

It was a young, fat man who had his upper body exposed and was wearing a pair of snakeskin shorts. His small eyes squinted as he drooled and parted his lips...

From this angle, the graceful body of Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue in the lake were barely discernible. He couldn't see clearly. Moreover, it wasn't practical because the two women hadn't taken off all of their clothes. However, this fat white boy was so excited.

A starlight quietly arrived and hovered by a big tree behind that little fatty. Shi Yan was surprised.

At first glance, he was sure that he had never seen this little fatty in Audrey's group. He couldn't help but knit his brows.

According to Audrey, she had killed all the God warriors in this forest territory and the survivors were with her, following her commands. So, where the heck did this little fatty come from?

At first glance, this half-naked little fatty was a human. His features matched some unique features of human beings. However, Shi Yan felt something unusual. That little fatty gave him a strange feeling, a fear of danger that wouldn't be easy to deal with.

"Beautiful, eh?" Pondering for a while, he lowered his voice and asked.

The little fatty nodded instinctively, "Yeah, yeah, so beautiful..."

"Oops!" He bolted up, turning to Shi Yan and asking nervously, "Who are you? Why are you here?"

The little boy didn't wait for Shi Yan to answer. He gave a dirty smile as if he had suddenly recognized something. "You're here to

peep too, aren't you? Come here, come here. My spot isn't as bad as it seems. Those two women look really nice. Hey, take a look. Who is more beautiful, you say? I like the plump one. She looks so sexy and strong..."

Little Fatty lowered his voice and beamed despicably. He waved at Shi Yan while still commenting.

He seemed to not be wary of Shi Yan as if he wasn't worried that Shi Yan would try his best to kill him. Shi Yan wondered if this boy was bold or just naive. He looked like he didn't care about the imminent fatal peril.

"I like both of them."

Eyeing the fatty boy, Shi Yan wore a calm and cool face. He deliberately walked to the boy and said, "I have never seen you before. You've just arrived here?"

"Yep, I've just arrived here from another place." The Little Fatty smiled until his eyes narrowed. He swayed his fat body to make room for Shi Yan. "I came from the sea territory. That mad dog Harson has gazed at me and bit me for a long time. I had to play dead to dodge a kalpa. I have a good skill of playing dead, which should rank first. Haha, Harson thought he had killed me. He was too naive, right?"

Shi Yan listened to the boy babbling, his eyes showing a gleam of surprise.

He had heard of the name Harson before. He was another outstanding warrior of the God Clan who ranked right behind Haig. He was a madman who loved bloody slaughters. He was in charge of the sea territory among the four territories. That man was tough, indeed.

If this fat boy could escape from Harson's hands and he could get through the barrier to enter this place, he wasn't a simple warrior. If he weren't strong enough or didn't have many tricks, he could

never do what he had mentioned.

Thoughts crossed his head. Shi Yan told him all of a sudden, "No more peeping."

"Why? Do you want to enjoy alone? Hey, you are too tyrannical, you know that?" Little Fatty hissed, his face angry. "When I saw you coming, I've talked to you and proactively made you room. Enjoying this alone isn't as much fun as sharing it with someone else. Do you know that?"

"They are under my..." Shi Yan wanted to say that he was in charge of protecting them.

"They are yours?" Little Fatty misunderstood. He intervened and said in awe. "Da-ge, you're really strong!"

Then, he turned around and behaved. He stopped gazing at Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue anymore. He friendly patted Shi Yan's shoulder and smiled embarrassedly, "I'm so sorry. I didn't know that they are your women. Otherwise, I wouldn't have done that."

Pausing for a while, he asked, "Did you kill Yu Jia? You are in charge of this forest now, right?"

Shi Yan was surprised. He looked at the boy, his face puzzled.

"You've fused with the Origin, so the ancient continent doesn't bind you. And you can gather earth and heaven energy. Seeing that you're alive now, Yu Jia should be dead by now, I suppose."

Shi Yan slightly paled. "How do you know that I'm not bound by the ancient continent?"

He became more curious about this Little Fatty. This boy could escape Harson and come here through the barrier. He just needed to look at Shi Yan and he could know Shi Yan's secrets. Who was this boy?

"If you couldn't see the situation around clearly, you couldn't find me or approach me that fast." The fat boy sounded casual, but he

had gotten right to the point. "Okay, tell me the situation in this place, please. Is there any possible danger? If yes, I should leave early. I should get back to Harson's side. He doesn't have the origin. I can find a random islet to hide. He can never track me down."

"Audrey is in charge here. She's the Princess of the Imperial Dark Tribe. She has fused with the Origin too." Contemplating for a while, Shi Yan told him frankly.

"Oh, her!" Little Fatty was surprised. He nodded right after that. "Yeah, right. The Imperial Dark Tribe must send someone anyway. Desolate is one of the five ancient continents and it's the most marvelous one. They've been subtle for so many years. It's time to step out and raise the storm though."

Pausing for a while, Little Fatty squinted his eyes as he shouted, "Da-ge, are you from the Heavenly Monster Tribe or the Immortal Demon Clan?"

Shi Yan was shocked. He looked at the boy in fright and confusion.

"Don't wear that face," Little Fatty laughed cheerily, "I guessed that you're from the Immortal Demon Clan because I can't sense the aura of my kind on you..."

Shi Yan was baffled as he looked at the boy. "Who are you?"

"Only the descendants of the Great Four Creatures can fuse with the Origin. As far as I've known, Haig has fused with the Origin of Ancient God Continent, Audrey fused with the Origin of God-blessed Mainland, and you... apparently, you fused with the Origin of Grace Mainland. Haha, you gave me a close feeling of nostalgia. You're from my ancestral planet!" The fat boy patted his shoulder. He wasn't afraid of Shi Yan or worried that he would attack him suddenly.

"You're a member of the Heavenly Monster Tribe?" Shi Yan was

bewildered for a while before he could figure it out.

Grace Mainland was the ancestral star of the Heavenly Monster Tribe. It was the cradle of these kinds of immemorial creatures. They were one of the Great Four Creatures. Shi Yan had the Origin of Grace Mainland. If this fat boy was correct that only the members of the Four Creatures could get the Origin, he could confirm Shi Yan's Immortal Demon origin in just a blink.

"As you're from the Immortal Demon Clan and I'm from the Heavenly Monster Tribe. I'm sure you won't harm me." Little Fatty smiled until his eyes narrowed. "Interesting! You're an Immortal Demon warrior but you have the Origin of my ancestral planet. And as for me, I'm from the Heavenly Monster Tribe, but I have the Origin of your ancestral land. It's strangely coincidental, don't you think?"

"You fused with the Origin of Ancient Demon Continent?" Shi Yan was astounded.

Little Fatty smiled and nodded. He didn't seem to attempt to conceal things. "Should we exchange information? You'll tell me the stuff in Grace Mainland and I'll give you the information about Ancient Demon Continent. Okay?"

"Okay!"

Shi Yan took a deep breath and then bellowed. His face was stern.
Splash! Splash!

The sounds of bodies moving in the water arose. Cecilia's gentle voice came to them. "Shi Yan, are you talking to someone?"

His bellowing had alerted Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue. They were startled and they hurried to change into their clothes. They flew from the lake and glided towards them. Their cold eyes gazed at Little Fatty and then at Shi Yan, "Is this how you watch out for us?" said Shang Ying Yue coldly.

"I got lost. . ."

The Little Fatty put on an innocent, puppy-like face and looked at Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia. "I walked on a straight road to this area. I didn't see anything. Hey... Shi Yan, right? He stopped me before I'd reached the lake. So... I didn't see anything." Little Fatty opened his arms. Fat rolls on his face pushed each other and gave him a funny look.

"Gosh! Who are you?" Cecilia reacted and shouted hoarsely, "You're not from Audrey's team. Who are you after all?"

As she shouted, Shang Ying Yue woke up, her face cold and strict. "Shi Yan, who is this man? He's not from this territory, right?"

"No. He has escaped Harson's grasp and gotten here." Shi Yan explained. Pondering for a while, he told Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue. "I want to talk to him alone. If you don't mind, please stay away for a while."

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue exchanged looks and then nodded to Shi Yan, "Alright, we'll stay away. We will make sure that no one will disturb you." Cecilia answered him, throwing Shang Ying Yue a glance. Then, they left together.

After the two of them had walked away from Shi Yan's, Shang Ying Yue said, "I'm sure that fat boy had sneaked on us!"

Cecilia giggled. She seemed to not mind. "It's far. Even if he wanted to peep, he couldn't see anything. Don't keep it in your mind." Pausing for a while, Cecilia became stern. "That fat boy isn't simple since he got here through the barrier! He's absolutely not easy to deal with! Harson... you know how brutal he is. If this boy can escape from Harson, he's dangerous, indeed!"

"I understand. This man should be an extremely dangerous one." Shang Ying Yue wore a cold face. "I don't know what they would discuss. I think they have something they want to hide from us. Would it be related to us?"

"If that fat boy and Shi Yan go with each other, perhaps Audrey

can't do anything to them. Of course... with the premise that they want to challenge Audrey!" Cecilia's beautiful eyes twinkled. She was calculating something, which made her excited.

Chapter 1143: A Samsara

A dark purple flame glowing dazzlingly flew out of Little Fatty's left pupil. It flickered and released a dominant soul energy fluctuation.

Little Fatty squinted his bead-like eyes. He used the dark purple flame to sense the auras of other people around him. The dark purple flame danced and sent flows of Soul Consciousness hundreds of miles away in just a blink.

This process didn't take a long time. He retrieved the dark purple flame into his head and laughed harmlessly. "Those women are staying far away from us. They can't hear us for sure. Thus, you can tell me the story of Grace Mainland. Yeah, by the way, I'm Cang Yun. You can call me Little Cang or Little Yun. It's up to you. Don't be too distant."

Little Fatty was a member of the Heavenly Monster Tribe. However, he wasn't born in Grace Mainland. He had always been curious about Grace Mainland that had given birth to their tribe. As he had suddenly found Shi Yan, a guy from Grace Mainland, of course, he wouldn't let this opportunity to know more about his homeland slip away.

"The Grace Mainland's energy is exhausted. Warriors who used to stay there are now in Agate Star Area. About Grace Mainland, throughout the Immemorial Epoch, the Antiquity Era, and the Ancient Time, it was in the hidden corner of the edge of this universe. It's hard to contact the outer world..."

Shi Yan told him everything he knew.

"Is there a place called the Heavenly Monster Mountain Range?" asked Cang Yun all of a sudden.

"Yes," nodded Shi Yan.

"After we're done with this, can you take me there?" Cang Yun's

fat face shivered slightly and showed his thrill.

"No problem," Shi Yan agreed.

"Anything special?" asked Cang Yun.

"Hmm, nothing," after thinking carefully, Shi Yan shook his head."

Cang Yun quieted down. He pulled himself together, arranging his words for a while before starting slowly, "I can't tell... the exact location of Ancient Demon Continent. It should be like Grace Mainland and in a crack by the edge of the cosmos. Anyway, I know how to get in there."

He looked at Shi Yan and said, "If you want me to bring you there, I can do that too. But I want to make it clear that Ancient Demon Continent isn't very different from Grace Mainland. The energy there is exhausted and there are no members of the Immortal Demon Clan dwelling."

He said continuously.

Cang Yun was one of the Holy Beast Azure Dragon descendants of the Heavenly Monster Tribe. The bloody war between the Heavenly Monster Tribe and the Imperial Dark Tribe that had shaken even the big star areas ended with the Heavenly Monster Tribe's defeat and seclusion. Members of the Heavenly Monster Tribe had to try their best to hide and find a secret place to cultivate ascetically and avoid the Imperial Dark Tribe's pursuit.

And in a very accidental situation, they found Ancient Demon Continent...

When they got there, they found that this continent had been barren for years. They didn't see any members of the Immortal Demon Clan. At that time, the Ancient Demon Continent hadn't had much energy. It wasn't suitable for high-level creatures to cultivate anymore.

However, as the Heavenly Monster Tribe had just been defeated,

they just wanted a place to stay. Moreover, they had a lot of divine crystals. After a brief discussion, they decided to stay in Ancient Demon Continent. Cang Yun was born in the Ancient Demon Continent. One time, when Cang Yun was cultivated underground, he had reached too deep and he accidentally touched the Origin. Afterward, he had fused the Origin with his soul altar.

After many years, members of the Heavenly Monster Tribe started to leave the Ancient Demon Continent and started secluding in other star areas. Cang Yun had also followed his fellows and left.

When the members of their tribe all left Ancient Demon Continent, it was completely depleted. It was just a barren, desolate star that didn't have any signs of living beings dwelling. It was merely a dead star.

However, as Cang Yun had recently found the Origin of the Ancient Demonic Continent, he found that the continent was like a dry tree sprouting in the spring. It seemed to wake up one more time and it started to gather energy from outer space. Ancient Demon Continent seemed to begin a new Samsara and have a marvelous transformation...

After he had found that, he came to consult with his precursors in the tribe. Then, he understood a fact: The ancient continents would never be completely depleted!

The earth and heaven energy in an ancient continent had the Samsara or the reincarnation circle. It would have ups and downs too. When the earth and heaven energy there had reached its peak, it would gradually decline. After its energy was totally exhausted, the magical process of gathering energy would start once again. It would be able to collect energy from outer space and accumulate it.

Ancient Demon Continent had been collecting the free energy in outer space.

According to the elders of the Heavenly Monster Tribe, the five

ancient continents had a marvelous connection. When the other four ancient continents were in the worst stage of lacking energy, Desolate would have the richest energy.

In this stage, Desolate would give birth to the treasures that were the most precious in this world. It was the rare chance of tens of thousands years for the warriors to enter Desolate at this point of time. Whoever could get to the Center could harvest the items he had always dreamed of!

Thus, Cang Yun went to this area under the arrangement of the Elders of his Heavenly Monster Tribe.

"You say that Ancient Demon Continent is reviving?" Shi Yan shouted in astonishment.

"It's true," Cang Yun smiled until his eyes narrowed. "Not only Ancient Demon Continent. I think that God-blessed Mainland and Ancient God Continent are about to be depleted. Also, they are going to gather energy remnants in outer space once again. Rumors say that the energy cycles of the four ancient continents are amazingly similar. They have a close connection. If Grace Mainland doesn't have earth and heaven energy anymore, the other continents will face the same problem. Today, as Ancient Demon Continent's reviving, the other three will have the same situation."

"So Haig, Audrey, you and I all have the Origin of the ancient continents and we're all here," Shi Yan pondered and frowned, "the ground under our feet and the Origins we have have a special connection. You're here because of your Elders' arrangement and I'm here because of a man. I think it happened the same to Haig and Audrey. Hmm, the fact that we're gathering here and what Desolate has should have some connection!"

He eyed Cang Yun without blinking once. "Can you tell me more?"

To this very moment, Shi Yan understood that Cang Yun

appearing here by the lake wasn't because he wanted to see Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue bathing. His purpose was to lure Shi Yan out. In other words, Cang Yun was here because of him.

"Don't look at me. I don't actually know the details." Cang Yun shook his head continuously and said with confusion, "I don't know. My precursor just told me to go to the Center. Something will happen there. And I think my precursor and your Immortal Demon precursor have contacted. They told me that if I met you by chance here, I should cooperate with you..."

"Why has nobody ever told me this?" Shi Yan was enraged all of a sudden. It was the feeling when someone had discreetly set you up for something that you didn't know. Shi Yan didn't like this feeling.

He had come here because Shang Chen had come to him and Frederick, one of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight, had asked him to do so. Discreetly, a pair of hands was planning everything for him, manipulating him and making him work as the other pleased.

He didn't feel cool with this.

"Don't ask me. I know nothing," said Cang Yun dispiritedly.

Shi Yan darkened his face. Contemplating for a while, he said, "Alright. Then tell me. What should we do now?"

"I don't know," Cang Yun shook his head, "my precursor told me to do my best to cooperate with you. I don't know the details. They told me that... you will know what to do gradually. They told me to listen to you."

"I will know gradually? What the heck would I know?!" said Shi Yan agitatedly.

The feeling of getting his fate decided by someone else displeased Shi Yan a lot. He wanted to curse out loud.

"Hey... you have a strange ring, don't you?" Cang Yun rubbed his

head and asked all of a sudden. "They said that you could know what to do from the ring. I don't know what it means."

Shi Yan changed his countenance. He instinctively looked at the Blood Vein Ring, his thoughts flickering.

The soul memory of the Ring Spirit wasn't complete. It was still dormant now. It hadn't talked to him for a long time. After many failed attempts, he had almost forgotten it. He remembered the ring when Cang Yun reminded him.

Perhaps the Blood Vein Ring could give him some directions. He immediately contacted the Ring Spirit.

Unfortunately, he got no response. The Ring Spirit seemed to disappear, which made him begrudging.

"Audrey will come here soon."

Cang Yun gave a cough. He stylishly took out an exquisitely made robe and put it on. The robe shrouded his white, shining fat body and gave it a magical aura. The faint monster aura of his gradually disappeared.

Shi Yan couldn't find anything wrong with this boy. No matter what he tried to investigate and sense, Cang Yun was just an ordinary, fat human boy. There was nothing he could find to connect him with his Heavenly Monster Tribe kin.

He looked at Cang Yun in awe.

"Our tribe and the Imperial Dark Tribe are mortal enemies. If she finds out my identity, she will kill me for sure." Cang Yun smiled dryly and embarrassedly, which pushed the rolls of fat on his face together. "I will tell her that I came here from Harson's. I have to join you guys to ensure that I won't be killed by Harson or Haig."

"What do you want after all?" said Shi Yan with a dark face.

He always felt that Cang Yun had hidden something from him. He felt that Shang Ying Yue had his own decisions, but he didn't

have anything to guess or read the other's mind. Although this Little Fatty looked naive and innocent, he was really smart that even Shi Yan couldn't read his moves.

"I'll listen to you," Cang Yun smiled and showed his servile face, "I don't know what to do, but I know it's not wrong to follow you. You will always... get it."

"Shi Yan!"

"Shi Yan! Someone is coming!"

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue dashed together from afar as they all sensed strange energy movement, which was strong and cold and made them tense and nervous.

"It's Audrey," Shi Yan didn't change his countenance. "She found you when she used her Soul Consciousness to patrol. She's worried so she came to check you out."

Cang Yun squinted his small eyes, leaning against a tree casually as if he wasn't afraid of Audrey coming.

Chapter 1144: The Charteris Family

The ear-splitting howling wind came near. The gloomy bolts of lightning dashed over and reached the area immediately.

Audrey and the four members of the Imperial Dark Tribe appeared in front of Shi Yan and Cang Yun. Her cold and arrogant eyes raked through the two of them and stopped right at Cang Yun. She shouted, "Who are you?"

Flows of soul energy moved like the fine silk threads, slowly entangling Cang Yun and lingering around his body. She wanted to see even Cang Yun's smallest secrets...

Shi Yan was so surprised so he also stared at Cang Yun too, his face uncertain.

Any energy fluctuation from Cang Yun was so normal. Since he was a descendant of the immemorial Heavenly Monster Tribe, he should have something different from the other races. However, Shi Yan could see that Cang Yun's realm, aura, and God Body were 100% matched with Human Clan's!

He didn't know how Cang Yun did it, but he could confirm that Audrey couldn't see anything abnormal. She couldn't verify Cang Yun's real identity.

Indeed, after Audrey's bright eyes had moved around for a while, she relaxed.

"I came from the other side," Cang Yun smiled, trying to be servile and pointing at the sea area behind him. "Harson of the Charteris family is in charge of that area. Before I came here... Harson had finished his big cleaning. Besides me, everybody else was killed."

Audrey's face showed a gleam of fear. Both Shi Yan and she were vigilant to Cang Yun. The warrior who could escape Harson wasn't weak.

Soon, Audrey had considered Cang Yun a character she shouldn't neglect.

"How many people are there in Harson's team? Did they get a significant loss too?" She contemplated then asked.

"Harson leads eighteen warriors. If you know about the Charteris family, you must know how crazy and ruthless they are." Cang Yun worriedly rubbed his fat face. "Harson's troops are all mad men. They kill people for fun. The Charteris family of the God Clan is the most bloodthirsty one. Even among the families of the God Clan, they aren't very likable."

The God Clan's Charteris family was infamous. Their name was known everywhere in this vast universe. Among the twelve families of God Clan, this family ranked right behind the Bradley family. Members from this family were all extremely bloodthirsty. Also, they were the most combative family of God Clan.

This family was the key force in each battle that had terrorized the universe. And the originators of the bloody cases were also from this family.

When the Charterises invaded a life star, they would eradicate the native race. People couldn't live in peace wherever they passed by. The Charteris family was known as the Cleaner of the God Clan or the Racial Terminator. This family was a malignant tumor of the cosmos, the worst nightmare of all.

They were a sharp bloody saber of the God Clan. They had invaded and slaughtered everywhere. People hated them, but they were also afraid of them.

This family had a lot of mad men. The family members and their key disciples loved to massacre others. Harson was a famous, young lunatic of the current generation. His brutal reputation made him even more well known than Haig. He was a tough character that no one wanted to encounter.

Hearing that Harson had finished cleaning the sea area and still had eighteen warriors in his team, Audrey's willow-like brows furrowed. Her cold face now had a dark gleam.

The Charteris family wasn't easy to counter. Harson was a mad dog. When they met him, it would result in someone's death. If Haig could gather with the Charterises when they got to the forest territory, Audrey's team wouldn't escape death.

"I heard that Haig, Mia, and Phelps are on the other side of the barrier?" Little Fatty Cang Yun looked desperate. "Haig is coming. And that mad dog Harson is here too. I'm afraid that we can't resist them."

He had deemed himself a member of this team.

Audrey didn't mind his hidden meaning. Her long eyelashes batted as she was thinking.

Shi Yan, Cecilia, and Cang Yun didn't say much. They were waiting for Audrey's decision in silence. They understood that if they let Harson and Haig gather, it would be a lethal threat to them.

"The Center will open in any minute. Perhaps it will open tomorrow or the day after tomorrow. Once we get to the Center, it's possible that our team will be smashed." Audrey contemplated for a while, her cold eyes raking through her people. "Before the Center opens, the God Clan will move. They won't give us more chances. Even if we can get to the Center, we will be smashed. The God Clan wants to terminate us. However, after we get into the Center, it would be very difficult to kill us all..."

Cang Yun, Shang Ying Yue, and Cecilia nodded. Apparently, they knew the situation so they agreed with Audrey.

Only Shi Yan was still surprised.

He came here in a rush and Shang Chen didn't tell him many details. Clueless, he jumped into this place. He knew nothing about

the Center.

When they got into the Center, they would be smashed again. Thus, everybody had to start over again. Then, he might encounter one or two warriors of God Clan and he might have a chance to kill them... So, it was good for him somehow.

Haig and Mia also knew this. Thus, they had to seize the chance when the Center hadn't opened yet to clear the remaining opponents.

Only after killing all of them would the God Clan operate freely in the Center. They could go to harvest the most precious items and they could understand the mysteries of the ancient continent.

"We must seize the chance when Haig and Harson haven't united yet. We must choose to break one team. We must try our best to deprive their powers. It would prevent them from attacking us successfully even if they could gather later!" Audrey decided quickly and said resolutely, "Haig, Mia, and Phelps are together. It's not a wise move to engage in a battle with them now. We can't take the upper hand. Thus... We're going to Harson! Harson doesn't have the Origin. Once we get to the sea territory, I can locate him. We have the advantage!"

Taking a deep breath, Audrey's breasts heaved, "We must do it quickly!"

She didn't seem to want to hear Shi Yan's or Cang Yun's opinions. She decided and then ordered the four members of the Imperial Dark Tribe. "Announce to them and ask them to gather quickly!"

The four members of the Imperial Dark Tribe bowed to her and then disappeared like dark beams of light. They vanished from people's sights shortly.

"You lead us and break the barrier. Take the way you took to come here and lead us back there." Audrey ordered Cang Yun and didn't give him a chance to protest.

Little Fatty smiled brightly and nodded continually. He seemed to know how to behave in this situation.

Shi Yan looked at him and put up his guard discreetly. He thought that this Little Fatty had brains. At this moment, as he was facing Audrey, a member of his mortal enemy tribe, he could be much flexible. This boy was a dangerous character.

Shadows drew nearer. The warriors of different races scattering around were summoned by the four experts of the Imperial Dark Tribe. They congregated as fast as they could. Not long after that, Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, Wu Feng, Jiao Shan, and the others also arrived. They looked at Shi Yan, their eyes asking for his opinions.

Shi Yan frowned, but he didn't explain.

After they all gathered, Audrey said, "We're going to the sea territory to counter Harson. We must seize the chance when Harson hasn't joined Haig yet. We will try our best to drain Harson's force!"

She didn't explain clearly. Afterward, she shot Cang Yun a look and ordered him arrogantly, "Take us there."

Cang Yun laughed brightly. He nodded continually before starting to move like a fat squirrel weaving through thick woods. His flexible and agile moves made people gawk. His fat body moved swiftly in the air as if he had encountered no obstacle. Just like a big air bag, he flew quickly in through the air.

"Oh wow, we shouldn't judge a book by its cover," said Cecilia in astonishment, her beautiful eyes flaring strangely.

"After him," ordered Audrey.

By the edge of the swamp territory in front of the toxic gas curtain, Haig suddenly shouted.

People looked at him cluelessly. They didn't know why he

suddenly screamed.

Haig was calm. When he found that Audrey was setting up a lot of barriers and restrictions on the other side of the barrier, he had ordered people not to go through there rashly.

He sat cross-legged in front of the toxic air masses, closing his eyes as he was immersed in his thoughts and trying to find a solution that could benefit them. He had let Mia and Phelps leave this place to lure Audrey.

Unfortunately, Audrey didn't move. She just watched the area where she had installed the death traps and waited for him to take risks and come to her.

The two of them were playing the same chess match, but none of them dared to act recklessly. They had tried to maintain the original state.

When Haig found that he couldn't wait for Audrey to bite his bait, he summoned Mia and Phelps to make a new plan. He was using his special ability of the Soul Consciousness to draw a map. Under his feet was an area where he pointed out the locations of barriers and restrictions behind the barrier. He had even given the descriptions of how the different Metal-Wood-Water-Fire-Earth restrictions work.

If they followed Haig's direction to get through the barrier, they could avoid many dangerous traps. It would minimize their losses.

"Haig, what's wrong?" Phelps looked a bit shaken. He was excited, indeed. "Have you checked it thoroughly? We will start now?"

"It's not really clear. But we have to move now. Something has changed." Looking at the toxic air curtain, Haig said, "Those people left the barrier one hour ago. If they are not going to ambush us, they must have some new plan. We can't linger here anymore."

"What change?" asked Mia.

"Perhaps they are heading to my ice territory or Harson's territory. Once we get into that forest area, we will know where they're heading. It's troublesome. The Center is about to unseal. We don't have much time. We must attack them quickly!" While talking, Haig walked to the toxic gas area.

He had proposed and planned this operation on the ancient continent. He wouldn't allow any mistake, so he had to go there personally.

The water-like, thick toxic air started to dilute when he walked over there. A flame swayed and changed its color above Haig's head, which was burning a large amount of toxic gas.

Boom!

An earth-shaking explosion arose and shook the entire swamp.

"Get in, all of you," Haig hissed, "follow me and don't stay too far."

Then, he jumped through the barrier.

Chapter 1145: White Bone Refining Blood Ghost Grave

Haig put his feet on the deathtrap prepared by Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, and Wu Feng.

It was the least dangerous area because Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and the others had used the good stuff they had before, which made Mia's team pay a deadly price. They didn't have many lethal weapons to use after that.

Haig steadied his body in this area. While his thoughts were changing, a silver metal ball emerged in his palm. When it fell on the ground, spikes jutted out, making it a metal hedgehog with sharp thorns and spinning in front of him.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Gold bolts of lightning shot out rapidly. Sound waves exploded ear-splittingly. The earth shook as if there were dragons moving underground, releasing terrible tremors and dashing towards Haig.

Swoosh!

Haig's clothes exploded. Silver-scaled armor arose on his skin. Fierce spikes jutted out of his body. Instantly, he had transformed into his God Undying Body.

In this so-called perfect fighting form, Haig's eyes were astonishingly placid. Each silver scale of his armor generated a furious energy fluctuation and made him look like a human volcano with the sea of fire around him.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

With Haig as the core, all the weak restrictions exploded. The fierce energy was triggered and it burst off with echoes.

Within that short moment, this entire area fell into an earth-

shaking tremor. The earth looked like it received the rage of fire from heaven. Everything was burned, charred, and even the ground was cracked and black under the scorching heat.

The brutal features and intensity of this fire had surpassed Shi Yan's heaven flame. It was the powerful performance of the flaming Origin that had been fused to a high-level.

A beam of cold, dark light flashed in the corner of his eye. An extremely cold aura emitted and filled the area with white fog. The world of flaming hell changed rapidly. It was frozen and it created many icicles.

The flaming hell turned into a world of ice while Haig changed his thoughts. He had alternated the boiling condition and the icy condition in just a thought. Everything was done smoothly.

When Mia, Phelps and the God warriors arrived, they were bewildered and scared as they looked at the world of ice.

"Eh? Aren't we going to the forest area? Did we make the wrong turn to the world of ice?" asked a warrior in astonishment.

The others had reacted like him. They looked baffled as they didn't understand.

Mia's bold brows furrowed. She shouted and pointed at the area ahead of them, "You fool! Why didn't you look further ahead?"

Her finger pointed to the area afar where people were surprised to see the endless forest with countless woods.

Right after that, they understood. They all turned to look at Haig and they looked at him with fear. They became vigilant as they knew how strong he was.

"Indeed, they had left to go to Harson." Haig sent his Soul Consciousness to check around as soon as he entered the forest. He had located Audrey's spot immediately. "They're one or two days away from us. We must move quickly! And you must notify Harson and tell him to hide. Don't let the others swallow him."

Mia changed her countenance. She hurried to take out the Sound Stone and shouted at it, "Harson, be careful. The fish from the two territories are gathering and heading to you. You should leave immediately. Do not engage in the fight with them directly. They are really strong!"

"Oh," the Sound Stone sent her an impatient voice and then nothing else...

"Harson! Harson! Are you there?" Mia grabbed and shouted at her Sound Stone, her face grimaced. However, the Sound Stone didn't react and its glow was dimming. "Damn it!" cursed Mia.

"We're going there right now!" Haig bellowed. "That lunatic has mental diseases. I'm afraid that he will act rashly!"

The shoreless sea territory.

There were many logs of wood floating in the sea, each carrying some members of the Charteris family. Sitting neatly on the log that led this fleet was Harson, the skeletal ghost-like leader. His eyes were bloodshot like the most furious, bloodthirsty beast.

The tree trunks floated and moved like arrows. Shortly after, they had arrived at a massive island. This island looked like it was situated on one end of the sea and was inside a thick fog. The dense fog covered even the horizon and blocked the view.

The wood logs stopped by the shore of the island. Harson brought the thugs of his Charteris family and walked to the other side of the island where the fog was the thickest. The other side of this area seemed to be a whole new world.

"The other side was the forest territory. This island is the main port to enter the Center. We will wait here for them to come to play with us." Harson's ruthless eyes scanned the fog. He suddenly grinned fiendishly, "Well, those low creatures are so naive. They want to kill me. Haha. I think we will have fun with them a little bit."

"Young Master, do you want to set something up?" asked a warrior who had a lot of blood stains on his face as he licked his lips.

"Blunt Wu, tell me what to do to give them a surprise?" Harson smiled sinisterly.

"White Bone Refining Blood Ghost Grave?" The Charteris family's warrior called Blunt Wu grinned fiendishly.

The other members of the Charteris family had their eyes brighten. Their faces expressed their desires like wild beasts that caught the scent of blood. They nodded to him excitedly.

"Alright! It's the White Bone Refining Blood Ghost Grave then!" Harson laughed.

Each member of the Charteris scattered and stood in their precise positions. Terrifyingly evil aura gushed out from them. Blunt Wu shouted ear-piercingly while one of his hands tore his own belly as he tried to find for something in there...

He took out a sharp, bloody piece of bone that looked like a dagger from his abdomen. Apparently, it felt so painful that he winced and screeched. However, his eyes looked manic.

The same thing happened to the other members of the Charteris family. Each of them had torn their own abdomen, searching and slowly pulling out pieces of blood-dripping bones. The thick scent of blood filled the entire space.

The whole place was dyed red and a stinky smell shot up into the sky.

Each member of the Charteris family had taken a blood-dripping bone out of their bodies and planted it in the ground in front of them. When they did that, the sounds of screeching, crying, and wailing arose. Cold gusts of wind slapped their faces and raised people's hair.

"Dripping blood!" Harson laughed crazily, spurting blood from

his mouth, which then sprayed on the bones planted in the ground. After that, a thick sea of blood arose above their heads.

From a far distance, the blood of sea above the White Bone Refining Blood Ghost Grave created by Harson and his fellows looked somehow similar to the Blood Soul Sea that Shi Yan had used his power Upanishad to create. It also had evil, wicked energy fluctuations that could affect people's minds and sink their soul altars.

Harson's team was still doing something...

Their God Bodies slowly disappeared. From a bird's view, it was just a sea of blood where they could see a gloomy grave made of white bones in the middle of the sea waves. However, they couldn't see Harson or the other members of the Charteris family. They seemed to become one with their White Bone Refining Blood Ghost Grave.

A brutal, bloodthirsty aura slowly generated from the blood sea. It seemed to have an evil power that could condense murderous aura from outer space...

Wisps of strange aura gathered from underground, the sea, and even the horizon. It seemed like the White Bone Refining Blood Ghost Grave was attracting and collecting the last beam of the grudging aura of creatures that had died in the ancient continent for years. Those wisps of resentful aura could increase the power of that wicked formation.

More terrifyingly, while the White Bone Refining Blood Ghost Grave was gathering more energy, it had also distorted the earth and heaven energy and covered the entire sky that even the Soul Consciousness couldn't see through...

"This place."

Cang Yun wiped the sweat on his forehead and pointed at the steamy area in front of them. He looked exhausted though.

It was a vast river and they couldn't see the other river bank. On their side, it was the forest. The steam hovered and separated the two sides, so they didn't know where the other riverbank was. The thick vapor was a natural barrier that divided the vast river into two parts: the forest part and the ocean part.

"You should show us how you crossed that river." Audrey nodded and urged him in a cold voice.

Cang Yun stopped by the river. Audrey had released her Soul Consciousness to sense that he had then crossed the steamy barrier to explore. She didn't see anything strange, so she wasn't really worried.

Cang Yun had also sensed quietly. He didn't find anything strange, either. However, he was cautious as he spoke, "You guys should be careful. Harson is a lunatic and he isn't weaker than Haig. Although he's restricted in the ancient continent, his lethality isn't less than Haig's. This man has a... mental problem. He was born bloodthirsty. We can't treat him like a normal person. And his troopers are all mad men. When they feel that the situation doesn't favor them, they won't hesitate to make everyone die altogether. They can kill themselves to kill the enemies too without a bit of hesitation."

Cang Yun was still fearful.

In this vast area of sea, he had witnessed how crazy and brutal Harson's subordinates were. One time, a warrior of Harson's troop was surrounded by three warriors at the same realm. He was hurt, but at the critical moment, he committed suicide, bursting off the three warriors who were closest to him.

And, his soul ran away and he returned to Harson. Later on, he could have a new body and recovered.

Each warrior under Harson's command wasn't afraid of death. They listened to Harson like the most religious disciples. They could kill themselves for Harson. This kind of extreme mad men

was the toughest to deal with that would give anyone a terrible headache.

"Guys, be careful. Harson is a maniac. Never underestimate him." Audrey nodded. She knew how dangerous Harson was. She agreed with Cang Yun's reminder.

"I don't know why, but I feel like something is wrong." Shi Yan frowned as he had an extremely insecure feeling. He felt distracted. His acupuncture points couldn't help but vibrate, which confused him.

There was a similar energy fluctuation hiding somewhere that made his acupuncture points resonate!

Chapter 1146: Trust

Deep in the steamy area that led to the other territory, although Shi Yan didn't release his Soul Consciousness to sense, he still felt something wrong.

Squinting, he focused on sensing. Vaguely, he found the vibe coming through the place of thick steam to resonate his acupuncture points...

The negative energy inside his acupuncture points started to spin and become restless. They seemed to want to jump out of his body and escape his control. This feeling annoyed him a lot. He instinctively felt that something dangerous was hiding behind the barrier.

Cang Yun, Cecilia, and Shang Ying Yue were surprised when they heard him. They turned to look at him, their eyes asking.

As Mo Fou and Wu Feng knew that Shi Yan could see the commotions of earth and heaven here, they didn't dare to act rashly. They frowned and looked at him as they expected him to give more details.

"What's wrong?" Audrey's bold brows furrowed, a mocking gleam sparkling in her eyes. "My Soul Consciousness isn't shackled here. I can send it over there and check. I can see the situation behind the steamy area. When I asked Cang Yun to break the barrier, I've checked it. Nothing is strange there."

"Kid, don't try to impress people by making things up!" Fuller shouted.

Fuller was a Dark Spirit warrior, an expert from the high-level star area. In the territory of the vast forest, Fuller used to be a leader of the warriors from different star areas. He had led them to fight against Yu Jia. Before Audrey appeared, he was the leader of this territory.

However, during the battle with Yu Jia, Fuller had fallen into the lower hand. Yu Jia had hunted him down fiercely.

Until Audrey appeared all of a sudden...

When Fuller's team was so helter-skelter, Audrey appeared and brought with her four members of the Imperial Dark Tribe. After one operation, she had led them to overturn the situation. After all, she had led them to eliminate Yu Jia's team.

After that battle, Audrey had won people's trust and respect. Fuller wasn't an exception. He had given up his leadership position and listened to Audrey. Perhaps, because Fuller liked Audrey, he had maintained and reminded people of her position everywhere.

Seeing Shi Yan dare to question Audrey's presumption, Fuller jumped out and looked at Shi Yan with a dark and harsh face, "Can you see what is happening behind that barrier?"

Shi Yan shook his head.

"Then don't talk nonsense!" Fuller snorted, his eyes raking through the others. "During the past three years, we've been under Audrey's leadership to fight Yu Jia. It has been three years and Audrey has never made a wrong assumption. Every time, she's precisely correct!"

The warriors who had followed Audrey nodded, their face respectful and admiring.

Apparently, within three years after Audrey had shown up, she had used her special abilities to earn trust from all of her warriors. No one would doubt her even once.

If she wouldn't make a mistake... Shi Yan was the one to be blamed then.

Fatty Cang Yun frowned. He looked at Shi Yan strangely. Just like Audrey, he could see the life energy fluctuation behind the barrier. When he left this area to go to the forest territory, he had checked once and right when he arrived here, he had checked it

again. The situation hadn't changed a bit.

Thus, Cang Yun had also doubted Shi Yan who could be startled because of something trivial. He didn't consider Shi Yan's words.

Sha Zhao, Mo Fou, and Wu Feng heard Audrey, Cang Yun, and Fuller discussing that there wouldn't be anything dangerous behind the barrier; they finally eased their restless minds. They thought that Audrey wasn't bound by the continent and she could see the change of earth and heaven energy too. Thus, Audrey could see what Shi Yan could see. Moreover, since Shi Yan didn't tell them the details, they were more inclined to believe Audrey more.

"Open the barrier," Audrey didn't mind Shi Yan anymore. She turned to Cang Yun and ordered.

Cang Yun shot Shi Yan a look. He didn't take action but asked. "Are you sure there is something wrong?"

Shi Yan shook his head begrudgingly, "Just my premonition."

"Then it's hard to convince the others." Cang Yun felt sorry. Right after that, he agilely dashed away. His stout body moved swiftly like a feather as he drilled into the white steam.

Cang Yun's God Body disappeared into the steam. No one could see where he was heading. However, they all felt the sharp energy shockwaves rising deeply inside the mist. It seemed like the barrier was pierced through directly. No one knew what Cang Yun had done. However, they were all vigilant as now they knew that this Little Fatty wasn't an ordinary warrior.

"Shi Yan. . ."

Cecilia let out a slight call. Just like Shang Ying Yue, she was standing by Shi Yan. They didn't move even though the others had already taken action.

Right at this moment, Audrey, Fuller, and the other warriors had approached the steamy area. Mo Fou, Wu Feng, Jiao Shan, and Sha Zhao knitted their brows, throwing Shi Yan a glance before

deciding to follow Audrey. They didn't want to group with Shi Yan and the two women.

Because Audrey had just told them that Haig, Phelps, and Mia had entered the forest already. They were moving really fast to chase after them.

Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and the others were afraid that if they lingered, Haig, Phelps, and Mia would hunt them down shortly after. And in their thoughts, they assumed that Audrey was a level higher than Shi Yan in terms of sensing life energy fluctuation...

Since Audrey was the Princess of the Imperial Dark Tribe and the Imperial Dark Tribe was one of the Great Four Creatures: a truly strong race that could stand against the God Clan, they obviously thought that only Audrey could bring them hope. After they had joined Audrey's team, Shi Yan's weight in their eyes was reduced drastically.

"You trust me?" Shi Yan grinned. He wasn't enraged at all. He looked at Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue. He seemed to be in a good mood.

"I used to fight shoulder by shoulder with you. I know how strong you are. Of course, I'm not as shallow as Mo Fou's group." Cecilia smiled charmingly.

"You won't shoot the arrow aimlessly." Shang Ying Yue's voice was cold and clear. However, what she said warmed Shi Yan up. "Audrey is so self-righteous. It's not true that she's right in everything. Although the time you and I are together isn't long, you have never failed me."

Shi Yan chuckled.

"What did you feel after all?" Cecilia put on a stern visage. She didn't even lower her voice and just screamed.

Because at this moment, Audrey, Fuller, Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and the others had followed Cang Yun to the other side of the barrier.

They disappeared one after another. Shortly after, there was no one left behind.

"Shi Yan! Come here!" Cang Yun was the last one staying by the barrier. He shouted through the thick mist.

"You should get there first. Don't worry that I couldn't get through the barrier afterward. I can open it later," Shi Yan frowned and pitched his voice.

"Okay. Hurry then." Cang Yun couldn't see Shi Yan, so he just replied and then disappeared. His aura also vanished. He must have gone to another territory.

"I'm sorry I can't tell you the details now," Shi Yan frowned and spoke to Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue, "If you believe me, don't hurry to get there. Wait here for a while. When I'm sure that nothing strange is there, I will bring you in all together."

"I trust you anyway." Cecilia smiled. "I still want to count on you when we get into the Center. Of course, I will advance or step back with you."

Shang Ying Yue was franker. "I believe in my father's keen eyes. If he stole the Guiding Fruit from my brother to give it to you, I'm sure he knew that you have something strange. My father has never wronged anybody. Although I don't know what you have, I'm sure you're not ordinary."

It was rare for Shang Ying Yue to talk this much.

Shi Yan smiled, explained nothing to the two women. He sat down cross-legged and released his co-soul to sense.

Haig, Phelps, and Mia were dashing toward them. Within one day and one night, they were going to reach this area. It wasn't a long time, but it was enough for him to stay here and check the situation.

After verifying Haig's direction, Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness condensed into one flow and slowly entered the thick steam above

the water. He carefully observed and tried to know if his premonition was true...

Shi Yan discolored in fright!

In that short moment, he stood up, his face stern, "I wasn't wrong!"

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were astounded. They screamed, "What's happened?"

"You two follow me. Remember to never leave my sides!" Shi Yan shouted resolutely and told the women. "You guys hold my hands, so you'll be alright!"

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue studied him. Seeing him solemn, they hesitated for a while before raising their jade-like hands and clutching his sides. They leaned on him.

A sharp flow of space energy arose. Shi Yan brought the two women and tore the barrier like a sharp weapon that could break anything. They landed on the new territory and steadied themselves on a big island.

"Ohhh!"

"What's going on?"

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue screamed, their faces baffled as they looked at the area in front of them.

In front of them was a blood sea with murderous, wicked aura shooting up into the sky. Situated in the center of the bobbing blood sea was a bone-dripping white bone gravestone. It looked so evil and peculiar and it released waves of crazy, malignant energy.

Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, Wu Feng, Fuller, Audrey, and the others were swaying in the thick sea of blood. They were fighting against each other around the gravestone. The thick scent of blood filled the entire place.

Besides Audrey and Cang Yun who were nervous but managed to

stay relatively calm, the others were fighting against each other. Their eyes reflected their bloodthirsty desire. Evidently, they would lose their mind and fall into bedevilment.

Audrey and Cang Yun looked calm. But they were actually attacking the gravestone as they knew that it was the key of this formation. They wanted to break that stone as soon as possible.

However, whenever they tried to approach the gravestone, Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, Wu Feng, and the others would dash towards them from everywhere and risk their lives to stop them. The two couldn't do anything to break the stone.

The thick blood sea... the bobbing gravestone... All were strange but they didn't see the enemies.

The situation was developed at the most dangerous point.

Chapter 1147: Turn Earth and Heaven Around

"What's going on?"

"My my!"

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were frightened. They gradually paled and felt dispirited. They couldn't accept it.

"I told you that something is wrong." Shi Yan's face was dark and heavy as he sighed.

Cecilia's and Shang Ying Yue's jade hands clutched onto Shi Yan's arms while he felt so chilled inwardly, his eyes flaring up strange light...

The blood sea with the soul energy that could affect people's minds was the unique feature of the Blood Soul Sea, an ability of his Death power Upanishad! Why did it appear here? Who has set this up?

"Down there! Something is down there!" Cecilia cried.

Shi Yan focused while terrifying divine light shot out from his eyes, drilling like a dazzling dagger through the blood sea.

Under the blood sea, Shi Yan could see bloody shadows moving swiftly as if they were part of the blood sea. If he didn't watch clearly, he wouldn't be able to spot them. Those bloody shadows flew everywhere in the blood sea and discreetly took action.

They didn't hurry to kill the warriors who had gone mad.

In their eyes, those warriors weren't threats. As long as they were still fighting each other, that bunch of insane warriors would kill each other eventually.

Anyway, those bloody shadows were approaching Audrey and Cang Yun. They wanted to stop the two from breaking the

gravestone in the middle of the blood sea. That gravestone was the eye of the formation. Once it was broken, the formation would dissolve immediately.

Cang Yun and Audrey grimaced. Even though the gravestone was right there, it was like it had been planted in the horizon they couldn't reach. In the critical moment, they were often stopped by the warriors from their own side!

Audrey and Cang Yun were so enraged.

They suddenly recalled what Shi Yan had reminded them.

Audrey and Cang Yun were regretting in the blood sea. However, as their vision was blocked, they couldn't see Shi Yan standing out there. They only had that white bone gravestone in their eyes. They had to break it at any cost.

"The two of them aren't affected, but it seems like they have no way to dissolve this blood sea. If it's going this way, those people will fight each other until death. As long as that strange blood sea is here, no one can escape."

Cecilia was so worried.

"Shi Yan, do you have any solution?" Shang Ying Yue gazed at him and shouted, "If they are all over, we will be killed too! No doubt! Without them, we can't resist the God Clan!"

"I know. I'm thinking," frowned Shi Yan.

He was sensing the powerful features of this evil formation. Using the Soul Consciousness to check, he figured out that it wasn't the Blood Soul Sea!

That formation wasn't urged by the power of Death. It was a wicked and evil bloody sacrificial ritual that had gathered the remnant of evils in earth and heaven. It wasn't the real Blood Soul Sea, but it had some features of the Blood Soul Sea...

As his thoughts changed, Shi Yan vaguely guessed that this

sinister formation was somehow a simulation of the Blood Soul Sea from the Death power Upanishad of the Bloodthirsty's bloodline. However, it was just 40% or 50% similar.

Getting sober, Shi Yan hissed, "You guys stay here. I'm going there!"

Shi Yan didn't wait for Cecilia or Shang Ying Yue to react. He jumped directly into the thick blood sea. As soon as his body immersed in the blood sea, the entire world changed!

There was no sky or ground in his eyes but the endless red hue of blood. He seemed to be shrouded by the blood sea. Blood dyed his entire body red. He didn't see Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue anymore. However, he could see Cang Yun and Audrey now...

Just like him, Cang Yun and Audrey were so enraged and restless. They were trying to approach the gravestone in the middle of the sea.

Standing by Cang Yun and Audrey were Fuller, Mo Fou, and Jiao Shan who were attacking the two. And Shi Yan could see blood shadows moving under Cang Yun and Audrey, holding them like sticky, muddy puddles. They couldn't get close to the gravestone.

When he appeared in the blood sea, he immediately felt three ghostly bloody shadows surrounding him. They didn't hurry to attack him directly but they were gathering the energy of this area...

Shortly after, a flow of energy that could madden the soul altar shot over from the white bone gravestone. A soul energy fluctuation that was full of bloodthirsty, insane, and destructive desires intruded his Sea of Consciousness, attempting to take control of his body.

Shi Yan's thoughts flickered. The Poison-dipped Cold Bead emitted the cold energy that neutralized the energy that could disorder the mind. After a while, his eyes became bloodshot and

dull as he began to pretend that his mind occupied. He immediately flew to Cang Yun and Audrey.

When the bloody shadows surrounding him saw him losing control and going to attack Cang Yun and Audrey, they didn't watch him anymore.

He made his way to Cang Yun and Audrey easily. Just like Mo Fou, Wu Feng, he began to attack them too. He didn't look different from the warriors who had their minds occupied. Even Cang Yun and Audrey thought that he was puzzled and had lost his mind.

"Damn!" Audrey cursed. She looked at Shi Yan indignantly. She thought if he knew it was dangerous, why did he jump in?

Cang Yun frowned, his fat face tangling up. He was hesitating and didn't know what to do in this case.

"Help me hold the others for a while. I will make my way to that gravestone!" Suddenly, a soul message arose in Cang Yun's and Audrey's heads.

Cang Yun and Audrey were shaken.

Cang Yun had a strange light in his eyes. He paused for just one second before he had reacted and took action. He stormed towards Shi Yan, gritted his teeth, and attacked Shi Yan. His acting wasn't less interesting than Shi Yan.

Quite the contrary, Audrey's beautiful eyes were bewildered. She had so many doubts. She didn't know why Shi Yan wasn't affected and he could maintain his sound mind. Apparently, her reaction was much slower than Cang Yun's. When she woke up from her thought, she saw that Cang Yun and Shi Yan were fighting furiously like a fire.

Audrey cursed Cang Yun and Shi Yan under her breath that they were two cunning, excellent actors. In fact, they acted really well.

However, she could react eventually. She pretended to know

nothing. Following Cang Yun, she started to attack Mo Fou's team while noticing Shi Yan and waiting for his signal...

As the bloody shadows deemed that Shi Yan had lost his mind, they didn't do anything to shoo him away when he drew near to the gravestone. They were busy keeping their eyes on Audrey and Cang Yun.

"Now!"

All of a sudden, Shi Yan's voice arose in Audrey's and Cang Yun's head like a thunderclap.

Audrey and Cang Yun abruptly took action and drew all attacks of the others on them. At the same time, Shi Yan who was so close to the gravestone and entangled with Audrey and Cang Yun immediately turned around. Starlight bloomed on his body like a galaxy falling from the sky and directly walloped the white-boned gravestone.

Swoosh!

A dazzling halo of sunlight burst out of Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent with his tremendous God power. With the savage, burning Yang energy, it created an intense sunlight and heat pounding on the gravestone like a real sun.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The grumbling sounds arose together with the noises of bones cracking from the gravestone. It was taken down immediately. Pieces of bone rolled and fell.

Anyway, there wasn't a single real bone exploded or smashed.

The pieces of bone that had detached from the gravestone turned into blood light and shot everywhere.

The thick blood sea vanished. The soul energy that could distort people's hearts perished at that moment. The warriors who had their minds occupied stopped attacking each other. The wild, crazy

gleam in their eyes disappeared.

Audrey and Cang Yun weren't attacked anymore. They now gazed at the collapsed gravestone with cold, dark looks.

A skeletal young man of the God Clan sat at the spot where the gravestone was just a moment ago. Blood dripped from his body. One of his knees touched the ground as he was holding a bone and trying to put it back into his abdomen. His manic, resentful eyes fixed on Shi Yan.

This kind of chilling to the bone hatred was like a venomous snake slithering into Shi Yan's heart.

The Gravestone of the White Bone Refining Blood Ghost Grave was Harson himself. When the gravestone collapsed, he also got hit severely. The bone that he had used to create the blood was almost broken, which made him hated Shi Yan to the bone.

As Shi Yan appeared, he had broken Harson's plan. Now, he couldn't kill Audrey or Cang Yun and he was in a dangerous situation. One blink and he was in heaven. Another blink and he had already fallen in Hell. All was because of the grumbling impact from that damn sun!

The bloody shadows slowly emerged. The blood hue and real dripping blood on their bodies disappeared and revealed their true bodies. They were Harson's troop, the members of the Charteris family.

Those Charteris' disciples looked savage and insane. They all had resentful eyes that gazed at Shi Yan. Just like Harson, they hated Shi Yan to their bones.

That man had pretended to be occupied to approach the gravestone. All of a sudden, he struck a lightning-fast attack, which cracked the tombstone and shook them hard. Their bodies also got hurt. Shi Yan alone had smashed their plan. It was a pain that they could hardly accept.

Mo Fou, Jiao Shan, Wu Feng, Sha Zhao got their sane minds back. Looking at the situation here, their faces grimaced.

All of them had their minds occupied! It was unforgivable!

Those warriors put on brutal and dark countenances, glancing at Harson and his warriors. They panted and waited for Audrey's order.

Outside the formation, Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue had a strange light flare in their eyes. They looked at Shi Yan as a thought arose in their mind: They couldn't trust anybody here but Shi Yan!

He alone had overturned earth and heaven and changed the entire situation of their battle. He had done what Cang Yun and Audrey couldn't. In their hearts, only Shi Yan was eligible to be the leader. Audrey and Cang Yun were just his background. They couldn't be the key leaders.

"What are you waiting for? Kill them!" Shi Yan broke the silence and shouted. "Aren't we here to kill the Charteris family's warriors? Did you forget your current humiliation?"

His words had provoked the volcano in Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Fuller's head. They roared and stormed over the others.

Chapter 1148: Seize Power!

Earth-shaking explosions arose from the center of the vast island. It was like the island had to bear a bombarding from meteors. Massive holes appeared. Pieces of land settled deep into the ground.

Mo Fou urged his soul altar. An earth yellow Ethereal Extent arose above his head. Gray dust and sand rose up, creating savage beasts that jumped out of his Ethereal Extent. With the power of Earth, they became real and they wildly assaulted the Charteris family's warriors.

Wu Feng, Fuller, Sha Zhao, Jiao Shan, and Jiao Hai were mobilizing their power Upanishad like the erupting volcanoes.

The freezing, icy world of Ethereal Extent appeared. Another world of fire in Hell glowed dazzlingly. Lightning bolts that could strike the entire sky emerged. All the warriors released their Ethereal Extent, their willpower that could overturn the whole sky. Together, they pressed down and covered the Charteris family's members.

As Wu Feng, Fuller, and the others had control of their bodies back, they started to pour their flames of anger on the Charteris family's warriors. They were all ruthless and insane.

Instantly, strong gusts raked through the island, rolling the sand and rocks. Fire rose high in the sky. Lightning bolts rampaged. It looked exactly like what would be the scene of doomsday.

Shi Yan changed his visage slightly as he looked at the earth-shattering fight. Hearing the violent explosions reverberating, he immediately urged his energy.

Beams of starlight that looked like hair braids weaved with each other, creating a magnificent set of starlight armor and shrouding Shi Yan's God Body. He looked like he was bathing in the starry

night as his entire body looked transparent and twinkled, releasing the marvelous halo of starlight.

Lightning strikes, flames, and gusts of wind were wreaking havoc. However, they were neutralized when they came in contact with his marvelous starlight armor. Nothing could create a scratch on his body.

Cecilia and Sheng Ying Yue slowly moved, standing on his right and left sides. One looked so gently pure while the other was so sexy. They were like two pretty flowers that made people jealous of Shi Yan's beautiful encounter. They were surprised, indeed.

Harson had shot him a malicious look. However, he wasn't free to care about Shi Yan as Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Fuller was attacking him at this moment. He looked helter-skelter indeed.

Besides Cang Yun, Audrey and Shi Yan's group of three, the other had joined the fierce battle as they wanted to vent out their anger by assaulting the Charteris family's warriors.

The flame of war didn't burn only this section. It was spreading to the entire island. Shadows flashed and disappeared into the sky like lightning. In just a blink of an eye, they could travel ten miles away. The warriors had urged their powers to perform the marvelous abilities of earth and heaven. They could see the lightning dragon, the sea of fire, or the world of ice.

However, the terrible damages they left on this island weren't very different. This island was about to break. Explosions reverberated continually.

Audrey's cold eyes moved. Her line of sight raked through the area and then she fixed her eyes on Shi Yan as she asked, "Why weren't you affected by that wicked formation?"

Cang Yun's innocent, fat face beamed as he squinted his eyes. However, he didn't ask anything. He knew that Shi Yan was a member of the Immortal Demon Clan who had fused with the

Origin. Thus, Cang Yun believed that Shi Yan wasn't ordinary and he wasn't astonished that Shi Yan wasn't affected by the evil formation.

Of course, Audrey didn't know this...

Being the Princess of the Imperial Dark Tribe, her innate endowment was the most outstanding among her kind. She understood the essence of cultivating the soul altar. She was tough as she had endured different wicked pieces of training. That was how she wasn't affected in that bloody formation.

In her eyes, Cang Yun and Shi Yan were ordinary warriors, so they wouldn't have the ability to protect their soul alters like she did. Thus, she knew that Cang Yun and Shi Yan were hiding something from her. She wanted to know that.

"I don't know, either," under Audrey and Cang Yun's gazing, Shi Yan just shrugged and shook his head.

Audrey's phoenix eyes narrowed to cold, dangerous slits. She coldly glanced at him and released the prying energy to break into his soul altar...

Bang!

It felt like when you hit a leather drum. Audrey's Soul Consciousness was shaken as she bounced back from Shi Yan's head.

"Under the given circumstances that you're not allowed, please don't touch my soul altar. Of course, if you want to do soul intercourse... it's another story." Shi Yan grinned.

Cecilia and Sheng Ying Yue were so surprised. They looked strange, their eyes discreetly observing Audrey as if they were somehow amused.

Cang Yun grinned. He also shot Audrey an odd look and then at Shi Yan with a little, sneaky ambiguous smile.

The arrogant and proud Audrey's exquisite face stiff. It seemed like she had never experienced the same teasing from her male friends before. For the time being, her beautiful eyes looked puzzled. She pulled herself together after a long moment, wearing a very strange countenance. "Are you teasing me?" She asked to check if it was true.

"Ah no," Shi Yan felt funny as he shook his head. "I want to make it clear that I don't like my soul altar being touched. Unless a woman wants to do soul intercourse with me... I will consider carefully."

"Lowly little human brat! You dare to talk so vulgarly to me. I doubt that you want to live anymore." Magically, Audrey's voice was calmer than she had ever been before. Her beautiful eyes turned into slits like icicles that gazed at Shi Yan. Then, she said faintly, "Wait until we've finished Harson and killed all the members of the Charteris here. Then, we'll talk."

"Nah, you guys. Don't be like that. It's our priority to deal with the God Clan. After that, you can play however you want," Cang Yun tried to ease the tension.

Too bad for him, Audrey didn't give him face. She snorted arrogantly and lifted her face up. She didn't even bat an eye at him.

Shi Yan shrugged, talking as if nothing mattered to him. "Well, help yourself. I've yielded to you and have been willing to listen to your orders. It's because I believe you can guide people on the right track. But... it turns out that it's not like that. You do make mistakes. This time, your mistake has almost killed all of our warriors. I did remind you, but you didn't listen."

Cang Yun frowned and thoughts rolled in his head. His bead-like eyes brightened as he suddenly got something.

Shi Yan had to take this chance to seize power!

Before this event, Fuller and the others had deemed that Audrey

was the best choice and that she could lead them to resist the God Clan and claim the final victory. It was because Audrey had never made a mistake before...

But it was different now...

If Shi Yan hadn't smashed the gravestone, Fuller, Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, and everybody else would have been killed by the Charteris family's warriors. None of them could have escaped.

Especially since Shi Yan had told them that something was wrong before they got here, Audrey couldn't sense the abnormality or buy what he told her. With all of these and the support from Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, Wu Feng, Cecilia, and Cang Yun himself, it would be possible for Shi Yan to take control.

If he could defeat Audrey, it meant that he was stronger than Audrey. And as he could sense the changes of the earth and heaven energy, he would have a bigger chance!

Cang Yun was discreetly excited. He wanted to support Shi Yan!

He knew that if Shi Yan could become the leader of this group, it would be much easier for them. No one could control them, so they would be free to do many things.

"Big mouth, though." Audrey's beautiful eyes were cold. Soul energy emitted from her more fiercely. She coldly looked at Shi Yan as if she was gathering energy.

Mo Fou, Wu Feng, Fuller, and the others were chasing the warriors of the Charteris family around the island. Since they were doubled in number, they had a significant advantage. The warriors of the Charteris family were struggling crazily. However, their room was being narrowed.

If nothing unexpected happened, Mo Fou, Wu Feng's team would win in the end. They could clear the warriors of the Charteris family quickly.

While they were fighting, Shi Yan and Audrey didn't exchange a

word. The atmosphere around them was tense and stiff as if they would burst out fighting against each other in any minute.

As Cang Yun wished Shi Yan to successfully seize power, he didn't advise the two but pushed it further. He smiled, his eyes squinting. "I think it's not a bad idea to make Shi Yan the leader. Without him, I'm afraid that all of us would have suffered." His voice was like a thunderclap that was sent around the island. Everybody could hear him clearly.

Cecilia and Sheng Ying Yue stood on his left and right. Of course, they supported him. They nodded continually upon hearing Cang Yun.

Audrey's eyes were as cold as ice. Her perfectly proportioned body shivered. Obviously, she was enraged.

"You and I will compete once," Shi Yan appraised Cang Yun for understanding him tacitly. He rose his voice, "You and I will take action to kill the members of the Charteris family. Let's see who can kill more. The loser will give up the leader position and listen to the winner. Do you dare to play with me?"

Every warrior on the island could hear him.

Mo Fou, Fuller, Sha Zhao, and Wu Feng were astounded. Many warriors who had followed Audrey earlier just listened. No one opened their mouths to question or object him.

If Shi Yan had challenged Audrey like that earlier, her followers would have swarmed him with insults and attacks. However, since Audrey had just made a fatal mistake and Shi Yan had saved them from the wicked formation...

They suddenly recognized that Audrey couldn't always be right and that she wasn't their only choice to be the leader. Shi Yan's appearance was also an available option.

They wanted to see who is stronger.

"Good solution!" Cang Yun shouted, "I agree with this method.

You guys don't need to fight against each other to reduce our powers. Creating a competition upon killing our enemies, whether you lose or win, you contribute to our team. I like it! I support it!"

"We also support this idea!" Mo Fou, Wu Feng, Jiao Hai, Jiao Shan, Sha Zhao, and the warriors coming with Shi Yan had woken up after Shi Yan had saved them one more time. They yelled in agreement.

Fuller and the others remained silent. They just tried to attack the Charteris family's members more harshly. They wanted to circle those warriors like they were luring animals into cages.

"Okay, I agree." Audrey took a deep breath. She smiled coldly. "Low creature, you don't know how high the sky is. Today, I will show you why the Imperial Dark Tribe is called one of the Great Four Creatures! Let's make this bet!"

Chapter 1149: It's the First One!

In the vast woods, Haig, Mia, Phelps, and the warriors of the God Clan were dashing like lightning. God power that emitted from their bodies were rattling the woods as they were heading to the island where Harson's team and Shi Yan's team were fighting at their maximum speed.

Suddenly, the Sound Stone in Mia's sleeve sounded ear-piercingly. Mia paled, her finger fiddling the stone. She cursed out loud, "Harson is engaging in battle with them."

"Damn!" Haig darkened his face, his countenance solemn.

"That lunatic!" Phelps couldn't help but curse. "We've noticed him and asked him to be careful. He didn't listen! If he contacts us now, there is only one possibility! He can't endure it anymore."

Haig and Mia nodded in agreement.

They knew Harson well. Unless he was backed to the dead corner without any possible solution, with his stubborn head, he would never request for a rescue. This mad man was really stubborn.

If he called Mia, it meant that his team was besieged in a really perilous situation without a single chance to overturn. Otherwise, he would still make the last bet. He would never admit his failure. This man was always that brave and stubborn.

"We must go faster." At the critical moment, Haig was always terrifyingly placid. "At our speed, I'm afraid that we can't help him on time. Okay, we should go faster." He looked at Phelps, Mia, and Payton.

Phelps, Mia, and Payton all had secret treasures and they had cultivated a unique technique of the God Clan that would boost their energy for a short time and create a tremendous explosive power.

"Okay!"

Mia, Phelps, Payton, and the three other God warriors nodded, their face dark and solemn.

In the next moment, flows of ruthless, savage auras gushed out from the bodies of the seven warriors including Haig. They had transformed into their Undying God Bodies that looked formidable. Energy shot out from them all along the way.

With the furious energy, the seven warriors turned into seven sharp swords, flying close to the ground towards Harson's. Ancient trees along their way were burst off, their branches and leaves turning into powder and scattering away.

On the misty island in the sea territory.

Fuller, Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, and Wu Feng released their Ethereal Extent, circulating their powers Upanishad. They formed groups of two or three to attack the Charteris family's warriors. Cang Yun, Cecilia, and Shang Ying Yue weren't idle anymore. They scattered and vaguely surrounded Harson in the center.

"Be careful with those lunatics!" Cang Yun's voice sounded like a giant bronze bell that reached every corner of the island. "Try your best not to engage in close combat with them. They will drag you to death altogether."

No one dared to ignore Cang Yun's reminder.

Because just a moment ago, two warriors under Audrey's command were killed all together with a warrior of the Charteris family right before they could kill him. That madman had exploded his own soul altar and created a tornado that covered the other two immediately.

After the shock waves ceased, of course, the Charteris family's warrior was gone, but he had taken with him the two warriors who had attacked him all the time.

The manic disciples of the Charteris family didn't have

consciousness or fear. If they found that the situation couldn't be saved anymore, they would try their last attempt to take a bite of your flesh or even bone before they died. They would never let you finish your deed with ease.

Thus, without waiting for Cang Yun to stress it further, when they were fighting those lunatics, they were all cautious.

Because of that, although they had fought for a long time, the Charister family had lost just one warrior, the one who had exploded himself. Since they didn't dare to approach the Charister warriors, the others still had room to resist.

This situation had maintained until Shi Yan and Audrey joined the fight. Significant changes were made afterward...

Shortly after Audrey had agreed on the competition with Shi Yan, she had set her eyes on a member of the Charteris family. She coldly commanded the others to leave that man and then urged her power.

A soul magnetic field that could cover the entire island gushed out from Audrey's lean and graceful body. In that glimpse, people felt a strong vibe in their soul. They had to pull themselves together and calm down their soul to prevent it from flying out of the soul altar.

They now hallucinated that Audrey had turned into a soul vortex that released a large magnetic field to draw all their soul in.

When Audrey performed her strange power Upanishad, everybody's soul altars were affected; their energy attacks, which used to be smooth were halted and stagnant, preventing them from using their skills.

In this area, there were only two warriors who weren't affected by Audrey's power. They were Shi Yan and Cang Yun...

Only the two of them had strong soul altars that Audrey's soul magnetic field couldn't affect. Thus, their powers Upanishads

weren't sluggish.

The warrior of the Charteris family who had to bear Audrey's soul magnetic field was at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm. He cultivated Wood power Upanishad. His soul was drawn out of his body, moving above his head.

This man's soul was dim and gray and it looked like a mossy, ancient tree was planted in his head. His soul didn't have any gleam of fear. Quite the contrary, it had a madly disordered soul energy fluctuation.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

Wood power of the Five Elements was urged. A terrifying commotion arose under Audrey's feet. A long, narrow climbing plant like an ivy with its branches slithered like snakes animatedly and wound around Audrey's graceful body. That plant then sprouted so many vines with teeth and started to bite and saw Audrey's beautiful thighs and delicate waist.

The ancient gray tree soul of that Charteris warrior withered at a speed that the naked eye could observe. His vitality was drawn away rapidly.

At the same time, the peculiar, evil vines coiling around Audrey were strengthened rapidly. They became tougher and more agile with vitality. It could be compared to the thickest armor and it shrouded Audrey. At the same time, the toothy vines were still biting and tearing her body.

It was another form of jade and rock shattering together!

Each member of the Charteris family was that extreme. As long as they could kill the others, they could even destroy themselves to do that. They seemed to have no mental barrier.

Audrey apparently had underestimated the craziness of the Charteris warriors. Being wound by the vines, she looked like a soft fruit growing in the center of a big tree. As the other's soul was

withering, her body was squeezed and it made her look bony.

However, no matter how hard the vines had tried to bite or cut her, they couldn't leave any wound on her body.

People knew that the God Body of the Imperial Dark Tribe warriors wasn't as strong as their soul altar. Evidently, Audrey was an exception. Her lean, soft body had an intimidating, surging energy, her snow-white skin and jade bones containing powerful tides of energy.

Audrey swayed. Fire rings rolled down from her snow-white neck, turning bigger on the way. Just like hula hoops, the fire rings got bigger and slowly fell from her thighs to her ankles.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

The ancient tree suddenly ignited. It wasn't the vines on her body, but the tree that jutted from the head of the Charteris warrior in front of her!

That man's dim, gray soul smoked and then burned off. People could vaguely hear the shrieks and screech when his soul met death.

Rings of fire expanded from her body. The vines with teeth that were squeezing her body were burned down like the snake bone. They fell off her body.

She wiped the charred remains of those vines on her body in disgust. Lifting her head to look at Shi Yan, she told him coldly, "That's the first one."

Then, a cold light flared in her eyes. She flashed and disappeared shortly before reappearing in front of another Charteris warrior. She told Jiao Shan and Jiao Hai who was fighting with him, "You guys stay away."

Jiao Shan and Jiao Hai wore cold faces but they didn't dare to say much. After nodding, they moved away and gave her the opponent.

Cang Yun, Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, and the Wu brothers were surrounding Harson, but they still had time to watch. Cang Yun, Cecilia, and Shang Ying Yue shivered inwardly as they were worried about Shi Yan.

The terrifying deed that Audrey had just performed made them wary in fear. Finally, they knew that it wasn't only that the ancient continent didn't shackle her that made her the leader of this team.

This woman had a peculiar and unpredictable power Upanishad. At the same time, the accumulated energy in her body was pure and abundant. Apparently, she didn't have the common weakness of Imperial Dark Tribe warriors, which was a fragile body. She had used her strength to get people's approval.

Seeing her kill one enemy in a short moment, Cang Yun and the two women were anxious. They doubted themselves whether or not it was a good move to support Shi Yan. They didn't think that Shi Yan was strong enough.

Because they could see that Shi Yan was fighting a member of the Charteris family... his power seemed to be just equal. He couldn't even take the upper hand.

"He has just Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Maybe we've evaluated his competence too highly! Wrong move!" Cang Yun, Cecilia, and Shang Ying Yue sighed inwardly.

Shi Yan's opponent cultivated Ice power Upanishad.

This Charteris warrior had ice shrouding his entire body and even the ground under his feet was frosty. He was using his power Upanishad to create a favorable battlefield.

Wherever he moved, the place then had glacier and snow that created a whole world of ice and snow. Sometimes, hidden arrows made of sharp metal energy would shot towards Shi Yan...

This man also cultivated Metal power Upanishad. However, he

hadn't mastered his powers Upanishad enough to combine the two. Still, he made some mistakes.

However, his real competence was stronger than the man Audrey had killed. As he could use two powers Upanishads at the same time when fighting Shi Yan, he didn't fall into a perilous situation. He had even licked his lips and grinned fiendishly with a cruel face. He wanted to kill Shi Yan.

His eyes changed. A savage, murderous aura burst out of his chest. A piece of bloody bone emerged with the evil energy fluctuation from his body as if it could erode people's soul.

His eyes were so strange as he gazed at Shi Yan. Shortly after, a beam of violent soul energy shot out of his eyes and entered Shi Yan's soul altar!

Shi Yan was shaken, his face a little strange. Abruptly, divine light shot out radiantly from his eyes.

What he was waiting for was this moment!

Chapter 1150: The Bloody Bone Has a New Owner

Before Shi Yan had entered the island, he had sensed a strange energy that had stirred up his acupuncture points. It was the wicked formation that Harson's team had created: White Bone Refining Blood Ghost Grave...

He jumped into that evil formation and the familiar aura became more intense to him. The thick, pungent blood sea and the distorting soul attack were the unique abilities of the Blood Soul Sea!

The ghost grave built by the blood-dripping bones wasn't broken. Even a piece wasn't chipped off when his sunlight attacked it. The tenacious bones had surprised him a lot. After that moment, he confirmed that the bones that built the ghost grave weren't from the God Body of Harson's team.

At Harson's team's realm and power, their body could never create blood-dripping bones that were that hard.

Each of those bloody bones had a murderous, malicious aura that could shoot up into the sky. They seemed to carry a terrifyingly brutal mood that could sink people's souls and then occupy their minds. Those bones belonged to someone much stronger...

That person had to belong to the Bloodthirsty's bloodline, someone cultivating Death power Upanishad. His realm was likely extremely high and his body was almost unbreakable. He had developed his skeleton, and filled it with the malignant energy of earth and heaven, which hadn't faded after so many years.

Harson and his eighteen subordinates had bloody bones for each that they had to use their soul energy, blood, and Qi to nurture. They used and condensed the brutal, murderous Qi in their bodies to create the White Bone Refining Blood Ghost Grave with those

bones as the keys.

Boom!

The bloody bone inside the opponent standing in front of Shi Yan released a negative, ruthless energy fluctuation, running directly into his brain and giving him bloody illusions.

He saw the blood sea swarming over and sinking him in the warm, viscous blood. The strong smell of blood filled his nostrils. Islets of white bones emerged and gave him an evil, wicked impression.

These illusions were what he had experienced that year when he sank his body in the blood pond for the first time he had descended to Grace Mainland.

However, after so many years, he wasn't the man of that old day. The illusion of the blood pond couldn't hypnotize his mind. Quite the contrary, while his thoughts were flickering, his acupuncture points suddenly had a strong suction force!

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Evil energy fluctuations arose from that warrior. A blood-dripping bone with a murderous aura shooting up into the sky tried to escape his body uncontrollably.

The man discolored. He hastened to gather his power and spirit to control that bloody bone.

However, right at this moment, a flow of negative energy that was ten times more powerful than his swarmed over him like a real blood sea and intruded deep into his soul.

His eyes went blank. He stood still as if he was confined by Space power Upanishad.

Swish!

The bone that he had refined for years suddenly danced and stirred up his internal organs, creating bleeding holes in his body.

The warrior looked blank as if he didn't feel pain. He was idle and didn't move an inch. He seemed to lose his soul to the hand of Death.

No one could notice that a beam of Soul Consciousness had broken into this man's soul altar when the blood sea swarmed over him. It swayed deep in his brain and took the secrets from his memory...

A sealed, secure memory was taken away and it released the most mysterious, hidden horrible pieces of memory.

Many years ago, when this man was still a warrior at King God Realm, one Elder of the Charteris family had taken him to a hidden cave where he had to offer a wisp of his Soul Seal to Harson who was also a young man at that moment. After that, he had to vow to worship Harson for the rest of his life.

Together with him, there were seventeen other teenagers sent to the cave. They all had to give Harson a wisp of their soul that connected to Harson's soul.

It was an evil title deed.

When Harson's soul was destroyed, they would all be killed and they would follow him. Their deaths would come instantly.

But if their souls perished, it didn't do anything to Harson's soul. That man could still live safe and sound. Apparently, this wasn't a fair contract.

After that, this group of eighteen teenagers was each given a bloody bone. They heard that the bones belonged to a formidable expert with a tremendous evil aura. The Charteris family had studied for years to understand the mysteries and get the essence of it.

Each of them received a bloody bone and planted it into their bodies. When the bloody bone got into their abdomen, each of them had to endure the most terrible pain in this world, which

made them cry and screech for a long time.

The fusion progress was so strenuous and painful. They had spent eight years with a lot of precious materials to finish this bone fusion. Then, they were taught to use the White Bone Refining Blood Ghost Grave, making tests for the evil power they got from the bones. Gradually, they became stronger and they were the most loyal henchmen of Harson.

It felt like Shi Yan had just watched the experiences of that man's whole life. His Soul Consciousness tied that piece of memory and watched all things the man had experienced.

Shi Yan finally confirmed his presumption.

That year, when the eight subordinates of Bloodthirsty were defeated in the battle against the God Clan, the Charteris family had tried their best to kill the warrior who cultivated Death power Upanishad. Afterward, they had taken his bones and refined it with evil techniques before implanting them into the bodies of Harson's subordinates. The bones then helped them promote the most wicked secret formation that greatly assisted Harson in fighting.

He knew what he wanted to know. Shi Yan's thoughts flickered and a cold aura overflowed his opponent's soul altar.

It was the poison from the Poison-dipped Cold Bead filling his soul altar and melting it down. His soul evaporated like mist and returned to earth and heaven.

Crack! Crack!

The bone stirred inside his body and crushed him. All of a sudden, it flew out and fell towards Shi Yan.

When he grabbed the bone, Shi Yan had a gleam of sadness in his eyes as he sighed.

The owner of the bloody bone was an expert cultivating Death power Upanishad to the top level. Although he had fallen for many

years, his bones still had frightening powers with a terrible aura that could simulate the effects of the Blood Soul Sea. However, even though he was such a character, he was gone.

Shi Yan felt so sorry for the Bloodthirsty Force.

While he didn't notice, his soul altar spun. The Death power Upanishad sent out a magical beam of energy that could trigger some resonance...

Swish! Swish!

Two blood lights flashed and flew towards him like blood lightning. They were the other two blood-dripping bones!

Although the bodies of the Charteris warrior who had exploded himself and the one Audrey had killed were gone, the bloody bones remained. They were guided by the energy from Shi Yan's acupuncture points and they gathered in front of him.

Even though these bones had been refined for years by the Elders of the Charteris, they still had a deep, everlasting fixation!

Because of this undying fixation, although Harson's eighteen warriors had fused with them, they couldn't control the bones as much as they pleased. Through the years, the deep fixation had been imprinted in the bones so that they would never be able to wash it away.

Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, Cang Yun also paid attention to Shi Yan while fighting Harson. They were so baffled.

The fight between Shi Yan and his opponent was strange, indeed. It was obvious that their power was equal. However, they got the result of that battle quickly. They didn't see clearly what had happened over there.

When they noticed the commotion, they found that Shi Yan's opponent had his soul perish and Shi Yan was taking the bone from that man's body! All they could see were the blood-dripping bone in Shi Yan's hand and two more floating in front of him. This

scene was strange and evil.

Even Cang Yun now felt a chill in his heart.

Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, Wu Feng, and Jiao Shan were solemn as they watched Shi Yan draw his opponent's bone. They felt the hair on the back of their heads raising.

In their eyes, Shi Yan was much more frightening than Audrey.

No one recognized Harson with his terrified eyes. Watching Shi Yan from a distance, he was screaming in his head!

No one understood the meaning of the bones Shi Yan was holding better than Harson. Each of those blood-dripping bones belonged to the skeleton of a brutal demon. The Charteris family had scraped those bones and soaked them in different kinds of evil blood to give them the unrivaled, ruthless power!

Why were they in his hand?! How did he take them out?!

Harson screamed in his head, his face distorting. He could feel the bone in his own body choking him by the throat and giving him a faint pain. He knew that it was so wrong.

"The second one."

Suddenly, Audrey's arrogant, cold voice arose one more time. A wave of surging soul power arose and sent flames up into the sky.

Another member of the Charteris family was killed. Audrey had used her flaming Origin to burn his soul altar. That was how he lost his Life Seal.

However, it wasn't easy to Audrey this time. Before he died, he had exploded his God Body and used a blood-dripping bone to attack her. With his explosive energy and seething blood, he sent away the Blood Qi that could shake the sky. Blood splashed on her body. She now had a pale tinge on her icy arrogant face.

She seemed to get hurt.

However, the bloody bone wasn't smashed under her power. It

floated in front of her as it was lonely that it had lost its master.

She shouted and a look was shot to her from layers of obstacles. Audrey snorted, looking back and challenging him, "I hope you aren't too weak."

Boom!

An evil, hostile aura emitted from the bone in front of her. The piece of bone that had hurt her became wild. While its murderous aura shot up into the sky, it trembled for a while before shooting toward the direction her beautiful eyes had sent away the challenge.

Just like other bones, this piece of bone also flew towards Shi Yan, hovering in front of him inside a scarlet halo.

Audrey looked shocked, but she didn't know what had happened. She just looked at Shi Yan in fright

Having the same panic were Cang Yun, Cecilia, the members of the Charteris family... and Harson!

"Impossible! Impossible!"

Harson suddenly cried as if he was completely insane. Thick spikes grew on his skeletal body abruptly. Scaly silver armor arose on his skin. The energy of his God Body doubled in just a blink of an eye. He rushed through Cang Yun and directly attacked Shi Yan.

Chapter 1151: Immortal Body!

Harson's crazy, ear-piercing scream reverberated on the chaotic island.

At this moment, everybody could see Harson risking his life. With the Undying God Body, Harson's power had rocketed. He glided and pressed Cang Yun like a cold lightning strike attack.

The earth under his feet was torn apart, creating a deep abyss. Many rocks by the beach exploded. Harson's power was bursting out to the utmost.

Shi Yan was holding a bone in his hand while the other three floating in front of him. He looked absorbed in his thoughts.

Cang Yun, Cecilia, and Shang Ying Yue had lost their target. They were baffled as they looked at Shi Yan from a distance without a clue. As Audrey had just killed one warrior, seeing Harson aim at Shi Yan in his Undying God Body, she didn't continue to find another target but watched Shi Yan too.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

As Harson was coming, the four bloody bones in front of Shi Yan suddenly released a wiggling energy fluctuation.

Shi Yan frowned and grabbed the three floating bones with his free left hand. He discreetly urged his energy and sent it into those blood-dripping bones...

The blood-dripping bones didn't have only the fixation of the warrior who had cultivated Death power Upanishad but also an exquisite, complicated formation drawn by blood that seemed to be controlled by Harson.

As Shi Yan received the memory of the enemy, he knew that the formation drawn on the bloody bone was the foundation of the evil contract!

Harson had used this evil formation to control eighteen warriors under his command. His soul had connected with their souls to rule them and at the same time, he could control their blood-dripping bones too. It was a sinister plan that the Charteris had to use that involved those gory bones.

The evil formation on the four bones sent out energy fluctuations. The blood lines wiggled, making the bones struggle and attempting to fly to Harson.

Harson came like an evil spirit. A pointy tip of a bone emerged from the abdomen of his skeletal body. The brutal, surging energy torrentially circulated around Harson and made his Undying God Body even thinner.

Shi Yan was astounded.

Harson's God Body got thinner in just a blink of an eye. It was very similar to when Shi Yan used the Rampage. Being the core member and the outstanding talent of the Charteris family, what he had harvested from the bloody bone wasn't something that his subordinates could have.

This man also had special knowledge of using the negative energy through his piece of bloody bone. He could use the bone to urge the negative energy and push his body to the Rampage state. It surprised Shi Yan a lot.

And the piece of bone hiding in his body wasn't really similar to the ones that Shi Yan was holding. Harson's bone was much bigger and longer with more fiercer energy!

More importantly, that piece of bloody bone had completely fused with him. It wasn't affected by the energy from Shi Yan's acupuncture points. It had become a part of Harson's God Body, a wicked precious weapon, and a piece of his soul.

The bloody bone in Harson body was the foundation of the skeleton of the expert who had cultivated Death power Upanishad.

The Charteris family had refined it and made it the eye of the formation, which had the key formation of that evil formation.

When he urged the energy from the bloody bone, the four bones in Shi Yan's grip were shaking. The bones released a resistant force as they wanted to get rid of Shi Yan's hand!

Cang Yun, Cecilia, Shi Yan, and Audrey didn't have an opponent currently so they all looked at that area, their faces changing in fear. They were so frightened because of the power Harson was showing.

They all found how Harson could affect the bloody bones. They could sense a terrible, evil energy from Harson's God Body. They knew that Harson, when he was crazy, would urge the power of the bloody bone as he wanted to strike Shi Yan with his most brutal attack.

Cang Yun and Audrey were frightened. They now knew that they had underestimated Harson's toughness. The real competence of this lunatic from the Charteris family was much stronger than what they had thought. This man had the power to fight against Haig.

Cang Yun and Audrey suddenly recognized that some rumors they had heard were not just lies. Many people of the God Clan said that Harson and Haig didn't get along well. He didn't put Haig in his eyes. Cang Yun and Audrey had heard about this, but they had never thought it was true.

However, now they knew that Harson did have the power to fight Haig!

Harson had transformed into the Undying God Body and he was mobilizing the energy in the bloody bone. He was showing his earth-destroying power that made Cang Yun and Audrey think that they didn't have the power to confront him directly.

Everybody was dumbstruck to see the power Harson had

accumulated. As Cang Yun and Audrey had sensitive Soul Consciousnesses, they discreetly sensed and found that the energy Harson had condensed was as powerful as what a Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm could reach!

Unbelievable!

Nobody thought that Shi Yan at Second Sky of Ethereal God Realm could resist Harson. No one favored Shi Yan anymore.

Cang Yun, Cecilia, and Shang Ying Yue discolored in fright. They hurried to dash forward to help Shi Yan deal with Harson.

"What are you waiting for? Stop Harson! If Harson doesn't die, none of us can dodge this kalpa!" Cang Yun's fat face twisted. Unrivaled energy fluctuations gushed out from him. In just a blink of an eye, he crossed Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue like a shooting cannonball.

Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Fuller were standing close to Shi Yan. They discolored upon seeing the savage Harson. None of them answered Cang Yun's call.

Quite the contrary, Sha Zhao, the one who held a grudge against Shi Yan, dashed over to help him fight Harson.

Of course, no one could confront Harson alone. Everybody knew how formidable he was.

The evil, murderous aura shot over torrentially. Harson's Undying God Body was also bony with many spikes like a ferocious hedgehog. He stormed in the sky, his terrifying energy and dark clouds shading the entire sky. He gave people heavy pressure.

Under such pressure, many people couldn't breathe and they couldn't even stand upright.

Being Harson's real target, Shi Yan was under an enormous mountain. His knees made "crack crack" sounds and slowly sank as if he was about to kneel down.

Everybody screamed in their heads.

"ROARRR!"

All of a sudden, Shi Yan let out a wild roar like a strong, savage beast.

First, a wave of crazy, bloodthirsty, brutal, fearless, and destructive energy burst out like a wrecking, terrible flood. A blood column that naked eye could see shot right up into the sky from Shi Yan's body. The bone-cracking sounds reached people's ears.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Similar evil-looking spikes jutted out from Shi Yan's shoulders, elbows, and knees. The natural armor emerged from his skin. Shi Yan's God Body appeared like a Demongorgon who had experienced thousands of battles. This shape of him showcased the beauty of the explosive power.

"Immortal Demon Clan!

"Immortal Demon Clan!"

"Immortal Body!"

Audrey, Cecilia, and Cang Yun shouted at the same time.

As Sha Zhao was about to join the battle, he was swept away by the wave of crazy, bloodthirsty, brutal, fearless, and destructive energy. He seemed to be held but he struggled to take another step forward.

Everybody was petrified. After so many years, today, on this ancient continent, they finally saw the Immortal Demon Clan, one of the legendary Great Four Creatures. The Immortal Body, the only thing that could rival the Undying God Body appeared in their views like that.

While the onlookers were still frightened, a massive bloody hand seal arose and pounded on Harson.

"Death Seal!"

Harson had a dazzling light in his eyes as he shouted.

Boom!

The intimidatingly crazy energy in Harson's God Body was urged, impacting the Death Seal. A loud explosion that had almost stopped people's hearts from beating reverberated.

The space between Harson and Shi Yan suddenly collapsed as if it had sunk into the void that they couldn't see. People then felt that their sight was somehow strangely distorted.

Harson descended from the sky like a giant hammer pounding on the ground. Immediately, he sank into the ground of the ancient continent twenty meters in front of Shi Yan.

Shi Yan kneeled, his spikes pierced through the earth as he panted with blood red eyes.

The intimidation of Harson's power was beyond his estimation. This man was worth the name of the God Clan's Son of Heaven. He could surely compare to Haig. Besides the lucky opportunity of having the Origin and lack of placidity, he wasn't weaker than Haig at all.

He dared to look down on Haig because he was full of confidence. He wasn't afraid of any young expert of his clan. And only he dared not to put Haig in his eyes.

Although Harson was at Ethereal God Realm, he could gather the energy of a Second Sky of Incipient God Realm expert. This man was really extraordinarily tyrannical. He was worth the title of the future leader of the mad Charteris family.

Shi Yan touched the ground with one of his knees and quickly gathered energy. In the massive hole in front of him, Harson's terrifying energy was rocketing continually. Evidently, he was accumulating energy for the next tremendous attack. Cecilia, Mo Fou, Audrey, and the others were bewildered as they looked at Shi

Yan as if they were watching a beast.

Except for Cang Yun, nobody knew Shi Yan's real identity. His sudden transformation was unpredictable to anybody.

Audrey's persistent arrogance was reduced. She looked at Shi Yan's new shape and felt much better...

"No wonder why he's so strong. Turns out that he's from the Immortal Demon Clan. I knew it. How could a low human dare to provoke my eminence? It's easy to understand now." Audrey sighed. When she found out that Shi Yan had the Immortal Demon Body, her mental barrier was lifted.

Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Jiao Shan exchanged looks. They could see a shock in each other's eyes. Now when they looked at Shi Yan, they all showed respect.

Although the Immortal Demon Clan of the Great Four Creatures had been secluding for so many years, the legend of this clan's power and superiority was everlasting. Every strong clan knew about the intimidation of this clan. They knew that this clan was the prominent clan that could resist the God Clan.

Mo Fou's team's eyes brightened.

Chapter 1152: Frantic Showdown!

Shi Yan bursting out was a thrill to everybody.

While Haig, Phelps, and Mia were dashing toward them, Harson had shown his real competence, which was against the rules of Nature. In this challenge, Mo Fou and Wu Feng hoped that they could finish this battle soon, so they could save more energy to deal with Haig.

At the same time, the power that Shi Yan suddenly performed, which could rival Harson's, was no doubt a tonic to people that cheered them up.

Everybody gazed at Shi Yan.

With one knee touching the ground, his entire body was covered in armor made of tough keratin, giving people the beauty of power. His spikes gave people a feeling of something so sharp that it could break anything.

Waves of evil, bloodthirsty energy gushed out from his God Body. His energy was so condensed that it almost couldn't be real. Like a bunch of sinister ghosts, they flew around him, inaudibly roaring and crying as if they wanted to crush and tear the world apart.

Boom!

In the loud explosions that shook the entire land and mountains, Harson's bony hedgehog body got out of the ground and he stood in front of Shi Yan once again.

Deep inside Harson's pupils was a dark, sinister halo. A piece of bone jutted out from his abdomen, which was carved an exquisite formation. The evil formation spun like a vortex. It was nibbling and devouring Harson's blood and flesh, making it more terrifying.

ROAR! ROAR!

The roaring of a beast who was about to be extinct came from the

mouths of the remaining Charteris family's warriors. As they had pledged to serve Harson with their whole lives and offered him a wisp of Soul Seal, they currently acted like wild, enraged beasts.

The cold, crazy gleam appeared deep in their pupils, making them fighting puppets without consciousness. Everyone was shivering upon seeing them at this moment.

The power of each warrior of the Charteris family increased by 30%!

Mo Fou, Fuller, and the others fighting them had to discolor when they burst out as if they weren't afraid of death. Mo Fou's team had to dodge.

Harson's warriors roared and gathered by Harson like a horde of evil dragons. The bones in their abdomen tore their skin to jut out of their bodies, releasing terrible, brutal energy.

"They are burning their souls!"

Audrey couldn't help but shout, her face icy cold. She reminded people to be more cautious.

It was worth their reputation of the mad Charteris family!

Cang Yun, Cecilia, Wu Feng, and the others changed their visages. They were so surprised and instinctively had such thoughts in their minds.

Harson was accumulating energy while his malicious eyes gazed at Shi Yan. After his subordinates gathered, he still didn't move, but the frightening aura on his body was rising higher and higher.

And the warriors of the Charteris family also had their power increase, making their general competence much higher.

"Damn!" Cang Yun screamed in fright, his face getting serious for the first time. "Harson can draw their energy, so he still can increase his power!"

Everybody else discolored.

When Harson struck his strongest attack, his abundant energy could be compared to Second Sky of Incipient God Realm expert, which was already terrifying. And now as he could gather energy from his subordinates through the sinister contract, how terribly strong could he be?

"Shi Yan! Shi Yan is also increasing his energy!"

Cecilia covered her mouth in awe. She looked so disbelieving, her sexy body shivering slightly.

Everybody looked at Shi Yan, their eyes hot. They were all shocked and baffled. Many of them couldn't help but shout in fright.

Shi Yan now had garnet eyes while blood mist covering him and it diffused the pungent smell of fresh blood. Brutal, wild, bloodthirsty, and fearless energies generated and intertwined to create demons that looked real.

The terrifying energy magnetic field he had built was also expanding and increasing, which wasn't less than Harson's.

People gawked and dropped their jaws.

No one knew that the Essence Qi of the four Charteris warriors and the two from Audrey's side had flooded Shi Yan's acupuncture points. He didn't filter or refine it to absorb but used it directly. He forcefully compressed the energy and used it all to create the Death God Domain from Third Sky of Rampage.

The Essence Qi of the six dead warriors at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm was used in this battle in conjunction with his own terrifying abilities. Together, they increased his aura.

If he had remained the human form, he wouldn't have supported such power. He would have exploded and cracked his lungs and heart. However, in the form of the Immortal Demon Body, he had Immortal Demon Blood running through his veins with immense power. With this domineeringly, tenacious body, he had the ability

to join this interesting battle!

Harson had used the wicked contract to collect his subordinates' energy while Shi Yan used the ability of his Devouring power Upanishad to capture the Essence Qi of the dead warriors. Both of them were using extreme methods to rocket their power in just a short time!

"Don't act rashly!"

Seeing Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, and Sha Zhao silently approaching Harson and Shi Yan to try to affect their battle, Audrey shouted to stop them, "Unless you guys could boost your energy to their level, you will only get hurt if you go there."

Cang Yun's fat face shivered as he said, "She's right. Unless you guys could reach their level, you shouldn't come near them. Your bodies and powers aren't enough to endure their attacks. You should just... stay away."

Although Cecilia's group didn't believe in Audrey's opinions, they knew that Cang Yun wouldn't lie. They hesitated and then stopped.

At the same time, Harson and Shi Yan were like two wounded beasts roaring and howling. Earth-shaking energy arose from their bodies and expanded everywhere as if they wanted to destroy the entire island. They had created a storm energy magnetic field that could crush everything in its way to nothing!

Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, and Cecilia were terrified. They tried to dodge and use the God power to condense protective light cages. They reluctantly resisted the shockwaves of that energy storm.

They staggered as if they were drunk. They wore unhealthy red faces. Apparently, they had consumed a lot of energy just to protect themselves.

So strong!

All of them shouted in fear. The storm energy that Shi Yan

generated and Harson's energy and aura had created hurt their bodies even though they were standing far from them. If they had stood near the center of the storm, would their bodies be torn apart?

In the chaotic situation when rocks and sand were twirling everywhere together with a thunderstorm, people couldn't see Shi Yan and Harson. However, they could see Audrey and Cang Yun standing still by the edge of that energy storm.

They had to agree that Cang Yun and Audrey were much stronger than them.

They weren't surprised to see Audrey because Audrey was the Princess of the Imperial Dark Tribe. She should have this ability. They were astounded and curious about Cang Yun, so they started to guess his identity...

"The energy shockwaves are so tremendous!"

Mia of the God Clan halted while flying through the woods. She looked aghast.

Phelps, Haig, and Payton also stopped. They discolored, looking at the area ahead of them. They all wore dark and solemn faces.

The energy fluctuations ahead was so fierce that the barrier between the two territories couldn't hold it within. This group was scared about the shockwave reaching them.

"Such great energy fluctuation could be seen in the battle of the Incipient God Realm experts. Who could do that?" Phelps wore a sinister, cunning face. "The Charteris family has so many dark and secret techniques and Harson is a lunatic. One of them should be him. He... got this ability. But who is his opponent?"

"The woman who killed Yu Jia!" confirmed Mia.

Haig didn't say anything, his eyes cold and placid. He squinted and tried to sense. All of a sudden, he arched his eyebrows and hissed, "No, it's not true!"

Everybody looked at him.

"It's not the woman who killed Yu Jia. It's the man you said, the one from the Immortal Demon Clan!" Haig was scared. The placidity in his eyes was broken. He took a deep breath and lowered his voice, "Aside from being a member of the Immortal Demon Clan, he's also an heir of one of the Bloodthirsty's inheritances! He's cultivated Death power Upanishad. What a coincidence!"

"Death power Upanishad?" Mia's soft body shivered. "People rumored that the Charteris family annihilated Xuan He's blood brother and used his skeleton to create the blood-dripping bones. They then carved the secret formation of the God Clan, making Harson keep the key bone that controls his subordinates. That's how Harson could be so strong. Well, we would have never expected such a coincidence."

"We must kill this man. We won't give him room to grow. Otherwise, no one can estimate the consequences." Haig arched his brows and said harshly, "I'll kill him myself."

Mia and Phelps were surprised and then they nodded heavily, "If you do it yourself, I'm sure he can't escape. He shouldn't appear here. He shouldn't expose his identity that early," said Phelps in a dark voice.

"Both of them are strong. If I want to deal with him, I have to use my best powers too." Haig darkened his face as he shouted. "Move! We have to get there quickly!"

Energy rose in the center of the island in waves of immense, hazy light. The island had earth-shattering energy. Where Harson and Shi Yan were fighting was a place that people couldn't observe. The entire sky was covered by light curtains that shielded people's vision.

Each member of the Charteris family sat on the ground as if they were actually petrified. Columns of energy burst into the sky from

their heads, which Harson's soul controlled. They were moving like devil dragons that wrecked the area around them into ruins. The ground under their bodies expanded terrifying tremors.

Shi Yan's body was like a stone hovering inside a blood sea. His mind flickered, shifting the abilities of the Death power Upanishad, which made the energy turn into massive blood hands and shooting blood meteors that bombarded Harson.

The sinister demons generated by the negative energy were entangling with the air columns made of the energy of the Charteris warriors. They started to attack them like the vilest, fang-showing monsters.

Shi Yan and Harson were fighting each other as if no one was watching. As they were equally strong, they had struck each other too fiercely and the island under their feet was about to break into pieces. They made the earth and heaven energy in this area change dramatically, triggering the wonders that take place on this ancient continent...

Chapter 1153: The World of Five-colored Light

While they didn't notice, the tough barriers that connected the North, South, East, and West territories of the ancient continent had shattered. The abundant earth and heaven energy from the four territories swarmed and squeezed each other, flooding torrentially to the Center.

The sealed Center became vaguely discernible. They could even see what was always hidden there...

Auspicious clouds hovered in the sky and drifted to the horizon. Divine grand mountains jutted up and pierced the clouds. Waterfalls and streams spread and meandered. Scattered here and there were clear water lakes that they could see to the bottom. Mist and steam wound above the water surface, moisturizing the peculiar flowers and floras. All of them had created a dreamy, unreal fairyland.

Mo Fou, Cecilia, and the others stood by the edge of the island. They now looked dull and mesmerized as they observed the miracle land of the Center. Their eyes were gazing with infatuation at the hazy Center. They looked dreamy as if they were having a beautiful dream.

They had thrown the fierce, crazy battle between Shi Yan and Harson behind their heads.

Even the two experts who could gather earth and heaven energy here, Cang Yun and Audrey, couldn't help but observe the Center after struggling in the energy storm. They were so happy that they looked almost crazy, shivering in thrill.

The area they were watching was what they had craved for when they came here. It was the Center that they had to visit. It was the most mysterious and precious area of the ancient continent. That

piece of land was called "The Spirit Herbal Garden of the Universe." Rumors said that precious treasures were scattered here and there. Every little grass they might step on could contain the surprising spirit Qi, which could be a priceless ingredient in some high-level life stars.

The Original Incipient Grade spirit herbs, woods, crystals and gemstones that were scarce in other life stars and were things that people had to be crazy for were abundant in the Center of this ancient continent. In all the times, the Original Incipient Grade materials were the top precious cultivating materials that the warriors had always dreamed of.

As the Center was perceptible, the barriers between the territories had disappeared. Everybody could get in and find their opportunity.

All the warriors became thrilled as they found the strange, magical Center. They were excited to look at the Center with desires. They were ready to get over there!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The loud explosions of the hammer breaking the mountain arose like a heavy punch pounding on people's heart. Mo Fou and Cecilia were shivering and turning pale.

They were so frightened as they looked around.

The immense island exploded in the middle. Mountains collapsed. The island was now like a big tree that exploded. The ground looked like a cake cut into many pieces by a sharp knife, drifting away in the sea territory.

Mo Fou, Jiao Shan, Jiao Hai, Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, Sha Zhao, Fuller, the four guards of the Imperial Dark Tribe, Cang Yun, Audrey and the members of the Charteris family scattered as the island broke apart. Standing on different pieces of land, they drifted away.

The barriers between the four territories were torn, revealing the Center. Barriers and restrictions vanished. It was the signal that they could enter the Center.

The warriors following Audrey shouted and gathered by her when the island cracked and drifted apart. They wanted to go with Audrey to the Center to take advantage of her ability to sense the commotion of living beings to search for more treasures.

Mo Fou, Shang Ying Yue, and the others were searching for Shi Yan and they found that the thick mist arose on the sea. They could hear the sea rumbling, but they couldn't locate Shi Yan.

Shi Yan was still having a deadly fight with Harson. They understood that even if they found Shi Yan, it would be tough to go with him to the Center. Many warriors hesitated for a while and then gathered around Audrey. They decided to stick with her.

Only Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue hadn't moved yet. They hurried to find Shi Yan as they still wanted to advance or go back all together with him.

Cang Yun had already disappeared into the thick mist. No one knew where he had gone or could sense his aura.

Big woods surfed above the water. Fuller, Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and the others moved towards Audrey's piece of land rapidly. They hurried to get on the island and gathered by Audrey. They were so excited and they urged Audrey to move faster, taking them to the Center.

----- They temporarily forgot Shi Yan at this moment.

As soon as they got to the Center, they would encounter a lot of deathtraps. Although the God Clan was strong, they couldn't compare to the fatal restrictions there, which meant that they wouldn't need to be afraid of the God Clan's pursuit anymore.

Without the God Clan's threat, how could they have free time to care about others?

The reason why they had to gather was to resist the God Clan and got over that challenge before the Center opened. Today, they thought that they had finally gotten over that challenge.

"Do you really think that we can avoid the God Clan when we enter the Center?" Audrey sneered, her face cold. "Naive! The Center has the most precious land. Eventually, we will get there. When that happens, we will encounter them for sure!"

Fuller and Mo Fou gave a dry, embarrassed smile, but they didn't oppose her.

"Haig is near," Audrey snorted, "Before the Center has opened completely, we must strike them hard first! Even if we don't go to the Center, we still have to face them sooner or later!"

While Shi Yan and Harson were fighting, Audrey had sent her Soul Consciousness far away to sense Haig, Phelps, and Mia's commotions. She knew that they would be here soon.

As Audrey found that their whole team didn't come here, she thought that they should seize this chance to strike them hard. She had made up her mind so she thought that no one should question or object her ideas. She shouted, "Anyone who wishes to go with me, follow me. Once we get to the Center, I will not care about the warriors who don't go with me or whether they are dead or alive."

The four Imperial Dark men gathered by Audrey, their faces solemn.

Audrey picked an emerald hairpin from her bun of hair, which had flame carvings supported by purple clouds. This emerald hairpin suddenly had torrential powers like a rising tide. It transformed and enlarged as it was placed by their feet like a jade pillar supporting the sky.

The aimless, drifting piece of land was controlled like a boat now had a navigator.

The purple clouds on the emerald hairpin seeped into the ground

like a flame. This piece of land was now a treasure of Audrey that she could control using her soul. She drove it and moved in a direction deep into the thick mist.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were standing in another drifting piece of land. They saw only the hazy sky. Vaguely, they saw the divine grand mountain from a very far distance. They knew that it was the Center and their destination.

However, the two women didn't act recklessly. They were anxious as they wanted to see Shi Yan. They wanted to track the direction by the energy explosions.

Mo Fou and Wu Feng decided to stick with Audrey, centering her once more time. But these two women didn't do that. They deemed Shi Yan as their backbone and the one they should count on. They acknowledged Shi Yan as the leading role only.

"The barrier is down. It's good for us though."

Haig's eyes were so harsh and cold. Abruptly, a divine, powerful energy fluctuation emerged from his body. He had transformed into the Undying God Body in just a blink of an eye.

Beams of five-colored light radiated from Haig's body and moved around him. The power of the Five Elements: Metal, Wood, Water, Fire, and Earth, rose and generated in Haig's body like the circle of perfect power with brilliance.

Haig's eyes were blindingly brilliant. While his thoughts changed, a bright halo floated behind his head and gave him the impression of the ancient Deity that low creatures couldn't trespass.

The divine light in gold, green, white, red, and yellow hues held the power and rules of Five Elements that connected, intertwined and overlapped each other by the Light power Upanishad to create a world of the five-colored light world behind him. It was changing continually and giving Haig a pure, solemn aura of the powerful,

tyrannical imperial lord of the world of light.

The world of five-colored light holding the rules of the Five Elements suddenly pressed down. Above the island, they then saw the massive gold sword, the green ancient tree, the sacred white sea, the red sun, and the precious earthy yellow land. The energy of the Five Elements energy rose and flooded the entire area.

The giant gold sword, the divine green tree, the white sacred sea, the red sun, and the yellow land were the five treasures of the Five Elements. They scattered, flashed, and then disappeared in the thick mist.

"Oh Gosh!"

"Not good!"

"It's Haig!"

Fuller, Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and the others gathering around Audrey discolored in fright and screamed.

They saw the Five Elements treasures ear the thick mist and press down on them like giant meteors. This kind of earth-destroying aura had suffocated them. The low-realm warriors couldn't even stand straight. They had to bend down and have subdued feelings that made them want to bend to their knees and bow.

This pressure suffocated people!

"The World of Five-colored Light!"

Audrey's face was stiff and cold, frightening energy fluctuating in one of her bright eyes. She let out a cold shout, placing her jade-like finger on her glabella.

An imperial lotus throne made of seven-colored crystals floated up. This shining and sparkling imperial throne was made of dozens of thousands of small crystals. Each of them was a precious treasure of earth and heaven with different secret domains of

powers Upanishad. This was the marvelous treasure of the Imperial Dark Tribe.

Inside that fulgent imperial throne was a dancing soul flame that had just turned into Audrey's image.

It was her co-soul that had fused with God-blessed Mainland's Origin. It could control the changes of earth and heaven with the power of heaven flames. Her co-soul sat neatly on the crystal lotus throne. Abruptly, the throne released the endless fire of Karma that then supported the throne to fight against the World of Five-colored Light.

"Dark God Imperial Throne!"

Everybody screamed in awe as they felt that the terrifying pressure from the World of Five-colored Light was reduced a lot and they could stand up now.

The Dark God Imperial Throne was the top precious treasure of the Imperial Dark Tribe. It was the root of God-blessed Mainland. Only the members of the Imperial Dark Tribe with the purest blood who had been approved by God-blessed Mainland could control it. It was very famous among the Original Incipient Grade weapons. It could boost the secret techniques and powers Upanishad of the Imperial Dark Tribe.

Chapter 1154: Burning Purgatory

"Imperial Dark Tribe!"

Haig hid in the middle of the five-colored clouds and shouted. His eyes became dazzling as he cried.

Mia, Phelps, and Payton looked stern as they stood by him. They were also standing on a piece of the broken island. They leaped up, moved through the thick mist, and appeared in front of Audrey's team.

Mia and Phelps wore a solemn face. They looked at the dark God Imperial Throne in between two small drifting lands. They seemed to understand something all of a sudden.

The Imperial Dark Tribe was a magical race that could compare to the God Clan among thousands of races. Billions of years had passed and they had always held a crucial role in the cosmos. A long, long time ago, the Imperial Dark Tribe was the overlord of many other races and they ruled the big star areas.

The Imperial Dark Tribe and the Heavenly Monster Tribe fought a bloody battle that resulted in the terrible loss of many experts. The Imperial Dark Tribe got tied down and they didn't dare to cause any big commotion later on. Because of this, the God Clan had the chance to rule this universe.

Currently, the God Clan was the strongest and they didn't dare to look down on the Imperial Dark Tribe. The God legions had never dared to reach the Imperial Dark Tribe's territory.

The God Clan and Imperial Dark Tribe had continued their tacit understanding that they wouldn't touch each other. They both wanted to avoid disputes that could lead to earth-shattering situations they couldn't manage.

However, because of this ancient continent, the two races showed themselves in this place. Eventually, they had parted to

opposite parties that fought with each other for the treasures and the secret of the ancient continent.

Haig shouted and then quickly sobered. He retrieved the blinding divine light in his eyes. The World of Five-colored Light quietly changed again. Now, it was a brilliant five-colored Light Divine Boat. The divine boat was made of five-colored divine light with the powers of Five Elements that was filled with the solemn aura of God that low creatures didn't dare to trespass. The boat floated above the Dark God Imperial Throne.

"You killed Yu Jia, didn't you?" Haig looked at the Light Divine Boat, which was another form of the World of Five-colored Light and was floating quietly. It seemed to gather more energy.

"True." Audrey swiftly glided through them and stood arrogantly on the edge of the small island. Her Dark God Imperial Throne was floating above her. She faced Haig without fear.

"You've broken the secret agreement between the two races," Haig said calmly.

"The one who tore the agreement wasn't me. It was your clan. Yu Jia took his team to attack me. Of course, I have to kill him," Audrey sneered.

"Who took action first is not important. What is important is that you've killed my clansmen. It's enough." Haig smiled. "Thus, you can't blame me. The Imperial Dark Tribe has been secluding for years. You think you can compete with our clan. Sooner or later, you will show yourself and rise the storm. I don't find that it's strange if you aim at our clan today."

His eyes emitted the brilliant light once again.

Boom! Boom!

The dazzling Light Divine Boat had explosions reverberating like thunderclaps. The divine boat moved with tremendous energy that could break the entire sky. Abruptly, it struck the Dark God

Imperial Throne.

Light ribbons fluttered. The five-colored gusts of wind shot like a meteor from the divine boat together with yellow arrows, brutal lightning bolts, surging flames, a rushing river, and grand mountains. All together, they wanted to crush the Dark God Imperial Throne.

"Desolate belongs to no one. If the God Clan can come here, so can we. We don't care if you want to use Desolate to kill the prodigies of the other clans. But Yu Jia dared attack me. He was blind, so he deserved death." Audrey sneered while changing her power Upanishad.

The Dark God Imperial Throne changed all of a sudden and created a sinister dark abyss where Yin winds howled and cried. The commotions in there sounded like it was the house of countless wailing ghosts that was as horrible as Hell.

This was the world that the Dark God Imperial Throne had created. It was the Dark Night Purgatory. It had connected directly to the mysterious dark abyss of God-blessed Mainland where she could release many evil spirits and demons of the Underworld. Her Dark God Imperial Throne wasn't weaker than the Light Divine Boat of Haig. Her demons were slowly covering and devouring the abilities derived from Five Elements power.

Haig and Audrey were both the future leaders of the God Clan and Imperial Dark Tribe respectively. To get the power of the ancient continent, they had attacked each other right before they could get into the Center.

Haig came here because of Harson, but now, Audrey had stopped him. He didn't have extra effort to give aid to Harson. However, when Audrey attacked him, he suddenly recognized that as long as he could hold Audrey here, Harson wouldn't have big trouble.

Haig and Harson had been competing with each other both secretly and explicitly for years. He knew how terrifying Harson

was more than anyone else. He knew that even if he wanted to defeat Harson, he had to bear a significant damage. Thus, he believed that Harson wouldn't lose.

He knew this lunatic of the Charteris family and he knew how he could perform formidably and crazily in a bloody battle.

Many pieces of the broken island were drifting on the sea where thick mist hovered. The sea now had tremors and earth-shaking explosions and vibrations. Tsunamis and storms were risen, putting the sea in its most violent and furious state.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were standing on a small rock, watching the tremendous energy wreaking havoc in the sea. They both looked aghast, but they were trying to find Shi Yan.

However, because of the battle between Haig and Audrey, the sea was more turbulent and chaotic so they couldn't locate Shi Yan.

While they were restlessly anxious, a big ancient tree pierced through the thick mist, emerging in their vision. A fat body like a mountain of meat was sitting cross-legged on that log of tree.

"You two, follow me." Cang Yun appeared all of a sudden. The log of wood stopped by the rock. He squinted and waved at them.

"Where is Shi Yan?" Cecilia hastened.

Cang Yun peered through his small eyes as he smiled, "He's still fighting Harson. But no worries, he'll be alright. You guys should go with me. We're heading to the Center first. We will meet him again there."

"Are you sure we could meet him there?" Shang Ying Yue frowned.

"Of course," Cang Yun gave a silly smile. "He and I have an appointment."

"Why do you want to go with us?" Cecilia was skeptical.

"Because you stand on his side, and I... I also need partners."

Cang Yun looked a little impatient. "Audrey is fighting Haig and Shi Yan is fighting Harson. Anyway, the Center is about to open. Their fights have to cease when it opens. They are the two battles that are predestined to have no final results. You guys shouldn't worry about him."

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue exchanged looks. They pondered for a while and then nodded.

"Let's go," Cang Yun urged.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue swiftly leaped up from the rock and landed on Cang Yun's ancient log of tree. The drifting log accelerated as fast as electricity! It moved with the wind across the sea. The surging sea seemed to not affect the log of wood.

On the other side of the broken island, the biggest piece after the island drifted apart, Shi Yan and Harson gasped for their breaths. Their God Bodies were covered in blood. Both of them had brutal, crazy energy fluctuations.

Columns of gas created by the explosive, evil energy in their bodies twirled up into the sky and became strange auroras, just like the stream of energy entering the sky. The phantoms of demons from the negative energy were attacking the columns of gas, making the void explode.

Harson had placed the members of the Charteris family on another piece of land. They had run away quietly after receiving a soul message from him. They were heading to the Center.

Haig's team came when the thick mist started to expand when Harson's troops had already gone. They were the first wave that aimed at the Center. Harson stayed to stop them, fighting Shi Yan crazily. They were the two most brutal animals using their power Upanishads to assault each other. Unexpectedly, they seemed to be equally strong.

"Haha! A descendant of a Bloodthirsty's Inheritances!

Muahahaha!"

Harson laughed like crazy, showing his fangs. "Do you know whose bones are these? Haha, it's Xuan Shan, Xuan He's little brother. He cultivated Death power Upanishad. Our Charteris family killed him and used his bones to create the secret formation. My soul can enslave him forever!"

"So what?" Shi Yan's eyes were as red as blood. A vicious, bloodthirsty aura wound around him and made him the most dangerous demon, "I will kill you. I will kill all of your subordinates. I will collect each piece of Xuan Shan's bones."

"Hahaha. What do you get from collecting Xuan Shan's skeleton? You can't beat me, admit it!" Harson laughed crazily.

He and Shi Yan had fought for a while on this island. They had used energy, powers Upanishads, and even their bodies to strike each other thousands of times. However, no one had gained the upper hand. Harson, the warrior that didn't really put Haig in his eyes, now considered Shi Yan his equal opponent in this fight for the first time. He had used his best abilities, but he hadn't successfully stopped Shi Yan.

Finally, Harson knew why the Elders of the God Clan had to wince mentioning the Immortal Demon Clan and the Bloodthirsty Force. After this battle, he understood that the Immortal Demon Clan and the Bloodthirsty Force were truly the mortal enemies of his God Clan.

"It's true that I can't do anything to you when you have your troops around. But now, you'll be defeated," said Shi Yan ferociously.

Harson was the important seed of the Charteris family and the future successor. The Charteris family was called the Racial Terminator and they were the most terrifying blood-dripping sabers of the God Clan. The bloody massacres of the God Clan in the big star area were often carried out by this family.

Harson's power Upanishad was evil and mystic. It was the power Upanishad that could raise his fighting desire to infinity. It kept him in the utmost excited state of mind. This kind of power Upanishad could burn his Essence QI, blood, and flesh to strengthen himself. It was an extremely stubborn and crazy power Upanishad, a power Upanishad of mysterious and evil power.

It was also the primary power Upanishad of the Charteris family.

The God Clan's wicked formation carved on the stone steles in the God Perishing Land that used the iron chains and the Soul Sucking Demonic Flower to take the blood and flesh of the prisoners were also from the Charteris family. And at the same time, the wounded God warriors staying inside the stone stele were also from the Charteris family.

Each member of the Charteris family was a madman. They could burn their own blood and flesh to increase their energy and competence shortly.

However, they had to pay a big price. After each battle, their souls and bodies were damaged severely. They had to use the evil formations to refill the consumed energy. Still, they needed time to recover. Most of the God warriors staying in the God Perish Land were from the Charteris family.

The Charteris family called their power Upanishad "The Burning Purgatory." It was the most mysterious, supernatural power Upanishad of the God Clan.

Chapter 1155: Cang Yun won't Get the Worst of it

Auspicious clouds like beautiful, brilliant fish scales gathered above the Center of Desolate, the ancient continent. Majestically imposing mountains stood still, supporting earth and heaven and giving people a subduing aura that nothing could compare to.

The refreshing scents of grass, spirit herbs, and blooming flowers wound around the place and diffused from the Center. They were the diluted heavenly river that calmed and refreshed the minds, making people inhale continuously to enjoy more. They couldn't help but want to get those grass and herbs to improve their strength and souls.

The four territories including the glacier, swamp, forest, and the immense sea all had their barriers melted down. Earth and heaven spirit Qi of the four territories moved and mingled with each other, creating milky white rivers of energy and flowing towards the Center of the ancient continent.

The sea territory was a big ocean near the Center with many islands and islets. Many silhouettes were moving fast in that area.

They were the young geniuses of different clans of this vast universe.

A Light Divine Boat created by five-colored divine light radiated the dazzling light in the thick fog. It looked sacred and solemn, indeed. A fulgent lotus imperial throne made of billions of crystals released a pure and cold aura. However, the center of this throne seemed to connect directly to the sinister hell. Countless evil spirits were crying, howling and trying to get out.

The members of the God Clan and the other experts from different star areas were performing their best abilities and energy attacks in the middle of the drifting islands. The floating Ethereal

Extents and the God Domains had stirred up the sea, rising tsunamis, storms, and tornadoes, which boiled the sea water.

On a stream closest to the Center, logs of wood pierced through the area like sharp swords. Around that time, warriors of the Charteris family were riding the logs.

They all looked dark and cold. A perceptible piece of bone appeared on their abdomen and gave people a clue of something very evil.

On the same stream was another drifting log that was pretty far behind them. It carried only three people: a man and two women.

The fat man looked like a giant maggot that had a piercing look as if he could drill through the thick mist to observe the members of the Charteris family. His small eyes squinted to the icy slits. He grinned inaudibly.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

All of a sudden, near the Center where the Charteris family's members were riding the wooden logs, a surging energy swept over and tried to wreck everything.

A massive energy vortex appeared, which looked like the mouth of a giant beast that could swallow the whole sky. They could even see the pointy fangs that were like sharp spears in there. The energy vortex moved and stirred the sea water. Shortly after, it swallowed the logs of wood that the Charteris warriors were riding all together with their riders.

The sounds of the massive mouth chewing things arose from the vortex. Each of the Charteris warriors was struggling crazily and releasing energy.

They knew that they had been plotted against.

"You cultivate Water power Upanishad, right?" Cang Yun suddenly turned his fat face, smiling mildly and asking Cecilia.

Cecilia was surprised but she still nodded. "Yeah?"

"Wait for a little more, I would like you to show your power and let those bastards have fun." Cang Yun's bead eyes had a malicious gleam as he muttered, "I used to be bullied by the Charteris warriors in this sea area. I had to use all of my tricks to escape. Today, if I have a chance to repay their favors, I won't let it slip away. I hope you guys would help me deal with them."

"You had disappeared for a while to set up the trap aimed at the Charteris warriors?" asked Shang Ying Yue solemnly.

Looking at the innocent fat face that seemed harmless to both humans and animals, she suddenly felt a chill in her heart. Behind this man's warm smile, what kind of wicked thoughts did he have?

"Yep," Cang Yun laughed heartily. He stood up on one end of the log and sent out a beam of pure energy, which made the log surf forward quickly like a dragon. "I can get anything, but I won't get the worst of them. I will repay even the smallest thing that they have treated me."

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue exchanged looks. They became unnatural as they suddenly felt that this fatty who would repay even the slightest grudge wasn't safe at all.

The terrifying vortex appeared in their sight like the mouth of a demon that was chewing food. The Charteris warriors were being dragged into the maelstrom. They were shaken so hard that they felt so dizzy and even the God power in their bodies disordered.

"You don't need to give me face," Cang Yun laughed until his small eyes became slits and nodded to Cecilia.

"All... all right," Cecilia pursed her lips. The sounds of rapid flowing water arose from her plump body. The magical energy bobbed and expanded. The seawater around her rose up into the sky. Billions of tons of water were compressed rapidly.

The egg-sized water balls emerged, which were as heavy as a

mountain with the energy in the shape of Cecilia.

"Extremely Great Water!"

Cang Yun threw a glance, smiling contentedly and nodding continuously.

This was a subtle performance of Water power Upanishad, which compressed the water tens of thousands of times to have a pure energy attack as heavy as a mountain. This strike would be flexible like water and be endlessly compelling.

Cecilia had compressed the seawater to make drops of Extremely Great Water. They twirled in the sky like pure energy cannon balls that then bombarded the vortex in front of her.

BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!

The sea exploded and sent grand mountain-like waves up into the air. The vortex forcefully collapsed into the sea. The Charteris warriors being dragged into the maelstrom disappeared shortly after.

"You guys continue moving forward. I'm going to the sea to check if I can kill more." Cang Yun cheered loudly and then advised Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue. Then, he plunged into the sea like a big worm, diving deeper to the bottom.

"Who is this man after all? Why do I always feel like something is wrong?" After his aura had utterly disappeared, Cecilia mumbled, her face awkward.

Unfortunately, Shang Ying Yue couldn't explain her doubt as she was also suspicious, trying to guess Cang Yun's real identity.

On a corner of the sea territory, earth and heaven energy like a dense heavenly river gathered and poured above Shi Yan's head.

"I can defeat you because I can urge and collect earth and heaven energy, which is infinite in this ancient continent. You'll be worn out to death!" Shi Yan smiled crazily. Earth and heaven energy

above his head was forced and formed into an energy giant whose head touched the sky.

The giant looked like it was made of thick mist with terrifying energy. It could shoulder the sky and stomp the ground, giving people the impression of an invincible creature.

The giant furiously tore and smashed the gas columns that Harson was controlling from his subordinates' soul energy.

"It turns out that you've fused with the Origin like Haig!"

Blood trickled down the corner of Harson's mouth. His face was dark and harsh when he shouted.

Warriors with the Origin weren't shackled in the ancient continent. Moreover, they could urge and collect the earth and heaven energy there. In this place, this kind of warrior could collect as much energy as he wanted to create a possibly lethal attack.

While the two sides were still struggling and losing energy, Shi Yan suddenly struck out his sharp attack that pushed Harson into a dangerous situation.

But it was not only that. . .

After Harson had just shouted, the bloody bone in his abdomen sent him a heart-pricking pain. His soul altar also throbbed like someone had used the big needle to thrust him.

His face paled like a skeletal white-faced demon. He faced the sky and howled mournfully, "Who's killing my warriors?!"

The Charteris family's warriors with Xuan Shan's bones had been interlinked with Harson. The pain from his bone in the abdomen and his soul altar told him one thing: Some of his warriors were dying!

Harson roared sorrowfully. He shot Shi Yan a sinister glare and said, "I will kill you in the Center!"

Then, without waiting for Shi Yan to reply, Harson drilled into the thick fog immediately and flew away like a bolt of lightning. He was out of Shi Yan's sight shortly after.

Shi Yan grinned evilly, but he didn't chase after him. He just sat down cross-legged.

He knew that Cang Yun was the one who had killed Harson's subordinates and he knew his mysterious competence. It was good for Shi Yan to have some basis to estimate Cang Yun's real abilities when Harson came there and troubled him.

The four pieces of blood-dripping bones lay quietly by him. He squinted and released the white mist of negative energy that was entering the bones. He attempted to erase the wicked formation carved on the bones. Afterward, he would make these bones his sharp, fatal weapons.

As they came from Xuan Shan, Xuan He's blood brother, they had the Essence of Death power Upanishad, which would boost up his energy and abilities tremendously.

The Soul Consciousness connected the blood bone. His soul quietly moved and urged the power Upanishad, making his acupuncture points release a suction force. He then twisted his Soul Consciousness and it extended to a remote area...

On the other side of the sea, Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were sitting on a log of ancient wood when a strong vibration appeared behind their back. Three blood-dripping bones shot out of the sea together with some pieces of internal organs. They flew away as if they had received an emergency call.

"It's Shi Yan!"

"It's him, though!"

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue screamed. They shut their mouths immediately, exchanging odd looks.

"Move faster!"

Cang Yun's voice arose from the bottom of the sea. In the next moment, he floated up and landed on one end of the log.

"What happened?" Cecilia asked, having no clue at all.

"Harson the Mad dog is coming. He's crazy now. I don't want to risk my life to fight him." Cang Yun said curtly. "He's very dangerous at the moment. Whoever provokes him will receive a very very bad consequence. Perhaps he would kill altogether. We'd better head to the Center. Otherwise, it will be big trouble."

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue wore astounded complexions.

They knew why Harson was coming. If Cang Yun hadn't plotted his warriors and killed three of them, Harson wouldn't have chased after them crazily.

No one dared to encounter Harson when he was mad. Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue shivered. They pulled themselves together and focused on mobilizing their energy to protect themselves.

"Don't be so tense. Before he comes, I will take you two to the Center. Yeah, it's like I'm doing him a favor. When I meet him, I'll tell him that I've proactively done a lot of things for him. I didn't just watch the fun, right?"

Cang Yun beamed a silly smile, using his maximum speed to urge the wood. He shot it like it was a lightning bolt towards the Center.

Chapter 1156: Desolate

Lights of the Five Elements: Metal, Wood, Water, Fire, and Earth moved and generated continuously like the life cycle of earth and heaven energy. The radiant Light Divine Boat was covering the crystal lotus imperial throne.

The meandering energy at the horizon of the sea that was like murmuring streams flowed towards the Center, which had just opened. The energy of the other four territories was drawn all away and it vanished quickly.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

Shadows of God warriors sitting on the floating logs of wood drifted over. Most of them were Haig's, Mia's, or Phelps's troopers who were ditched behind. They had just arrived in this area.

Haig and Audrey were fighting in the sky between two small islands using their Light Divine Boat and the Dark God Imperial Throne. They had stirred up the entire sky and place, making the sea seethe tremendously.

Mia, Phelps, and the others joined hands to fight Mo Fou, Fuller, Wu Feng, and the warriors who had followed Audrey. Mia's team was in a bad situation. However, after the God warriors came, they could overturn the situation immediately. They began to force Fuller, Wu Feng, Mo Fou, and the others to run away like the rats.

Harson was trying his best to dash towards the Center.

Cang Yun brought Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue. They were the first wave of warriors to enter the Center. They had already disappeared in the other end of the sea territory.

Harson ran to the area where his subordinates were in trouble. After he had gathered them, he brought them to the Center and stopped caring about Shi Yan. Their auras disappeared from the sea territory shortly after.

As Haig and Audrey could see the change of living being auras, they found that there were two groups of warriors who had already entered the Center. Although they were confronting harshly, they both wanted to finish this meaningless battle quickly.

As the two parties were equally strong, they couldn't defeat each other in a short time and the time that the Center stayed open was limited. Without much hesitation, they parted and streamed into two groups heading towards the Center.

While in the corner of the thick mist covered sea, Shi Yan was sitting and holding the blood-dripping bones. His Soul Consciousness was winding around like a big net.

The life aura of Cang Yun, Harson, Haig, and Audrey had disappeared one after another in this sea territory. Shi Yan knew what it meant when he found no one or any soul energy fluctuation.

Everyone except for him had entered the Center. And Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness found that the barrier between the Center and the outer areas seemed to start solidifying once more...

His face changed slightly. He put the seven bloody bones into his Fantasy Sky Ring and stopped his activity of cleaning the evil formation. His thoughts flickered and his soul altar spun to urge the Space power Upanishad. The light in front of him moved and drew light rings right in front of him.

At a normal speed, Shi Yan retrieved his Soul Consciousness, stepping through the light rings. His body disappeared partially after each step.

In the next second, he reappeared by the barrier outside the Center as if he had just stepped out of the space slit that helped him cross thousands of miles in just a blink of an eye.

Streams of energy gathered from everywhere. Like small rivers

congregating into the sea, they all poured into the Center. Those energy streams were milky white and they were almost like some liquid that the naked eye could see and the Soul Consciousness could touch...

Only the pure and thick earth and heaven energy at a specific degree could become liquid or visible to the eyes and tangible to the Soul Consciousness. It spoke up to the fact that Desolate was the place of abundant energy and only this continent could bear countless strange and precious materials that warriors from every life star craved for.

The reason why Harson, Haig of the God Clan, Cang Yun of the Heavenly Monster Tribe, Princess Audrey of the Imperial Dark Tribe, and the other outstanding warriors of the other star areas like Wu Feng, Mo Fou, Shang Ying Yue, and Cecilia gathered here was because of the mysteries of the ancient continent.

Warriors from different areas of this cosmos gathered here for one and only reason: the Center!

The Center had given birth to spirit herbs, chalcedonies, and crystals that were the all priceless items in this world. Also, it would have Original Incipient Grade materials. To enter the Center, the warriors had been fighting for five years. Today, as the Center had finally opened, the battle between them could be even fiercer and bloodier.

According to Cang Yun, the Center hid a big secret, which mattered to Cang Yun, Haig, Audrey, and Shi Yan, the four special existences with the Origins.

It was the reason why Cang Yun, Haig, Audrey, and Shi Yan gathered here. Shi Yan suddenly realized that Shang Chen was asked by an expert of the Bloodthirsty Force to give him the Guiding Fruit that would lead him to the Center. All was because of the secret of the Center.

He had no clue what that secret could be.

Instinctively, he touched the Blood Vein Ring, frowning and looking at the liquid streams of energy in front of him. He became determined and he stepped in.

It felt like the earth and sky were changing their positions.

A horrendous vortex suddenly emerged, drawing his body into the center. Shi Yan was frightened, but he couldn't do anything.

In the center of that terrifying vortex, no matter what he tried, he couldn't control his body, so he could only follow the vortex spinning. Shortly after, he entered the center of the vortex. He focused and got startled.

This vortex was made of white ivory rings that were narrowed inwardly. There were thousands of them. Apparently, those ivory rings were the streams of energy coming from everywhere. They were all congregating in this vortex.

This strange phenomenon had frightened him. He was flown towards the center of the vortex that he had tried to struggle against. Unfortunately, he found that he could do nothing but bring pain to his body. It felt like he got punished because he wanted to go against the Mighty Heaven.

He pulled himself together and gave up the useless struggle. Calming his mind, he focused on observing the spinning vortex...

Shi Yan was shocked!

The massive vortex that seemed to cover the whole world was created by the pure earth and energy, making each of the rings. They were moving by some principles of Nature. After he had given up struggling to sense, he found that the moving principle of the vortex was pretty similar to the acupuncture points in his body when they filtered the Essence Qi of the dead...

When this thought emerged, he couldn't help but feel shaken. He pulled himself together, his mind and his will concentrating on the magical features of this vortex.

The soul altar began to spin all of a sudden. The magical black hole in the center suddenly throbbed. Shi Yan was perplexed. After a while, he urged his host soul, moving to the black hole. He was frightened to see a massive vortex filling the mouth of the black hole. That vortex used the fine soul threads to create the rings, which seemed to be the most marvelous structure in this world that released magical energy fluctuations that nothing could compare to...

Seven hundred and twenty acupuncture points in his body, the black hole in his soul altar, and the vortex that was stirring his real body around were created by the smaller or bigger vortex, which had amazingly similar movement patterns. They seemed to come from the same features of the power Upanishad.

As he came to that conclusion, he totally gave up his resistance and just let the vortex draw his body. At the same time, his Soul Consciousness was moving around the acupuncture points in his body and the Devouring power Upanishad was moving around in the soul altar to find some connection...

After an unknown time...

Rumble!

He suddenly felt so dizzy. He fell like a meteor and hit something hard.

He hadn't recognized that he was lying at the foot of a mountain inside a blooming flower bush with his eyes closed. He looked as if he was sinking in a beautiful dream, flying around a fairyland without wanting to go back.

Fresh flowers bloomed around him in many colors with a sweet fragrance. Transparent amber drops of nectar oozed out from the flowers, which were like mirrors that could show his reflections.

It was a flowery valley that had no creature besides Shi Yan laying here. It seemed like this valley hadn't received any visitors

for billions of years. It remained in its most primal condition, which didn't have any trail.

Grand mountains lay in layers. Earth and heaven energy floated like rivers from heaven. Rainbows crossed the sky like bridges leading to fairyland. Five-colored auspicious clouds that looked like they had their own consciousness floated in the river of energy. This world was so calm. Shi Yan didn't even hear a single sound.

Pretty far from him was a majestic holy mountain that connected the sky and earth. Its summit pierced deep in the sky where terrifying energy vibes were sent out.

That holy mountain seemed to be the heart of the ancient continent and the control center. It was where the continent managed the transmigration and the pulsation of the ancient continent. The mountain could touch both the sky and the ground at the same time and it had its own consciousness.

If someone could stand on the peak of that holy mountain, he could observe the entire place and see countless mountains, lakes, sea areas, forests, deserts, volcanoes, and even the glaciers. This position was like the eye that could observe every detail around. That eye could see many tiny shadows like little ants moving around the rivers, deserts, mountains, and lakes everywhere.

Those were the outstanding young talents from different races...

They were scattered around the edge of the Center while the grand, holy mountain was in the center. Even the surroundings of their current locations were pretty similar to the first four territories they had visited, if they could sense carefully, they would find that the earth and heaven energy here was moving totally differently.

The energy fluctuations in their current areas hid the dangerous, murderous aura and flooded every corner. They could support each other.

The entire Center area was like a massive deathtrap that Nature had created. This deathtrap consisted of deadly formations, forbidden lands, and dangerous topographies of different pieces of land. This grand masterpiece was like the work of Mighty Heaven. Without any extra add-on, it was like a training court that Nature had built for many creatures.

The holy mountain standing imposingly in the center to connect earth and heaven was the center of the deathtrap, the soul of the ancient continent. It could hold everything in its hands.

Just like a cold, nonchalant archangel from the sky watching the feeble creatures struggling with their strong wills and operating by the rules It had set up, it would reward them properly...

Compared to it, all warriors who had come here were just weak insects. Even Haig, Cang Yun, Audrey, and Shi Yan, the ones who had fused with the Origin, were just special insects. They still needed to follow its rule to survive...

And it didn't have any emotion that any creature should have. It just watched everything with indifferent eyes.

Chapter 1157: Someone Lives, Someone Dies

Shi Yan was lying in the middle of a flowery valley, his body crushing many fresh flowers. He closed his eyes as if he was fast asleep. His face looked calm and peaceful as if he was having the most beautiful dream.

Magical, crystal-like nectar dripped from the flowers with the most pleasant fragrance, reflecting his body. All of a sudden, something strange happened...

His reflections in those drops of nectar suddenly jumped out of the drops like they were his souls in the fantasy dreams. The shadows that had his shape all flew into his soul altar and moved in his Sea of Consciousness.

Shi Yan's clear mind was suddenly invaded. His brain sent him a pain that was like a pricking needle.

His study of the massive vortex was forced to stop. He opened his eyes and saw his own images floating in his Sea of Consciousness. Although they looked exactly like him, he couldn't contact them.

They were like phantoms.

When those phantoms glided above his calm Sea of Consciousness, they rose the waves and started riding on the gusts. Wisps of his Soul Consciousness were pulled out by those phantoms forcefully.

Shi Yan felt the hair on his nape rising.

Those shadows that could just be illusions were trying to invade his soul and dig into his Sea of Consciousness. They wanted to make him a body without a soul!

He was frightened when his spirit, soul, and Qi were invaded.

While his thoughts were changing, he tried to urge his soul altar to use the powers Upanishads to burn them down. Abruptly, he

was dumbstruck.

In his soul altar at the tier of powers Upanishad, heaven flames, and the black hole, and even by the host soul, Shi Yan found many illusions of himself. However, they had floral auras. They were trying to force his soul and compressed him like a horde of conquerors.

Those floral spirits wanted to control his soul and control his God Body and all that was him!

Shi Yan discolored in fright.

"Get out! Get out! Get out! Get out!"

Soul messages that shooed him away thundered in his mind continuously. Those came from the phantoms that were invading him.

Shi Yan felt that his head was exploding as if there were billions of people cursing and chanting to make him leave. They wanted to break his mind and spirit, which would expel his soul from his body and leave his soul altar unowned.

By his lying body, countless beautiful flowers were swaying and droning as if they were supporting billions of wisps of different consciousness in his brain. They wanted to make him give up and leave him a body without a soul. They were forcing him to give up his body.

"Court death!"

His unyielding will of steel wasn't defeated by the chanting and hostile shouting. His soul altar moved and flashed as his acupuncture points were urged.

The seven hundred and twenty acupuncture points were different worlds of revolving vortexes. Abruptly, torrential negative energy including bloodthirsty, destructive, desperate, resentful, and crazy emotions flooded like a massive sea. Almost instantly, they sank his entire body.

Inside his soul altar, a black hole was activated. The Devouring power Upanishad sent out a terrifying suction force.

Countless thoughts of feeble despair were generated and multiplied in his head. The shadows that had intruded his brain started to struggle and wriggle as they found the terrifying threat. They wanted to retreat and get out of his God Body immediately.

Different negative energies appeared in his acupuncture points and created a layer of flesh and keratin to shroud his entire body.

Those people that looked exactly like him couldn't pierce through the layer. They were kept inside. They could only send him a begging message to ask for his mercy...

Swoosh! Swoosh!

Just like a big whale sucking water, the shadows that looked like Shi Yan turned into flows of Essence Qi that were drawn into the black hole. All of them were devoured shortly after.

All sorts of distracting thoughts disappeared in just a blink of an eye. His soul altar could spin again. However, Shi Yan felt that his spirit was shaken as his host soul had a magical feeling of eating some great tonic. He felt so refreshed as if his soul was cleaned once. This feeling was very similar to the time he had his soul cleaned some time years ago. And his soul was nurtured tremendously.

Beams of Essence of the floras around him flew out from the black hole and seeped into his soul altar like the most delicious wine. Suddenly, his soul altar was purified once.

Shi Yan pulled himself together, checking his situation and surroundings. He was astounded.

Withered flowers and grass were around him on an area of hundreds of miles. He was lying in the center of this valley of dead floras. Within his sight, there was no living flower. He was surprised for a while before he could understand the situation.

Pondering for a while, he vaguely understood it.

The shadows invading his head were the spirits of the flowers and trees in this area. After tens of thousands of years taking in the earth and heaven energy in this area, they slowly gained intellect, so they wanted to have another chance to advance and evolve.

They knew that the tree or the grass couldn't bear their consciousness and they couldn't have a new life if they stayed within those shells. They had a terrible urge to find a better container.

Apparently, Shi Yan coming here all of a sudden had given them hope. They seized the chance while he was learning the magical features of the vortex to discreetly get into his brain and stir up his soul altar with their special methods. They had acted as if his soul was actually their home and Shi Yan was just a stubborn guest who didn't want to leave.

If he hadn't had the evil negative energy in his acupuncture points that could make the black hole use its power, his host soul could have been expelled. And those floral spirits could have had a chance to build their new life form using his soul altar. With his God Body as the foundation and the floral spirits as the soul, they could have given birth to a brand new race.

Looking at the withered vegetation that was in all directions around one hundred miles away, Shi Yan contemplated for a while. His eyes were fixed to a holy mountain standing afar.

Shi Yan frowned as he found that his Soul Consciousness was like it was moving in a foggy area. It couldn't give him any useful information. He couldn't sense any strange commotions.

In this area, his extraordinary ability seemed to be ineffective.

Shi Yan had a vague feeling. . .

He felt that the majestic holy mountain was coldly looking at him like an archangel watching a tiny, vulnerable ant. It could use the

power of Nature to force any creature to act as it pleased. It would never allow anyone to trespass its rules or change anything!

Shi Yan didn't have any evidence for this feeling. He didn't know whether he should cry or smile. However, he could actually sense its existence. It wasn't something vague, though.

He remembered what Shang Chen had told him...

Desolate had its wit. It had a life and consciousness. It was a form of life that was totally different from any other race. Right in the dawn of this cosmos, it was there and it used its own methods to affect the vast universe. Desolate was the most mystic and wonderful existence in this universe. No one could affect it. It only affected them in its unique way...

Shi Yan looked at the holy mountain and deeply felt this strange intuition. He suddenly believed Shang Chen's words without the slightest doubt.

——Desolate wasn't only an ancient continent. It was a unique life form with consciousness and intellect!

Confirming this, he suddenly stood in awe of the holy mountain. He hesitated for a while before sitting cross-legged on the ground where he was surrounded by the withered flowers. He stroked the Fantasy Sky Ring to take out the Seven-colored Spirit Flower. His deep co-soul emerged from his pupil and covered the crystal that sealed the Seven-colored Spirit Flower...

The Seven-colored Spirit Flower could fuse the heaven flames of the Origin together. It was a crucial item to warriors who had heaven flames. It could increase the integration degree of the flaming Origin in their co-soul.

His co-soul was made of ten different heaven flames. When he was in the fountainhead of powers Upanishads, he had fused the Earth Flame, the Purgatory Flame, and the Vermilion Bird True Flame into one.

Today, his co-soul still had eight heaven flames that hadn't fused with each other. On the day he saw Audrey, he knew that the integration degree of his heaven flames in the co-soul was far behind Audrey's. And he now knew that the marvelous connection between the co-soul and Grace Mainland was related to the degree of his fused heaven flames.

Thus, as he knew he was relatively safe here and no one would come to disturb him in a short time, he didn't spend time to investigate the mysteries of this ancient continent. However, fusing the heaven flames of the Origin co-soul was his most urgent task.

He tried to use the Seven-colored Spirit Flower to fuse the heaven flames with different natures.

In a corner of the Center where there was a burning desert, two graceful figures were walking in between a rocky area in the middle of the desert. Their clothes were damp and stuck on their bodies.

The yellow sand was like red iron. The women had to mobilize God power to their feet and create an energy layer to resist the scorching sand. In front of them were mountains ranges where they could see the majestic holy mountain between the other peaks.

However, even though the two of them had walked through the desert for a long time, they couldn't cross this desert. They could see the mountain ranges, but they couldn't reach them no matter how hard they tried. Gradually, a desperate feeling churned in their hearts.

The two figures were Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue.

In a volcano, hot lava was erupting and sending deadly flames

with rumbling fiery energy.

Sha Zhao, Jiao Shan, and Jiao Hai were in the flaming lava pond. They were trying to get out of this hell-like area. They wanted to get out of the volcano mouth. They had fallen into this volcano mouth after the vortex had drawn them away. The extremely high temperature of this area had melted one warrior who had accompanied them.

Before that warrior had fallen into the lava pond, he was careless and he didn't use the God power to create a protective halo. Thus, he was killed instantly.

In the gloomy, tranquil glacier, Wu Feng, Mo Fou, and the others were frozen. They were now ice sculptures in the glacier. Energy rippled through them as if they were attacking the ice and were trying to get rid of this icy confinement.

In an area where the tornadoes were wreaking havoc, Mia, Yue Man, and the others were struggling to steady their bodies. They couldn't stand still and from time to time, they had more cuts on their bodies by the wind blades. They were struggling very hard to get rid of this tiring situation.

In the other places of ponds, lakes, desert, and glaciers, the warriors came from the island including Haig, Phelps, Audrey, Mia, and Cang Yun had fallen into different deathtraps. They were trying to survive.

Some warriors were killed.

Some warriors eventually found a way to escape the deathtraps quickly.

At the same time, a small number of warriors had soon escaped their deadly situation with some bonuses and advantages. They were cultivating and advancing to another level.

Chapter 1158: Fusing Three Heaven Flames

All the vegetation in the valley withered and died.

A sturdy body sat still, his eyes closed. A beautiful flame floated in front of his glabella, which had different colors including scarlet, shining silver, dark green, and ice blue. It looked so magnificent.

A peculiar flower that had a face of a pretty woman was covered by that flame. The crystal shrouding the flower was slowly melted down, revealing its astonishing glamor. However, that beauty was wincing in pain and it looked so real as if it was a real pretty lady.

The flower was fiercely burned and it melted down into a transparent liquid that was then evaporated by the flame. However, it didn't become steam but turned into some fine, long, fluid-like threads that looked like saliva. As the flame was illuminating it, it had many different hues.

A mysterious but deep feeling churned in Shi Yan's heart. His co-soul seemed to be divided into different sections by those fine threads...

Many years ago, he had used the Heaven Flame Refining Divine Technique to create the co-soul from the Origin and the ten heaven flames with his Soul Seal.

At that time, he thought he had completed the soul fusion and that the ten heaven flames were integrated completely into one entity. However, he recognized afterward that the Heaven Flame Refining Divine Technique had just helped him create the co-soul. The distinctive auras of the ten different heaven flames had still existed in his co-soul. They hadn't wholly fused with each other yet.

In the fountainhead of powers Upanishads, Yu Shan and Xuan Fei had explained to him and made him realize it wasn't simple to

fuse the heaven flames.

In the same area, he had tried to fuse the heaven flames with similar characteristics: the Purgatory True Flame, the Earth Flame, and the Vermilion Bird True Flame. They had become a brand new source of flaming energy, seizing a particular spot in his co-soul.

Today, with the power of the Seven-colored Spirit Flower, the auras of the eight types of heaven flames in his co-soul became distinguishing.

Eventually, the Seven-colored Spirit Flower was melted utterly into a viscous, transparent liquid. Each drop of this fluid could be stretched and elongated like soul threads filling his co-soul and contacting each of the heaven flames. It gave them a bridge to connect with each other...

The Seven-colored Spirit Flower fluid had a magical effect. It could guide the auras of the heaven flames that were easy to gather.

The Yin Spirit Ghost Flame, the Immemorial Demonic Flame, and the Corpse Vanishing Flame were different, but they seemed to have a subtle connection. Under the guidance of the transparent soul threads, they flew up, drifting and dancing in his co-soul.

His co-soul was now a crystal skull made of brilliant flames. He could see the different colored flames taking different areas in the skull. Some fine threads like soul fibers scattered around the skull like a net. He then saw three flames in green, blue, and ash-gray colors from the three points of a triangle flying towards the center.

That center was the glabella of the transparent skull where a fierce soul energy fluctuation was emitted.

The green color flame was the Corpse Vanishing Flame, the blue one was the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame, and the ash-gray one was the Immemorial Demonic Flame. The three different colored flames slowly moved. Eventually, they congregated in the center of the

skull, right beneath the glabella.

The tearing-brain pain swarmed over Shi Yan's soul. Not only was his co-soul flickering rapidly, his host soul, the soul altar, and even his God Body felt like thousands of sharp razors were cutting through. This terrible pain made Shi Yan scream and screech in this valley where no one could see him.

His shrieks and howls were like those of a wild beast and his screams reverberated and traveled far away. It would've made the hair on people's napes rise if they heard him.

While he was screeching, the three flames in green, blue, and ash-gray were turbulent like boiling water. They twisted with each other like three ribbons that were inseparable. Slowly, they became one.

In a desolate valley in the Center of the ancient continent, Shi Yan was enduring the pain of heart-cutting to fuse his heaven flames.

By a pond not really far from him stood a silent, beautiful figure. She was frowning and looking at the pond.

The pond was so bright and clear that she could see her own reflection like a mirror. Gradually, some marvelous illusion appeared...

A little girl with a braided ponytail was crouching and hugging her knees in a dark, heavy abyss. She covered her face and sobbed in a muffled voice. Her shoulder shivered as she was so scared and aggrieved.

The evil ghosts and spirits were wandering around her petite body, howling and wailing. Their terrifying voice rolled and created waves that naked eyes could see attacking the little girl. The girl quivered in fear and shouted as if she was cracked crazy. Her ear-piercing scream crashed countless ghosts into pieces like a sharp sword.

The illusion disappeared. A new one took place. The little girl was now a teenager around twelve or thirteen years old. She was confined in a secret domain of fiery flames and bitter ice. She was using her soft body to resist. Her skin cracked not long after that...

Different illusions changed like a nightmare that was eroding people's hearts. Eventually, the pond stopped at the image of the adult version of that little girl. A cold and proud woman.

That was Princess Audrey of the Imperial Dark Clan. This pond was like a mirror that had reflected her entire life.

The corner of her cold mouth twitched. The image in the pond suddenly drifted apart and disappeared like a reflection in a shattered mirror. The pond resumed its calmness. Nothing strange happened afterward.

She couldn't help but snort and glide like a ghost over the pond. As she was heading to the majestic holy mountain, she suddenly heard some wild beast screaming like the thunderclap coming from afar. It was loud enough to make her soul altar tremble.

Squinting, she hesitated for a while. She gave up the thought of heading to the mountain and made a turn.

After a long time, she appeared lonely in a valley where flowers and trees were all withered. At first glance, she saw a man screaming and rolling on the ground in pain. He seemed to not be able to withstand the pain.

Audrey changed her visage a little bit. Seeing the brilliant flame bobbing, she sensed and understood what was going on here immediately.

Watching him with a cold face for a while, Audrey suddenly sat down by him and said nothing. She closed her eyes and began to cultivate as if she wanted to train her spirit in the waves of grunting and screeching.

Shi Yan was making loud commotions that it attracted more

people. Sounds of breaking tree branches arose from a far distance. After a while, four shadows slowly emerged. They were Phelps and three warriors of his family.

From several thousand meters away, Phelps's sinister eyes gazed at Shi Yan. He licked his lips and showed his bloodthirsty intention.

He quietly waved his hand. Four shadows quietly approached Shi Yan. The energy in their God Bodies was urged, surging powerfully.

Suddenly, Phelps's visage froze as he saw a beautiful figure sitting quietly behind Shi Yan. That woman was looked at him with her cold and sharp saber-like eyes.

Phelps suddenly felt chilled. As soon as he saw the woman, he retreated without leaving a word. He was scared that both his soul and body would perish.

The woman didn't chase after him. She stood still like a rigid ice sculpture with a chilling aura.

Time flew fast.

Gradually, Shi Yan in front of her stopped screaming. He got up and drew earth and heaven energy to clean his vessels. The co-soul didn't move fiercely anymore. The three different flames had fused into one. All of a sudden, Audrey said in her usual cold voice. "You're all right now, I suppose."

Shi Yan sat facing her and furrowed his brows slightly, "Why did you help me by protecting me here?"

When Phelps's group of four came, he was in a critical moment. If they attacked him, his soul would have vanished and his body would have burned into ashes right away.

When Audrey arrived, he felt incredibly insecure. He thought that Audrey would attack him. However, she had just sat down by him. Everything was so calm that it was out of his expectation. In

the critical moment, she had helped him shoo away Phelps's team.

"You're too careless," Audrey was still cold and arrogant. "Fusing the heaven flames of the Origin is the most painful practice. You need to bear the pain of your soul burning. It's the most terrible torment in this world. When you want to fuse your heaven flames, you should choose the safest area and you must have someone protecting you. Since you're so reckless, it's a miracle that you lived until now."

As Audrey also had the Origin, she had to experience the fusion of heaven flames too. She knew how terrible this kind of pain was more than anyone else.

"I don't know why you protected me?" repeated Shi Yan, his face dark.

"I fought against Haig," Audrey looked at him coldly. She pondered and then said seriously. "I can't kill him alone. In this Center, only you can help me kill him. Only the warrior who has fused with the Origin can join hands with me to finish him. I need your power. That's all."

Audrey told him the reason.

Shi Yan grinned strangely. He knew that Audrey wasn't precise because there was someone like that in this area. It was Cang Yun. However, as Cang Yun was from the Heavenly Monster Tribe, he was destined to not stand under the same sky with her.

"Thanks for protecting me," Shi Yan stood up and stretched his body. He retrieved the flame in front of his glabella. "Don't worry. The God Clan is our common enemy. If we meet Haig, I'm sure I won't show mercy."

"You've battled against Harson. What do you think about him?" asked Audrey all of a sudden.

Shi Yan's face became solemn. He took a deep breath and then said, "Harson is really strong! I haven't fought Haig, but I believe

that Harson could compare to Haig. Harson can burn his flesh and blood to get energy. His soul power Upanishad is extreme too. He's adamant to deal with."

"It seems like we don't have a positive situation," Audrey's bright eyes looked heavy.

"I think what we should do now is to find and gather our people. That's how we can have the competence to fight the God Clan." Shi Yan looked at the holy mountain in the distance. "Too bad that my Soul Consciousness is bound in this place. It's not easy to gather them once again. How about you? Do you have any solution?"

Audrey shook her head begrudgingly.

"What do you think we should do?" asked Shi Yan.

"Move forward and head to that big mountain. Along the way, we should gather our people and try to kill more members of the God Clan," suggested Audrey.

"Okay."

Chapter 1159: Refine the Ancient Continent?

Shi Yan and Audrey understood clearly that only when they gathered, they could strike the God Clan with their best attacks that would also keep them safe.

The powerful vortex would send each of the warriors who had entered the Center to a different area. Groups of warriors scattered and stayed in the areas by the edge of the Center where deathtraps and restrictions attacked them. All had to struggle to survive.

If Shi Yan and Audrey could meet up shortly after, it was their big luck. Since they were both super powerful, when they accompanied each other, they would surely have the capacity to defend themselves unless they had to face Haig, Harson, and Mia at the same time.

While walking with Audrey to the majestic holy mountain, Shi Yan kept silent and used his Soul Consciousness to check his co-soul.

In this moment, his co-soul had six different auras of heaven flame including the Primal Chaos Sacred Flame, World Extinguishing Thunder Flame, Nine Serenity Soul Devouring Flame, Ice Cold Flame, and the two combined forms of the Purgatory True Flame, Vermilion Bird True Flame, Earth Flame, and the Immemorial Demonic Flame, Yin Spirit Ghost Flame, and the Corpse Vanishing Flame.

The three heaven flames Immemorial Demonic Flame, Yin Spirit Ghost Flame, and the Corpse Vanishing Flame that had just fused with each other and created a blue-green restlessly flickering flame had the blended aura of Demon Qi, Yin Qi, and Monster Qi. The energy fluctuation of this flame was sinister and peculiar.

The six heaven flames with different auras flew in his co-soul like six different brains. They all released terrifying energy fluctuations.

The six flaming light shapes floated and continued to generate energy, which accelerated his co-soul in connecting to the energy remnant of earth and heaven. He could feel it at any minute. His co-soul was taking in the free energy and pouring it into his Ethereal Extent. He could feel that his Ethereal Extent changing every day.

After the second fusion of the flaming co-soul, Shi Yan had a feeling that his co-soul had gradually become independent. It seemed like his co-soul didn't need his host soul to exist and eventually, it could become a real-life form.

The co-soul was the combination of the heaven flames and Grace Mainland's Origin. It seemed to have a magical connection with Grace Mainland. Every time his heaven flames fused, he had a stronger feeling that he could use the co-soul to connect with Grace Mainland and make it change somehow...

Grace Mainland was like the God Body of his co-soul. The changes of Grace Mainland would also change his co-soul and make it evolve.

It was a unique co-existent relationship in which both sides would grow or decline together. It was so marvelous that it couldn't be described clearly with words.

If the Ethereal Extent was a world that was created by the soul altar, his host soul could control that world. With the same principle, Grace Mainland would become a world that his co-soul could control, which was a real world that existed and was one of the most magical ancient continents in this cosmos!

As his flaming Origin could be fused to the utmost degree, Shi Yan's co-soul seemed to have some transformation to grow further to the point where it would become the sole God of Grace Mainland who could adjust all changes of the whole continent!

Nothing could compare to this mysterious, fantasy understanding!

It was a marvelous miracle that couldn't be described!

"If you could fuse all the heaven flames of the Origin, the ancient continent... will become your Incipient Extent!" Audrey suddenly turned to look at him and spoke to him after a long time of remaining silent. "Refining the ancient continent to be the life Incipient Extent is the ultimate dream of countless creatures from different clans. You're really lucky that you've made another step on this long, thorny journey."

Refining the ancient continent to the life Incipient Extent!

Shi Yan felt shaken, his face shocked. Audrey had frightened him.

In this minute, he understood how lucky he was. He finally knew to which tremendous degree he could reach after he had completely fused his flaming Origin!

In the primal time of this universe, the five ancient continents had given birth to the Great Four Creatures who had taken turns to be the overlords of the cosmos and the races of this entire world. The ancient continents were always the most mysterious and marvelous places in this vast sea of stars.

When a warrior refined the ancient continent to be his Incipient Extent, he could understand the deepest secret of the ancient continent and the mysteries of the dawn of this universe. He would be able to understand the essence of the births of the Great Four Creatures.

To anybody, it was an enticement that they could never resist. No one could stay cool and calm in front of this temptation.

Audrey's indifferent voice had given Shi Yan direction quickly. He suddenly felt a sublimation where he was changed mentally and physically. It felt like someone had cleared the mist covering his soul. The world was now so clear and vivid to him.

"You... You didn't know the mysterious features of refining the

flaming Origin, did you?" Audrey's body slightly quivered. She looked at him disbelievingly, "You knew nothing about it?"

His sublimation of clearing the mist to see the rainbow on Shi Yan's face was busted as she said so. It surprised Audrey a lot. She now looked at him as if she was watching a monster. "As you knew nothing, why did you come here?"

Shi Yan's face twitched as he was embarrassed. He wore a stiff look and gave her nothing but a snort.

It was the first time that Audrey didn't know whether she should cry or smile. She looked at him with the odd look that she used for a fool. However, she didn't mock or provoke him and just gave him a curt nod. "It's okay. Perhaps the one who sent you here has some other arrangement. That person wouldn't be so rash."

Shi Yan was moved. He instinctively looked at the Blood Vein Ring and frowned.

According to Cang Yun, the Blood Vein Ring was the key. If the Ring Spirit woke up, he wouldn't be so passive. He would have known what he should seek and harvest in this ancient continent.

Anyway... It didn't seem like the Ring Spirit was about to wake up.

"Can you use the Sound Stone to contact the others?" asked Shi Yan all of a sudden.

"Can't," Audrey shook her head. "This area has some restrictions. Even our Soul Consciousnesses are covered with a foggy curtain. It's really hard to contact each other."

"But this thing seems to be able to do that," Shi Yan took out a bloody bone that came from the Charteris family. It was Xuan Shan's bones. He waved the bloody bone for a while and said, "Each bone has an evil formation carved on it, which can magically contact each other."

Stroking the bone, Death energy from his fingers seeped into the

bone. He sensed carefully and then said, "There are two Charteris warriors not far from us."

"If you can sense the blood bones, Harson... can find you with the same methods, right?" asked Audrey.

Shi Yan nodded, "It works like that."

"So in a specific distance, you could sense the location of another bloody bone?" Audrey asked again.

"True."

"Not bad. Even if the two you've just sense included Harson, when you and I join hands, we could suppress and kill them."

"Yep, it's true."

They exchanged looks. Shi Yan suddenly dashed away and flew in the direction he had just sensed.

Audrey didn't say a word. She followed him tacitly. They were about to launch the first attack on the God Clan's warriors.

In the boiling lava pond, Sha Zhao, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan looked like they had just shed their skin. Their God Bodies were now terrifyingly red like boiling water. They had almost drained their body to crawl out of the lava pond.

They now lay on the ground, facing the sky and feeling so exhausted.

The scorching lava in the pond was more terrible than the hottest boiling oil. Although they were at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm and they had gathered the God power to create a layer of energy to protect their bodies, they couldn't entirely avoid the attack of heat. They felt like they were roasted.

They had consumed a significant amount of God power.

By the mouth of the volcano stood many red ancient trees that

jutted into the clouds. Two men were hiding inside the thick branches of the tree, looking at the other three with bloodthirsty eyes. Their eyes drilled at Sha Zhao's team.

They were two Charteris warriors, Harson's mad henchmen. They had gotten rid of a deathtrap and hidden on that tree to recover. All of a sudden, they found three exhausted warriors getting out of the volcano. They looked feeble as if they had no drop of energy remaining.

The two exchanged looks. They all saw the cruel smile on each other's faces. They didn't say a word when thrusting their hands into their abdomen to take out the blood-dripping bones.

The brutal, wild smell of blood diffused from them, which was terrifyingly thick and gave people a heavy pressure that they couldn't even get themselves altogether.

Sha Zhao, Jiao Shan, and Jiao Hai didn't want to move at all. However, they suddenly smelled danger. They felt chilled and their hair raised. They were all startled, jolting up and rolling one round to get up. They looked at the two Charteris warriors wearing crazy faces and, coming with their bloody bones.

The three of them were so frightened and insecure. They hastened to urge the little amount of God power in their bodies. They glanced at each other with fear, sighing desperately.

They knew that it would be a fatal consequence this time.

All of a sudden, the stars in the sky above their heads seemed to come to life. Starlight fell rapidly from the sky like a heavy rain. It gathered in the sky and made a galaxy floating like a silky ribbon.

The everlasting Star power Upanishad was used. Sha Zhao, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan were covered by the galaxy. They felt cool, but the starlight was so dazzling that they couldn't open their eyes to see. They could only hear the horrendous energy explosions from the attacks and the grumbling cracking of the ancient flaming

trees. The volcano under their bodies shattered. They were almost buried alive by the lava and rock.

Constant grumbling tremors arose. They wiggled and gathered their God powers to get out of the burning rocks. Then, they found that the two warriors of the Charteris family were now just a pulp of flesh. Then, they saw Shi Yan holding the two blood-dripping bones with some pieces of flesh with arrogant, cold Audrey standing nearby.

"Shi Yan!"

Sha Zhao, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan cried in astonishment. They were so happy that they had survived the tragedy. They were so restless.

Shi Yan gave them a slight nod and then turned back to clean the blood on the bones. After he saw that they were all clean, he respectfully put them away to show his respect to precursor Xuan Shan.

"Thank you," Sha Zhao hesitated for a while before bowing to him, talking with a solemn countenance. "I will never forget your favor for the rest of my life."

Jiao Shan and Jiao Hai also bowed solemnly.

Chapter 1160: It's Watching You...

Shi Yan stood silently in between the cut limbs and pieces of flesh scattered around the ground.

Shi Yan and Audrey had killed the two warriors of the Charteris family. With their dominant powers, killing the other two didn't cause them to lose anything. Shi Yan was especially not affected by the murderous aura of the gory bone. At the same time, he was able to use his negative energy to suppress the other. It was a piece of cake for him to defeat that poor warrior.

Flows of Essence Qi from the dead that naked eyes couldn't see entered his acupuncture points. It kept his mind focused and his energy remained at an abundant level.

Sha Zhao, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan showed their sincere gratitude. They bowed and looked at Shi Yan with their touched eyes. They acted as if they didn't see Audrey.

In their eyes, Shi Yan was their savior who had saved them from the slaughter of the Charteris warriors.

Audrey knitted her brow slightly. She suddenly recognized that to Sha Zhao, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan, Shi Yan was much more important than her.

Anyway, Audrey wasn't discontented. After she had known that Shi Yan's real identity was Shi Yan from the Great Four Creatures and that he had fused with the Origin like her, she naturally assumed that Shi Yan could earn respect from other people. It was inevitable that people would highly appreciate him.

As they were from races of the Great Four Creatures, they had their pride and confidence. They would consider experts like themselves as their allies or enemies...

The bloody limbs and pieces of meat under his feet sent out wisps of something like a bloody mist. After a while, those pieces of meat

shivered and paled as if they had lost all of the water inside, leaving only dried meat like rotten, dead wood, giving people a nauseating, fearful feeling.

Audrey looked at the dried pieces of meat and then at Shi Yan. Her frosty cold face looked startled and her beautiful eyes flashed a hidden fright...

Devouring power Upanishad!

Jiao Hai, Jiao Shan, and Sha Zhao didn't notice the strange state of those bloody things. Jiao Shan asked, "Why did you come here all of a sudden?"

"I could sense the aura of the Charteris family's warriors." Shi Yan frowned and said in a low-pitched voice, "Your condition isn't good at all. You must recover your God power as soon as possible. Otherwise, it will be very difficult to move further."

As Jiao Shan's group had climbed and crawled through the scorching lava, they had almost used up their God power and their mental condition was also really low. No wonder why the Charteris warriors felt excited and attacked them right when they saw them.

If they couldn't recover fast and if they weren't killed by the deathtraps in the Center of the ancient continent, the others would find them and kill them easily.

Sha Zhao's team understood their situation well. As Shi Yan said so, the three of them didn't hesitate for even a second. They sat down cross-legged and immediately took out the divine crystals to absorb the energy and send it to their Essence Qi Ancient Tree.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. He rose one hand, pulling something above their heads. He had forcefully drawn a stream of earth and heaven energy from the sky. He made some hand seals and turned that stream of energy into cotton clouds hovering above their heads. Cool and refreshing beams of energy turned into steam and

entered their bleeding holes.

The three of them were astounded.

"I'll check around." Shi Yan threw Audrey a glance. "Please take care of them for a while."

Audrey nodded coldly.

Shi Yan smiled and turned into a bunch of starlights before leaving. He disappeared from their sights shortly after.

After almost one hour, he returned and appeared in front of Sha Zhao's team as if he had just torn the mist to get back.

Audrey's eyes emitted divine light as she gazed at him. She looked a little strange.

She was the Princess of the Imperial Dark Tribe. With some unique features of the soul altar, she could see even the tiny changes in someone's energy, competence, God Body, and more.

Within this short period of almost one hour, she found that Shi Yan's God power had become refiner and more condensed. Even his body seemed to have been quenched once, which released a robust vitality that she couldn't believe was true.

Compared to himself before they fought the Charteris warriors, Shi Yan's fighting competence was now even stronger. The recent battle didn't cost him anything but strengthened him somehow... It's...

Audrey took a deep breath. It was hard for her to hide the fear in her beautiful eyes. She was discreetly shaken.

She knew why Shi Yan had to leave for one hour. She knew what he had done.

"You can find spirit herbs everywhere in the Center. And the energy here is amazingly abundant. You guys can recover soon." Shi Yan stood by Sha Zhao and the other two. A starlight rainbow emerged and released the green, jade-like Prickly Pears. They flew

and stopped by Sha Zhao's group of three. "Although the thousand-year Green Chalcedony Prickly Pear isn't an Original Incipient Grade spirit herb, it's handy for the Essence Qi Ancient Tree to gather more God power. Swallow it and you can double your recovery speed."

The thousand-year Green Chalcedony Prickly Pear looked like an emerald calla lily, which looked like real jade with a lot of spikes like a small hedgehog. It seemed really sharp, though.

Sha Zhao's group's eyes brightened. They weren't trying to be polite and just opened their mouths and sucked.

The thousand-year Green Chalcedony Prickly Pear melted and it turned into a green juice with a sweet aroma that ran directly to their body. It then soothed their lower abdomen and the vortex, increasing the flow of earth and heaven energy that entered their bodies.

Sha Zhao, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan looked at him with more gratitude. They assumed that he had left for an hour to gather the spirit herbs for them. They had finally recognized him. They had the thought of sacrificing themselves for him.

The Center of the ancient continent was so perilous. If they made a wrong step, they would be consigned to eternal damnation. And as Shi Yan had taken risks to collect the herbs for them to recover, he had won them over without a battle. Now, they all admired and accepted him.

Audrey looked at their grateful faces and she knew that Shi Yan had won them over them. Later on, no matter what Shi Yan asked them to do, they wouldn't hesitate to work for him.

It made Audrey feel funny because she knew the truth. That man had just taken the chance to refine his absorbed energy and he just harvested some Green Chalcedony Prickle Pear by luck. It cost him nothing to earn Sha Zhao's team's sincere acceptance.

Yellow sand filled the place with scorching and humid conditions. Waves of heat swarmed one after another. All together, they made people hate that they couldn't just take off their clothes to feel better.

"Where is the end to this place?!?"

Cecilia's graceful body was damp with sweat. Her damp clothes stuck on her body, showcasing her sexy, seducing curves.

However, no one could enjoy such a beauty in this place.

Not far from her, Shang Ying Yue was also covered in sweat. Looking at the majestic holy mountain far from them, she had a deep, powerless despair. Her mind had almost collapsed.

After a long time of walking, they knew that this desert wasn't a simple desert. They had tried everything to leave this area including teleporting, aiming at a direction and running at maximum speed, attacking with the soul energy, and more. Too bad, nothing worked.

They were still confined to this burning area.

This desert made them desperate as everything was just yellow and scorching. It was draining their God body and dissolving their willpower.

They felt that they couldn't endure it anymore.

If they couldn't leave this place soon, they would use up their energy, which would leave them with no protection, and eventually, they would become two dry skeletons in this desert.

"Do you have any solution you haven't tried yet?" Cecilia asked when she leaned against a weathered rock exhaustedly. Her beautiful but now blank eyes looked at Shang Ying Yue as she muttered, "If I had known I would die here when I was in the lake bottom, I should have..." Her glistening cheeks with sweat blushed.

She looked as if she was tipsy.

"Well, even if you think more about it now, it's no help." Shang Ying Yue frowned, her cold face tired. She let out a feeble sigh. "We should have been persistent to go with him. After we have arrived her, Cang Yun has gone. He doesn't want to go with us."

"Yeah, it's true. If we have accompanied him, he would have helped us escape the deathtrap. I don't know why I always feel that he can do everything. Nothing could really trouble him." Cecilia smiled bitterly. Looking at the holy mountain, she sighed, "It looks like it's just ahead of us. But no matter how hard we try, we can't touch it. Sigh, and, we can't contact him. Otherwise, he would come to rescue me. He... he promised me."

Cecilia's eyes looked baffled. It was because she was so tired, and her mentality might encounter some problems. Perhaps she was at the edge of being collapsed.

"He won't mind us. He has only himself in his mind. He's truly a heartless, despicable bastard!" Shang Ying Yue whined as if she was dreaming.

Their angry mumbling turned into a magical soul wave that moved fast in this desert. It seemed to be able to raise a sandstorm like some God here had heard them and he decided to give them a hand...

While their minds were baffled, they had a lot of fantasy thoughts. They seemed to find an energy wave from the holy mountain that they couldn't touch. It looked like the mountain was teasing them and setting them up for a malicious prank.

"Who is scolding me?"

By the foot of the volcano, Shi Yan jolted up. He was so surprised and he looked at the sky. He looked awkward as he didn't know whether he should cry or smile.

Sha Zhao, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan were cultivating, their eyes closed. Audrey was also sitting by them. Hearing him, she arched her brows. Her deep eyes shot over the majestic mountain far from them. "What did you sense?" asked Audrey all of a sudden.

"It sounds funny, though," Shi Yan shrugged and shook his head. "I can feel someone has just cursed me. The voice reached my ears. I think maybe I have had a lot of battles recently I am starting to have hallucinations."

"With your willpower, realm, and your magical soul, unless you step into the illusionary formation, you will never have hallucinations." Audrey's face was strangely stern. "Recently, I could sense... a magical energy wave from the holy mountain. It seems to aim at you. I think it's watching you."

Not only was Shi Yan dumbstruck but Jiao Hai, Jiao Shan, and Sha Zhao were also startled and they woke up from their meditation. They looked perplexed too.

Chapter 1161: Invest All the Affection

Everybody looked at Audrey strangely.

She said that the holy mountain was watching Shi Yan. It was unimaginable to the others. It also made them feel funny.

Nevertheless, Audrey looked really solemn.

She frowned, her eyes slightly mocking. She said, "What's wrong with that?"

Everybody shot her a strange look.

"That holy mountain is the core of the ancient continent. It's Desolate and Desolate has consciousness and intelligence. It's the sole God of this area. It sets up rules and principles!" Audrey took a deep breath and then said, "It's like our Ethereal Extent where we are the only God. We can do whatever we want there. In this place, Desolate is the God. It can see every single change, even the smallest one."

Everybody was terrified.

No one felt funny anymore!

Audrey had made herself clear enough. She was the Princess of the Imperial Dark Trike, the group of the most intelligent warriors in this world. And she had the Origin.

They also knew that Desolate wasn't just merely an ancient continent. It had consciousness and intellect. If they accepted this fact, what was difficult to understand in Audrey's words?

Audrey had made a clear comparison. She said that Desolate was the Lord of this ancient continent. It controlled and set up rules. Desolate was the sole God here and no one could shake its ownership.

Is it strange that it paid attention to someone?

Shi Yan, Sha Zhao, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan pondered for a while.

They then nodded as they had confirmed Audrey's assumption.

"I don't know if you should find it your good luck or bad luck. I heard that the warrior who Desolate pays attention to wouldn't have a decent ending. He would die soon..." said Audrey.

Shi Yan's face grimaced. "Why do you say so?"

"Desolate is different from any other creature. It's strong and ancient, indeed. It's the most mysterious creature. No one can understand it. Some say that it doesn't have emotions that a creature should have. It has programmed dead and cold principles. Some say it's strange. Sometimes, it's as innocent as a child and sometimes, it's as brutal as a demon. In short, we can't treat it normally," explained Audrey.

However, everybody looked dumb. Apparently, they had just understood partially.

Audrey didn't explain more because the information she knew about Desolate came only from the precursors of her Imperial Dark Tribe.

"Hey, was it Cecilia or Shang Ying Yue's voice calling you?" asked Audrey.

Shi Yan contemplated and then nodded. "Yeah, I think so."

Audrey pondered for a while before talking sadly, "I heard that Desolate is always curious about creature's emotions, especially... love. I think it assumed that there is something between you, Cecilia, and Shang Ying Yue. Perhaps, it wants to test its thoughts about love."

Pausing for a while, Audrey shouted. "I'm giving you advice. Don't make Desolate think that love isn't worth a dime and that you can throw it away easily. If you do that, it will feel bored and it will eliminate you directly!"

"I don't understand," Shi Yan rubbed his face. He felt a little annoyed and puzzled. He didn't know what Audrey wanted to tell

him actually.

"Desolate has some desire for love. It thinks love is something very wonderful for each race. If you make it feel like you're trespassing something pure and beautiful like that, it will kill you shortly." Audrey's voice was gloomy. "You should figure it out yourself. I can only give you such advice. I hope... it doesn't happen to you seriously. Otherwise, you would have a tragic death."

Shi Yan was surprised. He discolored as he saw that Audrey, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan were looking at him strangely.

Then, he found that he was floating up. He was pinned tight in a transparent room and was moving away from Audrey and the other three. Then, he was hauled away through the mist to somewhere he didn't know.

"Oh boy, you're right. It's unbelievable!" Sha Zhao couldn't help but shout. He lifted his head and looked at Shi Yan covering in something like a massive blue water drop, moving further and further until he disappeared in their visions.

Jiao Hai, Jiao Shan discolored in fright.

Shi Yan was completely out of their sights.

Sha Zhao, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan looked at Audrey and asked in unison. "Is he going to be alright?"

Audrey shot them a cold, arrogant glance. "It's not me who decides whether something would happen to him or not. We have to see what Desolate thinks about it. If Desolate finds him interesting, it's his fortune. Or else, it's his worst incident." Audrey's expression was so complicated.

She, Haig, and Cang Yun had come to this planet with the same purpose. They wanted to gain the approval from Desolate. If it accepted them, they would be successful. If Desolate didn't want to look at them, they would fail eventually.

Receiving Desolate's attention was a perilous challenge to anybody. If he received Desolate's approval, it would be much easier to survive in this ancient continent. Of course, the price of the fact that Desolate didn't want to look at them was much worse: their Life Seal would be erased directly!

Today, Shi Yan was the first warrior Desolate had paid attention to. Perhaps, he would be killed shortly after. But maybe, he could receive Desolate's approval.

Audrey suddenly regretted that she told Shi Yan too much. Perhaps, what she told him would change his fate. It would make his consequence completely different.

The scorching desert.

Boom!

A shadow descended from the sky and grumbly thrust deep into the sand dune.

Crash! Crash!

Countless grains of sand furiously poured into the massive hole as if it was about to collapse.

Not far from the hole, Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were sighing by the rough rocks. They suddenly saw someone falling from the sky and they thought it was their hallucination.

The two women were soaked wet, which revealed the best features of their curvy, sexy bodies. They looked baffled for a while before the clouds in their eyes drifted away as they pulled themselves together.

"It's... him!" Cecilia shouted.

She ignored Shang Ying Yue's surprise and just tried to urge her energy to fly across the desert. Her flimsy clothes fluttered and outlined her mesmerizing skins. Her breasts bounced as she was so

excited.

Soon, she stood by the deep hole and rubbed her eyes. She was more astounded as she yelled, "It's not a hallucination. It's real. There's a hole here!"

Shang Ying Yue was wearing a thin blue ice silk dress. Hearing the other, she became thrilled and hurried to reach the hole. Standing by the sand hole, she observed and pitched up her voice, "Shi Yan! Shi Yan! Shi Yan!"

Her voice expanded and covered every corner around and reached through the deep hole.

A figure covered in sand shot out of the hole and emerged.

He looked so awkward at this moment. Seeing Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue, Shi Yan couldn't help but shout in his mind: That woman was correct!

He was actually skeptical about what Audrey had told him. He didn't think that Desolate would pay attention to him. But now, as he saw Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue, he knew that Audrey was correct. That Desolate was interested in him!

Shi Yan couldn't help but look at the sky.

The sky was vivid red as if it was burning. However, there was no sun, moon or any star. It looked like a sea of fire had covered everything here.

With the thought that Desolate was watching him and after seeing the strange sky, he felt so irritated as if someone was peeping on him. He felt annoyed and agitated at the same time.

"Why are you here? How did you come here? Tell me, how?"

Cecilia couldn't control herself. Her voluptuous, soft body stuck on Shi Yan and her jade-like hand squeezed his arms. Her hand was shaking. Her face showed her thrill of escaping the horrible, desperate situation.

She was backed into a dead corner. She thought that she would die here. There was no doubt. However, she regretted something that she hadn't done yet...

It seemed that God had heard her prayer that someone had sent Shi Yan here all of a sudden. She thought that it was her karma or her fate. Anyway, she followed it immediately and clutched Shi Yan's arm tightly as if she was holding her whole world.

Shang Ying Yue was a little better than her.

A small, cold hand reached out, trembling and hesitating. All of a sudden, she grabbed Shi Yan's hand and then contracted her arm. Then, she said, "Oh, he's real."

She had checked to confirm whether Shi Yan was real or just her hallucination.

She beamed brightly like blooming snowflakes. Her glamor dazed people.

Shi Yan was actually bewildered. Having a sexy, seducing body in his embrace that was pressing on him passionately like a flame, he couldn't control his desire when the round, big things pressed on his chest. Turning his head around, he found that Shang Ying Yue who was always cold and indifferent was smiling beautifully. And her pretty smile was for him and because of him. Shi Yan was touched. He became dazed as if he was in a beautiful dream.

Although he had the beauty in his lap, instead of enjoying it, he felt insecure...

Discreetly, it seemed like the storm had risen and was aimed at him. He remembered what Audrey had told him about Desolate's attention to him.

He could feel his pores shiver. His nerves became tense. He felt so uneasy. Slowly, he adjusted his breathing. He had to make himself sober to be able to counter anything that could happen quickly.

Shi Yan had utterly forgotten Cecilia in his embrace and Shang

Ying Yue who was so thrilled. He had to be vigilant all the time!

No, it was not true!

He shivered and suddenly recognized something wrong. He became restlessly edgy.

"It's so curious about creatures' emotions, especially love... Don't bore it. Don't fail it." Audrey's words echoed in his head.

All of a sudden, Shi Yan forgot everything. He cleaned all the anxious thoughts in his head and forced himself not to think about his current situation. He made himself believe that he wasn't in an ancient continent or was participating in any training.

He considered this desert a marvelous sight and Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were the beautiful sections of the picture of his life. He forced himself to invest all of the affections here!

Chapter 1162: The Cradle of Mazes

"Why are you here?"

After Cecilia could calm down, she looked a little panicked when she shoved him away and asked skeptically.

Shang Ying Yue's eyes became placid once again. She was also checking him.

Whether it was Cecilia or Shang Ying Yue, they had no affection for Shi Yan. They acted like that because they just needed someone to show up when they were on the edge of being collapsed in any minute. Shi Yan arrived when they needed someone the most and gave them the gate to vent out their emotions. That's why they couldn't control themselves.

After they had calmed down, they quietly got some distance from Shi Yan. However, it didn't distract them from getting to know how he had descended from the sky like that.

"Well, I heard someone cursing me, eh?" Shi Yan smiled oddly and raked his eyes through Cecilia. He appraised the woman's beauty inwardly and then said, "If I'm not wrong, you're the who one had cursed me."

"Yes, it's me!" Cecilia gave him a charming smile.

Her curvy body swayed, her round breasts bouncing. Just a look and people would want their mind sinking in there.

Although she wasn't as delicate and stunning as Shang Ying Yue, she had the advantages of a mature, sexy woman. She was like the attractive, deep lake that could capture people's souls and confine them in there.

"How could you come here all of a sudden like that?" Shang Ying Yue was also astounded. She furrowed her bold brown and muttered, "As far as I know, nobody could use the Soul Consciousness in the Center. You... I don't think you could use

your Soul Consciousness to seek us. Right?"

"Right. My Soul Consciousness is bound in this area too." Shi Yan's face became earnest. "Aside from me, the same happened to Haig and Audrey. Nobody could continue using the Soul Consciousness to check out the dangers in advance."

"So then... how could you..."

"I told you, I heard you guys calling for me."

"Hmm."

Cecilia let out a low cry, her face different. "Well, we were... actually talking about him. Did he hear that too?"

Shang Ying Yue knitted her brows, sinking into her thoughts. She didn't say anything. After a long time, she lifted her head and watched the holy mountain far from them, squinting and mumbling. "Is it because of it?"

Shi Yan was shaken.

"It's true then," Shang Ying Yue slightly quivered, her face stiff as she spoke bitterly, "I don't know if you're the luckiest guy or the guy who has the worst luck. I don't know if it pays attention to you first..."

"So you know something about Desolate?" Shi Yan asked in astonishment.

"I know something, but not in detail." Shang Ying Yue nodded and added, "My father told me."

"What are you talking about?" Cecilia felt like she was walking in a mist without seeing the border. She couldn't help but scream. "Can you please be more transparent? I don't understand."

"I used to hear from my father that Desolate would choose someone it finds interesting to pay... close attention to. However, the one it has paid attention to was going to die pretty soon." Shang Ying Yue's bright eyes looked a little nervous. "Not many

people could survive to the end. Most of them would perish. Both soul and body. In this planet, Desolate is the sole God."

"So, are you saying that Shi Yan would... die soon?" Cecilia's charming face paled quickly.

"Yeah, if nothing unexpected happens," Shang Ying Yue lowered her head.

Cecilia could see the sadness on her face. She felt her heart sinking. She felt bitter and upset as when something she liked was smashed before she could get it. It irritated her a lot...

"It's just like a test. Nothing to worry about," Shi Yan said with a stern face. He seemed to not mind it at all. "I can see that your condition isn't really good."

"We've been confined here for an unknown but long time. This damn place is scorching hot. The sandstorm can run directly into your brain. If you don't use the God power to defend, your host soul will be blown away. It's not easy for us to resist for a long time," jabbered Cecilia.

"Why didn't you get out?" Shi Yan asked and looked at Shang Ying Yue this time.

"It must be a natural, peculiar formation. We couldn't find the solution. That's why we're here until now," said Shang Ying Yue.

"Let me see if I can find a solution," nodded Shi Yan.

He stroked the Fantasy Sky Ring. A hazy halo glowed. The Sky-breaking Shuttle emerged, shining and spinning in front of him.

"Can you break this maze?" He used the soul to talk to the shuttle.

"Maze... Is it a maze..."

The Sky-breaking Shuttle sent him a soul message with unnatural pauses. After a long time, it swarmed him with soul messages. "It's... it's a peculiar natural maze. It has the most primal structure. Oh gosh, where are you?"

The Sky-breaking Shuttle came from Grace Mainland. It was made by some psychopath blacksmith a long time ago. Shi Yan had an amazing attainment on blacksmithing himself. He could even forge divine weapons, but he still hadn't solved the mysteries of the Sky-breaking Shuttle yet. He didn't know how that blacksmith had refined the shuttle, which made it the nemesis of all the barriers and restrictions. Its power was unimaginably strong.

Each ancient continent had its own mysteries and many things that didn't go along with natural orders. As Grace Mainland was one of the ancient continents that had existed for billions of years, it wasn't strange if it had something peculiar.

"Why did you say that?" Shi Yan was surprised.

The Sky-breaking Shuttle has the Tool Spirit, which was created by a magical and unique technique. Perhaps a strange encounter or something had derived from that blacksmith's soul and evolved to form the Tool Spirit. This Spirit had the knowledge of that blacksmith of strange things in this world.

After this little guy had gotten out of the Fantasy Sky Ring, it tried to sense the surroundings. Right after that, it became thrilled and it made Shi Yan more confident. Since this place was Desolate, a place that looked nothing similar to anywhere else, if the Tool Spirit couldn't find anything, Shi Yan would disdain it.

"I don't know where it is, but I know what this maze means..." the Tool Spirit was restless. Sometimes, it was strong while at other time it was feeble. "Okay, let me explain like this. Every strange formation or maze in the world is a derivation of this place. This is the cradle of all mysterious formations. It's the primary school for creatures to understand strange mazes or formations. Do you get it?"

Shi Yan was stunned like a wooden chicken.

After a while, he tried to probe. "You said that... the reason why the races could create the mazes or the illusionary formations is

that they have observed this maze? Without this place, there would be no countless derivations of mazes and formations in this world?"

"Yes, that's it!"

Shi Yan felt his brain was exploding grumbly. Eventually, he had a more visual understanding of Desolate. This planet was much more mysterious than he had thought!

Among the five ancient continents in this cosmos, Grace Mainland, God-bless Mainland, Ancient God Continent, and Ancient Demon Continent that had given birth to the Heavenly Monster Tribe, the Imperial Dark Tribe, the God Clan, and the Immortal Demon Clan respectively. They were the cradles of all creatures. They had made the Great Four Creatures the overlords of this universe or the official master of earth and heaven...

And the fountainhead of maze appearing on Desolate was perhaps the fountainhead of many other strange formations in this area. It represented the application of powers Upanishad and it was a unique area in this world. If the warriors could break the mysteries of this place, would they have a much deeper knowledge of the applied powers Upanishads?

As soon as this thought emerged, he was so excited as if he had just found a new direction.

However, the power Upanishad that used the maze wasn't his thing or suitable for him. He immediately asked the Sky-breaking Shuttle, "Can you bring us out of here?"

"Very tough, but I can try. I'm not sure how much energy I'll need. Perhaps, I have to draw all of your energy. Hmm, there's another solution. You can break the mysteries of the maze yourself," said the Tool Spirit.

Shi Yan was hesitant.

He suddenly remembered what Shang Ying Yue had told him.

The ancient continent had different deathtraps and forbidden areas with different powers Upanishads. If he could break the mysteries of someplace that had the same aura as his power Upanishad, he could reach a new, subtle realm that would facilitate his next breakthrough...

As he was in the fountainhead of the maze, if someone cultivated such power were here, he or she could reach a new realm after breaking this maze. However, apparently, Shi Yan, Cecilia, and Shang Ying Yue weren't this sort of warriors. Otherwise, they weren't sinking deep into this situation.

He looked at Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue, pondering for a while, "I'm going to send you energy. Let's break this place!"

"You'd better prepare. This area isn't similar to any place I've known. I'm not really confident. I don't know if I can break it or not, neither. And I don't know how much of your energy I will take. I can only tell you that when I begin, you have to pump your energy to me unceasingly..." said the Tool Spirit seriously. It seemed not confident at all.

"Okay!" Shi Yan agreed.

Right after that, he told Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue to ask them to guard him. He sat down cross-legged and moved his soul altar to connect his powers Upanishads. He urged the God power from the Ancient Tree in his body. Energy shot out from him like a massive column.

Swish! Swish! Swish!

Starlight bloomed out from him and congregated in the Sky-breaking Shuttle. Shortly. The Sky-breaking Shuttle had taken in the abundant, immense God power.

Cracking sounds echoed from the Sky-breaking Shuttle. Sharp rainbow lights were condensed and intertwined with each other. Slowly, they created an intense light column that shot towards the

horizon of the desert. It wanted to pierce through the sky and forcefully make an exit.

The veins in Shi Yan's body felt like they were carrying boiling flood. The ruthless energy burst out from his body like an angry dragon.

The Sky-breaking Shuttle exploded grumblingly as if had to bear so much energy, but it was actually making good progress...

All of a sudden, a large amount of sand and gravel on the dry, scorching the desert, twirling up into the sky, and creating a giant sand hand and squeezing that light column hitting the sky. Then, it angrily tore the light column apart!

Swoosh!

The light column from the Sky-breaking Shuttle was shattered. It turned into countless transparent pieces. Ear-piercing shrieks came out from the Sky-breaking Shuttle when it was fragmented.

Chapter 1163: The Eight Great Chiefs

In the twirling sand desert, sand and gravel gathered, creating a towering hand that had twisted. It smashed the light column of the Sky-breaking Shuttle and shot up into the sky. Consequently, the Sky-breaking Shuttle broke.

The sudden, brutal move of the desert had scared Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue. They paled and looked at the tornadoes touching the sky. They felt so small.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The Sky-breaking Shuttle was smashed into pieces. As soon as its remains fell on the ground, they scattered like ash going with the wind.

A mournful shriek came from a walnut-sized cluster of gray smoke as it appeared in front of Shi Yan, sending screaming and screeching to Shi Yan's soul.

The turbulent energy in Shi Yan's body suddenly calmed down. No beam of energy rolled out anymore. He paled and looked at the Tool Spirit in front of him and the formation that only the Soul Consciousness could perceive. His eyes became colder.

The Sky-breaking Shuttle was broken!

Besides the formation that built up the Sky-breaking Shuttle and its Tool Spirit, everything else had turned into ashes as if a hand in the dark world had crushed it all.

——Because the Sky-breaking Shuttle had bravely challenged its arrangement, the shuttle was destroyed. It wasn't allowed to exist anymore.

"I can't help you anymore." The Tool Spirit sounded feeble just like a wisp of a departed soul. "It's so terrible here. I don't know what has happened. It seemed like I'd challenged the God's power. The Mighty Heaven had punished me..."

"Yeah, it's true that someone had punished you. But it's not the Mighty Heaven. It's this... planet." Shi Yan took a deep breath, his face resuming its calmness. "Don't worry. As long as your soul's still here with the core formation, it's not a big problem."

Shi Yan was also a blacksmith. He had his attainment and ideas when talking about tools and weapons.

The tools that had the Tool Spirit could become a new living being. The blacksmiths who could refine tools with the Tool Spirit had a power like the God who had created creatures. The Tool Spirit was like a human soul while the core formation was the veins and skeleton. The body of the tool was like the human body...

As the Sky-breaking Shuttle's Tool Spirit and the core formation hadn't been destroyed, it was now like the expert that had his flesh body torn apart and left only the soul and the skeleton. If he could gather or make a flesh body, he could be revived one more time.

It was much easier to create the tools, though.

"I know blacksmithing. I can use different heaven flames. We're in an ancient continent where so many strange and precious materials grow. As long as I find the suitable materials, I will build you another container and inlaid your core formation. You'll be revived that way. Is it okay?" Shi Yan sent his soul message.

The gray smoke quivered for a while. "If you can do what you've said, there is... no problem."

"Alright, I will pay attention. Can you tell me the materials needed to refine you?" asked Shi Yan.

The Tool Spirit was so excited. It immediately told Shi Yan the name of many peculiar materials. It asked Shi Yan to pay attention carefully to give him a new life later. "I've done all of these for you. I've challenged the God's power. You can't fool me, you know..." the Tool Spirit kept repeating.

Shi Yan remembered carefully. Right after that, he stashed the Tool Spirit and the core formation into his Blood Vein Ring...

The Tool Spirit entered the formation that only the Soul Consciousness could see. Then, it became a beam of energy and disappeared into the Blood Vein Ring. Standing in the borderless world inside the Blood Vein Ring, the Tool Spirit yelled happily. "It's not bad here. Oh wow... It has the spiritual Qi that can help me recover. Oh! It's wonderful!"

Different from any other Fantasy Sky Ring, the Blood Vein Ring could store creatures. It could create room for living beings in a soul form, which was really marvelous. As far as Shi Yan knows, only the Blood Vein Ring had this ability. He had never seen any ring with the same, miraculous function.

Anyway, the Blood Vein Ring was the treasure of the Master of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight.

"I failed."

After he had arranged the accommodation for the Tool Spirit, his face darkened, talking to Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue. "I don't have a solution to get out of this area."

As Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia had been watching him, seeing him take out the Sky-breaking Shuttle and sensing the energy fluctuate from him, they knew that he was trying to do something. When they saw that the light column of the Sky-breaking Shuttle was smashed and the shuttle itself was broken, they didn't need to ask to know what had just happened.

"Did it attack you?" Shang Ying Yue asked curtly.

Shi Yan stooped and looked at the holy mountain in the clouds far from them. "It seems like it doesn't want us to act rashly. I'm sure it has a plan and everything is scheduled. We just wait and see then."

Then, he sat down cross-legged right in this scorching desert.

Contemplating for a while, he took out the gory bones. He placed nine pieces of bone right in front of him. Those bones looked like they were made of beautiful, transparent blood jade. They all looked shiny and vivid red and it seemed like real blood was running inside the bone. Those bloody bones came from Xuan Shan's skeleton.

Apparently, Xuan Shan was a member of the Demon Clan. His bones were big, long, and transparent. After being scrubbed and quenched with the mighty power Upanishad, they all had tremendously ruthless auras.

Shi Yan gently sensed a piece of them. Squinting his eyes, he released his Soul Consciousness and stepped into the evil formation inside the bone...

It was the evil formation made by the Charteris family. It was an evil contract that forced the ones who had the blood bones to follow Harson's orders and become his most loyal henchmen.

The evil formations carved on each bone were pretty similar. Still, they had something subtly different. Their energy wasn't consistent. The evil formation on each bone seemed to be a component of a horrendous contract. When all the evil formations of the blood bones connected, they formed a wicked formation that was called White Bone Blood Refining Ghost Grave."

A wisp of Shi Yan's refined Soul Consciousness moved around the wicked formation in the blood bone. His soul altar spun. The acupuncture points in his body gushed out negative energy and covered his entire body with death aura.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue discolored. They both sensed the magical changes on his body. They unconsciously moved away from him, pale and fearful.

Suddenly, they found Shi Yan's life energy disappear. He was now no different from a dead man. They couldn't recognize any signs of life on him that rose the hair on their nape. The bloody

bones in front of Shi Yan suddenly emitted strange beams of blood-red light. Together, they looked like some strange and mysterious formation.

The two women exchanged looks. They became ashen when their soul altars felt puzzled.

"You guys stay away from me. Don't look at me. Otherwise, you will lose control of your souls." All of a sudden, Shi Yan who didn't have any life energy fluctuation turned to them and hissed.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue hustled away from him like birds that were afraid of perching on a curved branch. They moved ten steps away from him and didn't dare to look at him.

"Back off further!" Shi Yan let out a low shout.

Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia slightly changed their visages. They also felt the Blood Qi around him getting fiercer. Without much hesitance, they moved further until Shi Yan became a small, red dot in their beautiful eyes. When they found that they weren't affected anymore, so they stopped and finally calmed down.

"What's he doing?" Cecilia frowned. "He has the bloody bones, right? I guess he wants to urge their powers to attack the maze of this desert."

"Apparently not," Shang Ying Yue shook her head, her face strange. "Those blood bones came from Harson's soldiers. They should have some background stories. I can see some wicked, mysterious formations of the Charteris family on the bones. I think he wants to clear those formations and make the bones his new weapons."

"He understands Death power Upanishad. . ." said Cecilia.

Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia exchanged looks. They quieted down and said nothing. Fear arose in their eyes as if the warriors who used Death power Upanishad were the malicious flood or wild beasts.

"The Bloodthirsty Force and the Cortege of Eight are from an ancient legend. You and I have never witnessed the power of the Bloodthirsty Force, but I think you used to hear about them..." Cecilia took a deep breath. "The God Clan has destroyed them so they can be the overlords of this cosmos. And before that, the Bloodthirsty Force was the common enemy of the entire universe. They were much stronger than the current God Clan. Experts of all star areas had to join hands with God Clan to destroy this force. I've heard of this legend, but I don't know whether it's true or not..."

"It's true," Shang Ying Yue took a deep breath. Her face has never been shaving before. "If you know the structure of the Bloodthirsty Force, you won't doubt that legend or their intimidation..."

Pausing, Shang Ying Yue continued earnestly. "The core members of the Bloodthirsty Force, for example, the leaders of the Cortege of Eight, were all the top warriors from God Clan, Immortal Demon Clan, Heavenly Monster Tribe, and Imperial Dark Tribe!"

Cecilia discolored in fright and shot Shang Ying Yue a baffled look. "You meant that the Bloodthirsty Force had recruited members of the Great Four Creatures? They could live together in harmony and serve the same master?"

Shang Ying Yue nodded and gave more details. "To be exact, the core members of the Bloodthirsty Force were all outstanding experts of the Great Four Creatures."

"How could it be!" Cecilia screamed. "The Heavenly Monster Tribe and the Imperial Dark Tribe were always hostile to each other. The God Clan and the Immortal Demon Clan were mortal enemies. How could they form one team altogether?"

"I don't know," Shang Ying Yue looked odd. "My father told me this. He's traveled around many big star areas. He has a connection with the Bloodthirsty Force. Shi Yan comes here this time because

my father stole my brother's Guiding Fruit and gave it to him. He came to Agate Star Area to pick up Shi Yan and brought him to this ancient continent. Apparently, this man comes from the Death Inheritance of the Bloodthirsty Force."

"Oh, that's how it is," Cecilia was surprised.

Although Cecilia had just heard rumors of the Bloodthirsty Force, she knew how strong this force was. She knew that this force was the common enemy of the entire cosmos. They used to be the tyrannical overlords. Later on, God Clan had joined hand with the other forces around the universe to attack them. Slowly, they were worn out and disappeared. However, they had almost brought a fatal disaster to the God Clan. Rumors said that in the last battle, they had struck Ancient God Star Area and give it to the God clan for severe loss.

The women thought that Shi Yan came from the Death Inheritance of the Bloodthirsty Force, but they didn't dare to think that Shi Yan's inheritance could come from... the Master of Bloodthirsty Force.

Chapter 1164: A Separate-spatial Battle!

A corner of the ancient continent was a strange place where many rough and sharp rock columns grew. However, they were as cold as ice with cold air filling the entire area.

Harson, Mia, Yue Man, and the two warriors of the Charteris were sitting cross-legged in the center of this rock forest. They were using divine crystals to refill their energy.

Previously, they were attacked by cold gusts and the stone monsters in this rock forest. Their God powers were drained. Yue Man's arm was still bleeding. Mia's light yellow dress was torn and it revealed her snow-white skin.

Harson's hair was disheveled. He looked more like a sinister ghost as his body was covered in a brutal, dark aura.

He was the first one to wake up. He had something in his mind when he slowly drew a gory bone out of his abdomen. His big, rough-skinned hand gently stroked the bone and he closed his eyes to sense.

The two Charteris warriors sat on his right and left, their faces filled with the flame of anger.

After a long time, Harson stroked his bone and said darkly, "I can't sense that brat. We need to move."

His two subordinates nodded quietly.

Six hours ago, Harson took Mia and found them here. Harson had used the connection between the blood bones to find and gather his troopers. Then, he was going to take revenge until Shi Yan was killed.

He always wanted to find Shi Yan, kill him and take back the bones he had taken.

They were the precious treasures that the Charteris family had

spent a huge fortune to refine. Those bones belonged to Harson only. Even if the owners of the bones were killed, when he came home, the Charteris family could use the power of the bones to find him new suitable troopers. After the new troopers had received the blood bones, he could create the White Bone Refining Blood Ghost Grave once again, which would help him keep his terrifying fighting competence.

The blood bones were the most wicked weapons that were specially customized for Harson. They could boost Harson to fight Haig once. Those bones were also sharp weapons for him to compete for the Chief position of the God Clan in the future.

He would never lose those bones.

The divine crystals in Mia's hands turned into powder after their energy was all taken. Her delicate eyebrows twitched. She took a deep breath and then said, "Harson, how are you?"

"I'm okay," Harson grinned fiendishly. "People say that Haig is the future leader of the God Clan. I don't think so! I'm not convinced! In this ancient continent, as long as I get Desolate's approval, everything will change! Desolate is the most mysterious and strange planet. It has a soul. As long as Desolate recognizes me, even if Haig gets the Origin of the ancestral continent, I still want to slash him off his horse. I want to step on him!"

Harson didn't have a good reputation in God Clan. He was always stubborn. He would take revenge for every grudge he held. His deeds were always ruthless and bloody with the Essence of the Charteris family.

That sort of man couldn't get along well with other people or yield to anyone. In their peak of glory, the Charteris family was the strongest among the other families of the God Clan. Currently, all members of the Charteris family had quietly competed against the Bradleys. They wanted to step on the summit once again.

Harson was the hope of the Charteris family. All elders of the

Charteris family had tried their best to teach and nurture him. They hoped that he could defeat Haig and could bring the family to a whole new world.

Since he was young, Harson had pledged to make Haig his competitor with a clear target; he wanted to replace Haig and make the Charteris family the leading family of the God Clan.

He didn't have many friends in the God Clan. Mia was one of his few friends. When they were just little children, Mia and Harson were brought to the Five Absolute Domain of the God Clan to cultivate ascetically. At that time, he wasn't as strong as Mia. Mia had taken care of him for a while. Harson always considered Mia his older sister. From that moment, they had formed a strong friendship.

Mia didn't like cold, empty men. Haig was that sort of man. In that year, Harson was really young and simple. The two of them had experienced struggles and difficulties together, which had strengthened their friendship.

"Haig got the best reward of our ancestral star. If he can get the approval of Desolate, no matter how hard you try, you won't have the slightest chance. You must take care of this very well!" said Mia.

"Don't worry. I will win this time!" Harson said with a dark face and took a deep breath. "If I can't get the approval of Desolate, I will try my best to kill Haig on this ancient continent. He'll die or I'll die. Only one of us will become the leader of our clan."

"I do hope that you could win," Mia smiled at him.

"Ahhhhh! Ahhhh!"

Suddenly, the two members of the Charteris family clutched their stomachs and rolled in pain.

Their whining got louder and finally, they screamed with red faces. The blood bones were stirring inside their stomachs. They

couldn't control the bones anymore. It twisted their intestines and gave them an incredible pain that made them ashen and tear up.

Harson wasn't also shaken. He pressed his hands on the bone in his abdomen. The veins on the back of his hands bulged like wriggling snakes, releasing an enraged, ruthless energy that entered the blood bone quickly. The peculiar formation on the bone became visible like when someone unfolded a roll of a picture.

The bones inside Harson's two subordinates struggled like beasts that wanted to get out of the confinement. The energy waves emitted by them were terrifying.

"Grrrrrrr!"

The two of them rolled on the ground by Harson's feet as if someone was tearing their intestines. The formation on their bones glowed and flashed. They seemed to want to get out of their bodies and fly away as someone had erased the wicked formation on them.

"What's going on?!" Mia shouted hoarsely.

"That Immortal Demon brat! He's messing with us!" Harson looked so ferocious. Looking at his two troopers who couldn't endure anymore, Harson changed his face and then extended his hands.

He placed his hands on the heads of his two subordinates.

Boom! Boom!

The skulls of Harson's two troopers were crushed. The host soul in the soul altar exploded directly like a fragile egg, sending away the broken pieces of soul remnant.

Harson wore a cold face. He didn't even look at his warriors who had just died tragically. He waved his hand and retrieved the two pieces of bone. Taking a deep breath, he stabbed them in his abdomen. He said with a wince, "Their souls weren't strong

enough to hold the blood bones. I have to destroy their souls and use my soul to control the bones. That's how I can counterattack that brat."

Yue Man watched him silently, his face pale. He shivered as he witnessed Harson's cruel act.

Mia knitted her brows. Although she didn't really agree with Harson, she didn't say anything. In her eyes, Harson's warriors were paws of a cat that the Charteris family had arranged for him. It wasn't a big deal when they died for him.

After Harson had squeezed off the head of his warriors, their souls have broken altogether, but they hadn't become ashes. They suddenly ignited and burned. At the same time, their bodies withered and dried up, releasing the powerful energy that then entered one end of the three bones that jutted out of Harson's abdomen. They boosted Harson's power instantly.

The "Burning Purgatory" was the wicked power Upanishad of the Charteris family. Warriors who were bestowed with a blood bone understood this power Upanishad.

Harson had used the special features of their soul and bodies to activate the Burning Purgatory through the wicked formation, which supplied him abundant energy instantly. Now, Harson could strike Shi Yan hard and he could kill Shi Yan even though they weren't in the same location.

The surging, terrifying energy poured into Harson's blood bones. Then, his intestines and veins twisted around the three blood bones as if they had eyes. Harson faced the sky and roared, trying to mobilize his God power. He sent his soul into the evil formation of the three blood bones. Despite the distance, he could activate another deadly ability of the White Bone Refining Blood Ghost Grave.

In the desert, the nine blood bones in front of Shi Yan were shaking. All of a sudden, Shi Yan paled as if he was hammered

badly. His body trembled hard.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were near him. Seeing his condition, they discolored and shouted, "What's wrong?"

Shi Yan had blood trickling down the corner of his mouth. His eyes became icy and cold. He waved at the two women to signal them that he was alright. Then, he closed his eyes once again.

A wave of lethal death energy emitted from him. The pale wisps of gray mist slowly floated out from his acupuncture points and congregated in each of the blood bones. The magical formation on the blood bones dimmed out as if an invisible brush was cleaning the evil formations carved on the bones.

Swoosh!

A bloody bone pierced through the desert from nowhere. No one knew how far it had traveled before it halted right in front of Shi Yan. Now, he had one more piece of bone.

"Pffft!"

Shi Yan spurted out blood, which sprayed on the ten pieces of bone. They became gory with a strong blood smell.

Shi Yan's face was paler.

In this ancient continent, the remaining Charteris warriors, whether they were struggling in the deathtrap or closing their eyes to meditate, had their souls shaken.

They were guided and drawn by a terrible energy floating up into the sky and flying in a direction.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The Charteris warriors fell in front of Harson. Wicked aura meandered around Harson as he shouted, "Give me your best to resist this!"

Each of the Charteris warriors immediately understood that Harson had used the forbidden White Bone Refining Blood Ghost

Grave to burn his soul and body to guide them here.

They didn't say anything and surrounded Harson before sitting down cross-legged. Then, they urged their energy to help Harson counter the enemy.

Harson's condition wasn't good. Everybody knew that when he urged his power to the acme, it was also the time when he was in the biggest danger. It was the common disaster of the Charteris members; they were using their Burning Purgatory power Upanishad!

Mia and Yue Man exchanged looks. They could see how serious this situation was. They knew that Harson and Shi Yan was engaging in a bloody battle even though they were thousands of miles away from each other. And this time, their struggle was much more perilous than the previous time.

If Harson failed, all of his subordinates would also be killed with him. Shi Yan would be able to take all of Xuan Shan's bones. The blood bones that the Charteris family had to spend countless types of materials to refine for Harson would become a sharp divine weapon in Shi Yan's hands!

Chapter 1165: Capture the Heart

In the desert, Shi Yan spurted more blood. His blood looked like pieces of dark ruby that sprayed on the ten blood bones. The formations carved on the ten bones were so vague. They were almost cleared.

Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia looked at him and felt so tense. They were worried that something bad would happen to him. They hoped that he could resist until the end.

As things had come to this, they could see that Shi Yan was fighting Harson one more time. They all knew how crazy Harson was. They were worried that Shi Yan couldn't defeat Harson and his soul would break. His life would be over because of those ten bones.

However, Shi Yan was much stronger and tougher than they thought.

His body transformed. Slowly, he had the Immortal Demon Body. Each drop of Immortal Demon Blood was boiling inside his body and releasing immense, evil energy waves.

Layers of silky clothes made of starlight gradually covered his Immortal Demon Body and sank him into a dreamy, transparent cloak. When Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia saw him like this, they felt that he was so perfect. The two women were astonished. Their beautiful eyes looked at Shi Yan strangely.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

The exquisite blood line flew out of the ten blood bones when the wicked formations on them vanished in just a blink of an eye.

Countless blood lines floated and flew away, heading towards Harson.

Shi Yan's tense nerves were relaxed. He felt so exhausted. However, he was laughing happily as he was excited to watch the

ten blood bones.

The blood bone with the stains of Immortal Demon Blood in Shi Yan's body became more crystal clear and garnet. They were fulgent and twinkling as if they were blood crystal. Although they looked beautiful, they all had a brutal, deadly aura. Now, they could be combined with Shi Yan's bones.

Looking at the ten blood bones and feeling the close connection with the blood in his body, Shi Yan knew that he didn't waste his efforts. From now on, these ten pieces of Xuan Shan's bones would become his real sharp weapons. The Charteris' evil formation had turned into fine blood lines and flew away. For the time being, they wouldn't be any threat to him.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The ten pieces of bone fell on the ground. Shi Yan smiled and also lay down relaxingly. "Those bones belong to me for now. Although I got hurt, it's worth it."

Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia exhaled in relief. Cecilia pried, "How about Harson?"

"I don't know. I guess he won't be better than me. Anyway, I got ten bones. He lost them." Shi Yan grinned. "Those blood bones belonged to Xuan Shan, an expert who cultivated Death power Upanishad. I got the inheritance of the Death power Upanishad... He wanted to fight me... Harrumph!"

Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia exchanged looks. They could see the strange feeling in each other's eyes. Shi Yan had just confirmed his relationship with the Bloodthirsty Force. The two women felt a little insecure.

They quieted down and said nothing about the Bloodthirsty Force. They knew that it wasn't the right time.

Inside the rocky forest, Harson was bleeding all over his body.

His face was as pale as a sheet of white paper. He looked so savage and dark.

The members of the Charteris family standing near him also grimaced. They felt so powerless.

Although they had helped Harson counter Shi Yan, they couldn't stop him from cleaning the wicked formations on ten blood bones. Afterward, it made them felt so dispirited that they couldn't beat Shi Yan up. It annoyed them a lot.

As they had followed Harson for years, they had met many kinds of enemies. After years of battling, they had never received such a big loss.

"Hey, are you alright?" Mia asked, her face worried.

"I'm alright. That brat has the Death power Upanishad Inheritance. He has a subtle, magical connection with Xuan Shan's bones. It's not easy to get the bones." However, Harson didn't sound dispirited. "At least I gave him a hard strike which means he won't recover in a short time. I'm sure his power is reduced by half. And I... my power isn't reduced..."

What he had burned were the bodies and the souls of his two subordinates. Indeed, he didn't spend anything significant.

"As long as we find him, he will be dead!" Harson said gloomily, "He thought he got the upper hand, but he didn't know that he's near Death. We need to move now. Check around. If I can locate him, he'll be smashed!"

Then, Harson stood up.

Mia and Yue Man exchanged looks. They didn't say anything because they knew Harson's desire of killing Shi Yan had been prioritized beyond everything else. At the same time, they had to bear a lot of bitter fruits from Shi Yan. They thought that should take the chance to kill him.

In the desert, the furious sandstorm became stronger and it terrified people. The unceasing wind howling echoed in their ears. The entire desert seemed to become an enraged beast. It was getting wilder and stronger.

Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia darkened their face and watched the storm raising sands to the sky. They felt so bitter.

They had stayed in this desert for a long time. They knew that it would have sand storms every three or five days. They had to bear a lot of trouble here...

The two women had consumed a lot of God power and their mental condition wasn't really right. And Shi Yan looked even worse than them. And now, as the sandstorm was rising higher in the sky, should they bury their bodies in this damn place?

What should they do?

The two women looked at each other, seeing despair in each other's eyes. They couldn't do anything but sigh.

Looking at the sky, they knew that Desolate was trying to torture them one more time. And now, as Shi Yan was here, the sandstorm seemed to be much wilder and more savage.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

All of a sudden, the sand under their feet collapsed inwardly. As they hadn't reacted yet, they fell together with Shi Yan into a deep hole that appeared all of a sudden in the desert.

Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia changed their faces. They rose their hand, clutching Shi Yan's arms. Together, one on his left and one on his right, they fell into a bottomless abyss under the desert.

"Agggghhhhh!"

Shang Ying Yue shouted.

Deep in the bottom of the pitch, they could see twinkling, sharp crystals. They jutted into the air from the ground like the sharpest

swords. They were the icy, transparent crystals, that looked really marvelous. However, they had the cold light of sharp metals.

As they were falling at a speed as fast as lightning and they were so close to those sharp, pointy crystals when they descended, they were going to be pierced through.

Because Shang Ying Yue could recognize what those crystals were...

They were the Icy Soul Cold Crystal! They were the Original Incipient Grade material and the extremely cold ones. And they were Shang Ying Yue's primary target when she came to the ancient continent this time. It would be the critical point for her to break through to Incipient God Realm!

The Icy Soul Cold Crystal was the hardest thing in this universe that many divine weapons couldn't cut it. The Icy Soul Cold Crystal could be used as the mysterious divine weapons of the warriors who cultivated the Ice power Upanishad. Its hardness, coldness, and sharpness were all the best of the best!

Shang Ying Yue urged her power and tried to reduce her falling speed. Cecilia did the same.

Unfortunately, the ground down there had a terrifying gravity. No matter how hard they had tried, they couldn't overturn the situation, so they could only follow their fate and fall.

Despair filled their hearts once again.

As the two women were clutching his arms and his condition wasn't good after the battle with Harson as it cost him a lot of energy, he couldn't even urge half of his power to create the flood of energy to stop his body from falling.

Anyway, the more dangerous the situation was, the calmer Shi Yan became. Thoughts flashed through his head as he tried to find a solution.

"Desolate is so curious about love. Don't make it feel bored. Don't

make it less interested in you..."

What Audrey had told him echoed in his head one more time. His thoughts flashed like the holy spear when he made up his mind rapidly. He wanted to bet once!

He bet that Desolate was watching all of these! He bet that Desolate is tricking him!

Seeing that the three of them were about to touch the ground, he decided quickly. The bones in his body sounded like fried beans. A new force was generated. He swung his hands forcefully.

Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia were moved by his force. A cushion of starlight appeared above his head to bear Shang Ying Yue's and Cecilia's soft bodies. Right after that, he used his Immortal Demon Body to fall on the sword-like sharp Icy Soul Cold Crystals.

"Puff! Puff! Puff!"

His immortal body couldn't bear the piercing strength of the Icy Soul Cold Crystals. His body was pierced. Three Icy Soul Cold Crystals had drilled through his body from his feet to his shoulder. His body and internal organs were penetrated.

He had to bear a thousand blades slashing him at the same time. This heart-pricking pain was so hard to endure. Shi Yan roared and hissed when his body seemed to be shattered. His consciousness became hazy.

And Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia were put above his head. They stayed on the cushion he had created with his last pieces of power that kept them safe from harm.

"You let your body down to give us a chance to live!" Cecilia had tears on her eyes. The lake in her heart rippled as if someone had thrown a stone in there. She was so touched.

Shang Ying Yue bit her lower lips. A strange light emitted from her beautiful eyes. She quivered but said nothing.

"I can't die yet," Shi Yan was bleeding, his blood making a dark red puddle on the ground. He smiled at them. "You guys, please get down. My starlight cushion can't bear you for a long time."

The two women were shaken. They hastened to jump off his head and moved their slender thighs to land between the Icy Soul Cold Crystals. They then observed him with bright eyes that made him a little scared. "Are you all right? Here, swallow these pellets. Quick, melt them down." Shang Ying Yue talked to him in a tender voice that he had never heard before. She took out some red pellets that were as big as longans and shoved them into his mouth.

"I'll help you melt the pellets!" Cecilia's jade hand pressed on his chest. A beam of supple power slowly poured into his body and carefully helped him melt the pellets.

Shi Yan enjoyed their care and his face strange. He looked around and become bewildered. He shouted as if he was so thrilled. "You guys, look! Let's see where we are!"

The two women turned around to look. They were filled with astonishment instantly. They couldn't hold their scream of surprise.

Chapter 1166: Desolate's Generous Gifts

Countless multicolor crystals stood by them and sparkled dazzlingly.

Those crystals were there for so many years to accumulate earth and heaven energy. The energy inside them was powerful and abundant. The warriors who could see those things would be dumbstruck.

"Oh gosh!"

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue shouted. They covered their mouths as they were so astounded. Their hearts were filled with joy immediately.

The exquisite jades and gems stacked up like wooden logs. They were so shiny that they could daze people easily. The Ice Soul Cold Crystal looked like they were condensed from frost and mist. The Fire Jade was as red as the most beautiful flame. The Water Heart Crystal seemed to have real water murmuring inside. The Fresh Wood Crystal had a wood texture. The Refined Gold Crystal looked like the precious gold. The Absolute Earth Crystal was transparent in a marvelous amber hue...

The crystals with the powers of Five Elements were glowing in radiant and glorious halos right next to them. The energy that surged from those crystals was so wonderful.

Those items were the top treasures of each class of powers in the world. They were all Original Incipient Grade materials that the warriors could use to refine their bodies or create weapons. They could also absorb them directly to enhance their God power. With various functions, they could bring the warriors unimaginable benefits!

As they could survive this lethal deathtrap, they were so happy. And now, looking at the priceless crystals around the ground, they

thought that they were dreaming.

Each of those Original Incipient Grade materials was a top treasure in the world. In this vast sea of stars, they were the top Five Element treasures to be met by chance, not to be earned by demand. was Warriors had a hidden love for each of them that no one wanted to show to others.

The Original Incipient Grade materials could trade an entire life star since it could help warriors understand the true meaning of powers Upanishad to break through to a new realm rapidly. However, in this area, there were so many that they were scattered around like cheap pebbles...

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue shivered slightly. They couldn't even talk normally. Apparently, they were still panic-stricken.

"They all said that Desolate is the most strange among the ancient continents. It contains countless precious items in the world. Today, I believe that." Shi Yan winced in pain after each word. He felt so bad that it was like the pain when someone was slashing his body piece by piece.

"Of course, Desolate is special for producing the top treasures of earth and heaven. Only this area that hasn't been trespassed can have so many treasures like that!" Shang Ying Yue didn't pay attention to his pain. Her beautiful eyes still lingered on the Icy Soul Cold Crystals. She was calculating to which level she could develop her power when she got those crystals and when she could reach Incipient God Realm.

Just like Shang Ying Yue, Cecilia was watching the Water Heart Crystal with desire.

The Water Heart Crystal had a heart shape. It was like a big drop of water with sounds of murmuring water echoing pleasantly to the ears. Such souls reached her ears and she felt like she received some bit of invisible power, giving a tonic to her soul altar. She felt so comfortable as if she was studying her Water power Upanishad.

They were so thrilled and they seemed to lose their control when they saw the Original Incipient Grade crystals. Their minds were wandering around the benefits they could have. For the time being, they forgot Shi Yan.

Then, they heard a scream in pain.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue hurriedly reacted and pulled themselves together. They used their jade-like hands to stroke his bleeding wounds. And they softened their voices to ask him. They were so gentle to him at this moment.

If Shi Yan hadn't shouldered the danger for them at the critical moment, the two of them would have been pierced through by the Icy Soul Cold Crystals. They would have died because their God Bodies wouldn't bear the Icy Soul Cold Crystal. They would have died instantly.

The two women had a little feeling for Shi Yan. After this event, Shi Yan had risked his life to protect them in despair, which had carved his image in their hearts. Thus, when they treated Shi Yan now, their attitude and even their voices had changed...

Shi Yan felt warm when their soft hands consoled his bleeding wounds. He smiled naturally, "I have to get rid of these crystals first. You should give me some room."

"Will it hurt?"

"Just slow down, okay?"

"Can you endure that?"

"Hold on..."

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue became so gentle. They worried about him so much, more than they had ever before.

"It's alright. A long pain is worse than a short pain, right? Move away." Shi Yan tried to wave his hand once. After they backed off to give him room, he forcefully urged his power. A surging flow of

energy shot out of his body. He gritted his teeth and jumped up. His bones and veins cracked again as he soared several meters up into the air. Right after that, he landed in the gap between the crystals and bled badly. He then crouched on the ground like a puddle of mud and used his Immortal Demon Blood to close the wounds.

His wounds were even longer than the slash from a sword. They looked so bad that people doubted if he could heal them or not. The two women could even see his broken veins and cut intestines...

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue felt a twitching pain in their hearts. They couldn't stand watching him so they turned around, their eyes watery. It was the first time they felt hurt because of a man.

Shi Yan tried to smile. He crouched on the ground and closed his eyes to sense. His eyes were filled with pain.

The situation of his wounds was much worse than what he had expected. He had used half of his energy in the battle with Harson and his body was also hurt. And now, he was pierced through, which made him felt like he was dismembered. If he hadn't endured so much pain and difficulties throughout so many years, he was afraid that he wouldn't have been able to endure this pain. If he didn't faint, his mind was going to collapse.

Since his life was rough and he had spent all of his time struggling to survive, his willpower was terrifyingly strong. That's how he could endure it until now. He didn't shame himself by fainting.

Gritting his teeth, Shi Yan urged his power Upanishad and used the Immortal Demon Blood to heal his wounded body. His face changed again. After getting hurt twice, he had used a lot of his Immortal Demon Blood. He couldn't even keep his Immortal Demon Body.

The Immortal Demon Blood wasn't unlimited. Shi Yan had to

condense each drop. They were the essence of his Blood Qi with the power of Life power Upanishad. Only when his Immortal Demon Blood was brimming could he recover his current severe wounds. Otherwise, he wouldn't be able to heal his terrible body. Shi Yan became stern.

He didn't have much affection for Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue. The reason why he had to pay this big price of having his body damaged badly to rescue Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue was that he wanted to make a big bet with Desolate.

And now, he knew that he won.

Desolate didn't continue to attack them, but let them appear in this marvelous land of divine crystals. They... were the generous rewards that Desolate had bestowed them.

"How are you?"

"Are you all right?"

Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia asked him, their beautiful eyes filled with sadness. They were so worried that he would have some big problem.

"I'm okay," Shi Yan shook his head and tried to give a smile, "But if I want to recover fully, I need some magical encounter, perhaps. Sigh, let me think."

He looked at the wonderful crystals around and frowned, "You guys can help me check around. Let's see if you can find something good for Blood Qi. If you can find something, I can recover faster. Otherwise, I will be in big trouble."

"Wait for us. We're going to search around!" Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue glided away. Their bodies swayed through the place like butterflies, flashing their voluptuous butts and thighs that would make people aroused.

Shi Yan chuckled. He tried to endure the pain to pull his body into a sitting posture. He took a deep breath and then urged his

Life power Upanishad to activate the most magical healing ability. He let his soul and consciousness gather in the Immortal Demon Blood to trigger the recovering power of the blood to heal himself.

He didn't believe that he had gained something good from his unintended action. Since he wanted to compete with Desolate, he had captured Cecilia's and Shang Ying Yue's hearts although he didn't intend to. From their expression and emotion, he knew that they had good feelings for him.

Of course, it was still far behind the degree when they would sacrifice their lives for each other. However, the affection they had for him wasn't unreal. If he invested in it, he was confident that he could have Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue in his place and make them his women...

Since this place was the ancient continent, Desolate's exclusive territory, if he wanted to survive and decode Desolate's mysteries, he had to continue playing for his life, Cecilia's life, and Shang Ying Yue's life whether he liked them or not. He had to force himself to like them. That's how he could deceive Desolate and get what he wanted from this ancient continent.

Pondering for a while, he had made up his mind.

A moment later, Cecilia returned with nothing. Her charming face was reluctant. "The area I searched doesn't have anything suitable for you. Your powers Upanishads are all strange. And the crystals here are all the common ones. I... I can't find anything good."

"It's all right. I can still recover anyway." Shi Yan consoled her and then waved his hand at her. "Come here with me."

(censored)

Cecilia walked to him. Her sexy body was outlined by a silk dress, which flashed her flat tummy that didn't have any scar and half of her creamy thighs. Her round breasts bounced while she was

walking. Her hot, sexy body leaned against Shi Yan. She was like a delicious, ripe peach that people would hate themselves for not being able to sink their teeth into.

Shi Yan laughed and pulled her hands so she would jump onto his lap after sitting next to him. Then, he started to claim her lips passionately.

Cecilia responded wildly. Her snow-white hands pulled around his rough neck and lingered on his broad back. However, she was careful enough not to touch his terrible wounds. She gasped and tried to tangle her lips with his.

When they were in the pond, Cecilia had felt it disgusting when Shi Yan touched her. She wasn't really fine with it as she had shown him at that time. She was persistent not to use her body to make Shi Yan help her in the ancient continent. It showed her last border.

Anyway, since the lake in her heart had Shi Yan's image, she didn't reject him anymore. And because his wounds were still there, she had just followed him...

Of course, it was Shi Yan's evil plan. Right now he was bullying her as his big hands were stroking her sexy, creamy thighs, her round butt, and her ample bosom without retracting. His eyes were so hot that he had almost taken out his spear.

"Hmmm..."

Cecilia's face was red as if blood could drip from her face at any minute. However, her blushing made her more seducing. She tried to push Shi Yan away, struggling to make some room between them. She told him off with a voice of the mosquito. "Do you know where we are? If you want to do something, at least you have to wait until your wounds are recovered. Shang Ying Yue... will be back at any minute."

Shi Yan smiled relaxingly. He didn't force the woman anymore.

Looking at the charming Cecilia while she was enraged and embarrassed and had lust in her eyes, Shi Yan felt much better. He nodded and lowered his voice, "Then you have to let me... when my wounds are healed."

Cecilia bit her lips and nodded. She blushed and glanced at him, "You bastard! You can't erase your lustful mind even though you are in such a condition. My hands are tied because of you."

Shi Yan just laughed.

Chapter 1167: Healing!

A corner of the ancient continent.

Harson, Mia, Yue Man, and some members of the Charteris family were moving through an immense forest. They had just survived a lethal deathtrap.

Harson was using the blood bone to locate Shi Yan.

Mia, Yue Man, and the others were exhausted, but they didn't complain. In this ancient continent, each step was dangerous. And they couldn't stay idle in a specific area.

Harson led the group. All of a sudden, his brows twitched. He smiled evilly, "I found him."

Everybody was cheered up and they looked at Harson.

"In that direction. It's a little far from us. But I'm sure that we can reach there in twenty hours. He's in a desert. I could even feel the heat there." Harson grinned fiendishly. "To get the blood bones from me, he got hurt. He couldn't recover in a short time. As long as we find him, we will kill him and I will take back the blood bones the Charteris family had refined."

"Then we should move now!" Mia wore a cold face and she snorted. "This man killed my entourage. He even robbed my Seven-colored Spirit Flower and my Seven-colored Demonic Flower. If I don't destroy him, I will never feel all right again!"

After they had navigated, they moved immediately and headed to the desert.

Also in the forest but in another location, Audrey, Sha Zhao, Jiao Hai, Jiao Shan, Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Wu Bai were walking to the holy mountain.

They had found Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Wu Bai ten hours ago. Wu

Feng's team had just gotten rid of the ice sculptures. Audrey found them, so they joined Audrey's team and headed to the holy mountain.

Sha Zhao arched his brows and looked in the direction ahead of them. He said, "There's a desert ahead of us..."

Everybody looked at him bewilderedly and asked for more information. Because in this Center, even Audrey couldn't use her Soul Consciousness to check the surroundings. How could Sha Zhao?

"My name is Sha Zhao, which has the same pronunciation as 'desert.' I was born and in the desert and I grew up there. The life Gu I've been cultivating is the Sand Worm..." Sha Zhao looked at the others and said confidently, "I'm so used to the smell and aura of the desert. My Sand Worm can sense the energy fluctuation and the familiar heat of the desert. Don't worry. My Life Gu won't make a wrong guess this time. Ahead of us is a desert."

"So what?" Mo Fou asked as he didn't have a clue.

"He's there," Sha Zhao smiled.

Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Wu Bai didn't understand him, but Audrey, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan were bewildered. They reacted immediately as they knew the one who Sha Zhao had referred to as "He" could only be one person they knew: Shi Yan.

"My Life Gu will be boosted marvelously when it comes near the desert because it was incubated and born in the desert. It can be said that my Gu is the master of the desert so it can sense what I can't." Sha Zhao explained, "He's there. My Life Gu remembers his aura. I'm sure about this."

Audrey, Jiao Shan, and Jiao Hai hesitated for a while, but then, they headed towards the area that Sha Zhao had pointed. They surprised Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Wu Bai. They looked at Sha Zhao, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan skeptically. And then, they realized that

something had happened between Shi Yan and these three. Otherwise, they wouldn't act like that.

In this ancient continent, only joining hands would help them resist the God Clan and survive. That's why Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Wu Bai didn't have any strange actions. They all followed the others.

Under the desert where there were so many beautiful crystals, Shi Yan was laughing and talking to Cecilia, making her blush. She shot him her shy glances from time to time.

"Hey, look at you. You are still so reckless even though you've gotten such wounds. I don't know how you've managed to survive until now." Cecilia was blushing, but she wasn't outraged. Her pretty eyes were smiling as she felt really sweet.

"Hey guys, check what I've found!" Shang Ying Yue's clear and cold voice arose from a distance. It seemed like she got something.

Cecilia retracted her hand from Shi Yan's hand. She looked awkward as she hastened to adjust her clothes. Right then, she sat upright as if nothing had happened between them. She lifted her head and asked, "What did you find?"

Shang Ying Yue wasn't as experienced as Cecilia. She couldn't see anything strange between the other two. She was still sinking in her joy. "Blood Essence Stone! It's the Blood Essence Stone! I found the Blood Essence Stone!" She cheered and glided towards the other two. She stood by Shi Yan and showed him around ten strange fist-sized stones. They looked like they had real blood inside.

Cecilia's understanding of earth and heaven materials wasn't as good as Shang Ying Yue's. At first glance, she looked confused. She didn't know how precious or magical the Blood Essence Stone was.

Shi Yan was shaken. He gazed at the Blood Essence Stones and

sighed, "Turns out the Mighty Heaven does care about me!"

"It's really good for you?" Cecilia was also excited, her face cheered up. "Tell me. What can it do for this asshole?"

"The Blood Essence Stone is the Original Incipient Grade material. To the Immortal Demon Clan, it's the best tonic. It can supply Blood Qi to help condense more Immortal Demon Blood and make the process faster!" Shang Ying Yue beamed weakly and looked at Shi Yan. "Am I correct?"

"Ying Yue is right. The Blood Essence Stone is the top treasure to me. It can give me a speedy recovery. I've heard about this but never seen it with my own eyes. I heard that only the Ancient Demon Continent has this kind of stone. I didn't expect to see it here. It seems like I will be healed soon." Shi Yan grinned. Because his mood was so good, he fondly called Shang Ying Yue by her name "Ying Yue."

Shang Ying Yue was always indifferent and cold. Hearing him addressing her dearly, her lukewarm face blushed. She became a little helpless and didn't know what to say.

She fumbled and placed the Blood Essence Stones in front of Shi Yan. She looked panicked as she took several steps back. She shivered and her mind was like a ball of cotton. She didn't know how to deal with this awkward situation...

In fact, she hated Shi Yan a lot, even before they had entered the ancient continent. She had made up her mind that she would trouble Shi Yan a lot because he had seized her brother's chance to enter the ancient continent. And he had come to assist her and caught her in odd situations, which deepened the grudge she had against him.

Everything had escalated quickly beyond her estimation. As she wanted to take revenge on the Bai family, she had unwillingly accompanied Shi Yan. Inside the invisible light cage, Shi Yan had taunted her and made her hate him more.

Gradually, the longer she had stayed with him, the more mysterious she found that he was. Shi Yan was like a deep lake that she wanted to explore how deep it went. As things had changed, she had eventually accepted Shi Yan under the threat of the God Clan. She had grouped him with Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and the others. After some serious events, the way she treated him also changed.

In the desert, while she and Cecilia were hopeless without a hand reaching over them, Shi Yan appeared out of nowhere. It was the first time he had touched her heart.

Currently, Shi Yan had protected her regardless of his life. He was willing to let his body be smashed so she could be safe. It was a final arrow hitting her heart that left an image there.

However, since she was a little girl until now, she had never had a feeling for any man. She also lacked experience in talking to men. Hearing him calling her dearly like that, she blushed and got flustered. She felt a little dizzy as she didn't know what had just happened to her. Instinctively, she dodged and didn't dare to look at him in the eyes. However, after thinking about it, she found out that she wasn't angry when he called her fondly like that.

Quite the contrary, she felt a little joy...

He called me so fondly but not Cecilia... Does it mean that I'm more important than Cecilia to him? Shang Ying Yue thought.

"With these Blood Essence Stones, my God Body will be healed fast!" Shi Yan threw Shang Ying Yue a glance. She looked like she had a bunch of fawn running around. "Ying Yue, you're excellent. If it wasn't for you, I wouldn't be getting better soon."

Shang Ying Yue's face was tepid, but the corners of her mouth pulled into a curve of joy, her bright eyes twinkling.

Cecilia smiled but her eyes didn't. She glared at Shi Yan and said awkwardly, "Oh right, she's useful while I'm useless. I can't help you with anything."

Shi Yan gave a reluctant dry cough and then said, "I need to recover using the Blood Essence Stones now. You guys should collect all the crystals here. We shouldn't give this good chance to anybody else."

The two women were stirred up listening to him. Since his situation was stable now, they didn't need to worry about him more. Their flames of desire for the treasures burned one more time. They regarded him and didn't wait for him to talk more. They rushed around like the two butterflies. They started to harvest the precious stones.

Taking a deep breath, Shi Yan adjusted his mood to the best condition, picking up one stone from the other ten lying in front of him.

Boom!

Immortal Demon Blood boiled in his body as if it was stirring up the energy of the Blood Essence Stone. The smaller crystals inside the Blood Essence Stone looked like a blood diamond releasing abundant waves of energy.

The Immortal Demon Blood in his body ignited. Beams of magical, pure Blood Qi flooded in, fusing with the Immortal Demon Blood in his veins. As soon as they had entered his veins, his Demon Blood condensed faster. It was almost instantaneous as one ruby drop was produced and it gave him a marvelous feeling.

It seemed like the Blood Essence Stone had helped him urge the energy of his flesh body. It was just a small Blood Essence Stone but the energy it had sent him was endless. Shi Yan thought that he couldn't use it up this time.

The Blood Essence Stone was worth the top treasure and was most suitable for the Immortal Demon Clan. The Blood Qi from one stone had brought him incredible energy. Shi Yan felt so good that he wanted to laugh out loud.

The wounds in his body closed and healed at a speed that naked eyes could observe. However, it was several times faster than before.

The cut veins were connected. The broken bones were fixed and become even tougher. His flesh wiggled and closed little by little as if someone was sewing them all together. After a while, he looked intact without even a tiny scar.

The Immortal Demon Body was so marvelous. After he got the supply of energy from the stone, he knew that he would fully recover quickly with only one piece of the Blood Essence Stone. The energy stored in this stone was way beyond his estimation!

What a wonderful Original Incipient Grade treasure!

He suddenly felt grateful for Shang Chen because he had arranged for him to enter this area. To Shi Yan, this place was a treasure. As long as he put his head in it and searched more, he would receive the best surprise of earth and heaven.

Finally, Shi Yan knew why the outstanding prodigies of the God Clan and the other star areas in this cosmos had risked everything to get here. This place had things worth paying with their lives!

Chapter 1168: Show the Inferior Face to the Enemy

It was only one piece of Blood Essence Stone and it was enough to provide Shi Yan with rich Blood Qi. It had helped him refill the Immortal Demon Blood and it also refined his body's containing capacity to another level!

The Immortal Demon Blood was the power generator of his Immortal Demon Body. Filled with adequate Immortal Demon Blood, the damages to his God Body were insignificant.

After the Blood Essence Stone was used up, it became a plain stone. Shi Yan's God Body was fully covered in a blood cocoon. Life energy fluctuations surged immensely inside that cocoon and it gave people an impression of seeing something with endless vitality.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were so excited as they were collecting crystals with different characteristics.

The Ice Soul Cold Crystal looked like they were condensed from frost and mist. The Fire Jade was as red as the most beautiful flame. The Water Heart Crystal seemed to have real water murmuring inside. The Fresh Wood Crystal had a wooden texture. The Refined Gold Crystal looked like precious gold. The Absolute Earth Crystal was transparent in a marvelous amber hue... Those were all the Original Incipient Grade materials with the powers of Five Elements. Each of them was priceless.

The two women harvested the crystals, putting them in the special containers. The piles of crystals around Shi Yan disappeared quickly.

When there was no crystal around them anymore, Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia laughed contentedly and returned to Shi Yan. Then, they saw him shrouded inside a blood cocoon where life

energy surged torrentially.

"How is your harvest?" Cecilia smiled charmingly, light twinkling in her eyes.

"More than sixty pieces," Shang Ying Yue arched her brows happily. She couldn't hide her joy. "They are so huge that they take a lot of room. Luckily, I've prepared properly. Before I came here, I've thought of this. I brought many Fantasy Sky Rings."

The crystals and jades here weren't small at all and they had similar sizes. Although the number of them wasn't more than several hundred thousand pieces, dozens of Original Incipient Grade jades sounded terrific enough.

She got a huge fortune!

What she had collected included the crystals of Ice and Thunder classes, which were so important to her cultivation. They could help her break through to Incipient God Realm more easily.

Cecilia had focused on collecting the Water Heart Crystal and then the Absolute Earth Crystal and Fire Jade Crystal. She had dozens of them in her Fantasy Sky Rings. Now, she was smiling to her ears.

And as Shi Yan's condition was stable, they could ease their minds, chatting with each other.

"Hey, girl. Have you had any plan for the future?" Cecilia hesitated for a while before asking softly. "We have to get out of here anyway. After that, what do you want to do with him?" She extended her hand and pointed at Shi Yan.

Shang Ying Yue's elegant face blushed a little bit. She bit her lower lip and muttered, "I don't know... Let's see what happens then. He and my father have a connection and he's in Agate Star Area. It's not really difficult to find him."

Lifting her face, she looked at Cecilia and asked, "Your star area is very far from his. How about you? What's your plan?"

Cecilia beamed like a blooming flower. She soon had a plan and she spoke frankly. "After I've arranged things in my family, I will... go to Agate Star Area to find him. I've made up my mind. If I go with him, my life will be more colorful. Haha."

"You can give up your family?" Shang Ying Yue was surprised.

"After I've reached Incipient God Realm, I won't be too dependent on my family. With these treasures, no matter where I choose to stay, I can live a better life," said Cecilia relaxingly.

Shang Ying Yue showed her respect. She looked at Cecilia with admiration.

Swish!

The blood cocoon covering Shi Yan was torn, its pieces turning into blood-red powder and scattering.

Shi Yan appeared naked.

His lean, beautiful-built body emerged as if each of his muscles was carved by the most skillful craftsman. His God Body looked like it was molded out of metal, which was full of the masculine attractiveness of a robust man.

Shang Ying Yue jerked back as she was startled. She didn't dare to look at him, her heart beating hard. She cursed him under her breath.

Cecilia was much braver. Her beautiful eyes scanned Shi Yan's body as she smiled gently, "Oh wow! Not bad at all. It makes my heart beat faster." She laughed and threw a glance at Shang Ying Yue, making the girl shyer.

"Hey, how are you?" Cecilia asked tenderly and stopped teasing Shang Ying Yue more.

Shi Yan beamed, "The Blood Essence Stone is truly the most suitable divine material for the Immortal Demon warriors. Don't worry. After using the energy stored in one stone, I've fully

recovered. And my Immortal Demon Blood and my body are all improved.

Listening to him, Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia could finally ease their minds.

"Let's get out of here." Shi Yan lifted his face looking at the flaming red sky.

They were under the desert on a hard rocky ground. It looked like a massive well dug deep into the earth. The wall of this well had many extruding rocks that which they could use to climb back to the surface.

"We have to go back there now?" Cecilia discolored slightly. "The desert has many scorching storms and we can't get rid of them. I'm afraid..."

Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia had been walking in this desert for a long time. They couldn't get out of it until Shi Yan had arrived. However, the area under the desert was quiet enough and it wasn't affected by the stone and sand over their heads. She wanted to stay here for a while.

"It should be easy to get out of the desert now," Shi Yan smiled and explained, "because the maze is solved."

When he was using the Blood Essence Stone to heal his body, he could feel a little change of the desert above his head. Sensing for a while, he knew that the barrier had disappeared. That's why he wanted to leave this area.

Hearing him, Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were so thrilled. Then, Shi Yan and the two women used the extruding stones on the wall of this pitch to climb up to the desert. They reappeared in the middle of the desert one more time.

"We can finally get out of here!" Shang Ying Yue cheered.

The holy mountain that used to be so far from them was now in their sight. They could even see the smaller peaks around the holy

mountain. Apparently, they weren't illusions anymore. They were all real.

"You guys should use those Original Incipient Grade crystals you got to recover. We will depart later. I will protect you guys while you're cultivating," said Shi Yan.

The two women didn't babble. They sat down cross-legged next to him and used the Water Heart Crystal and the Icy Soul Cold Crystal to take in the energy. As those crystals matched their powers Upanishad, it recovered their God power really quickly. Shi Yan could sense the energy fluctuations in their bodies surging and becoming torrential.

It was the sign of gathering and producing God power.

The Original Incipient Grade materials with the same attributes with the warriors' power Upanishad were the purest source of energy in earth and heaven. To the warriors with matched power, those crystals were like big hearts that could pump them power and give them the essence of the power Upanishad. At the same time, they could use the crystals to create weapons. They could be deemed treasures for multiple purposes.

Holding the Water Heart Crystal and the Icy Soul Cold Crystal, Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue quickly gathered their God power. Their skin started to glow and it made them more beautiful.

Shi Yan looked around and changed his visage right when he was about to sit down to cultivate.

"Harson is coming!" He hissed.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were filled with fear. They jolted up from their cultivation and looked at him with stern faces.

"It's all right. As I'm now at my peak condition, even if Harson comes here, he won't take anything good from me. Well, if they want to seize the chance and attack me, I'll show my weak face to them." Then, he urged his energy and made his face pale,

concealing his energy fluctuation. His makeup made people think that he had consumed a lot of energy.

"Do you know anybody else besides Harson?"

"He is coming with the members of his Charteris family. I could sense them only. It's because of the blood bones. I'm not sure if some other people have accompanied him. Anyway, we must be cautious."

Wearing a stern face, Shi Yan shouted. "Don't care about too many things. You guys should seize the time and recover. Harson will come here, but not now. You must recover your energy to the peak. Then, we will meet them."

The two women pulled themselves together. They resumed their absorption progress to take the energy from the Original Incipient Grade crystals. They had to refill their energy quickly.

Shi Yan wore a dark face as he waited in silence. Thoughts flashed in his head.

Rattle! Rattle!

All of a sudden, he heard some tiny noises as if some insects were moving through the sand of the desert...

Shi Yan looked baffled.

The ancient continent didn't have any spirit animals or insects. It had only flowers and plants with consciousness and strange crystals. How could this desert have insects?

An earthy-yellow insect that looked like a scorpion made its way out of the sand. This insect had only one dull, yellow eye. It looked at Shi Yan and sent him a soul thought. "Shi Yan, this is my Life Gu. I sent him to you first. We're on our way. We'll get there soon."

It was Sha Zhao's voice!

Shi Yan was surprised and he sent his soul message. "Besides you, who else is going with you?"

"Audrey, Jiao Hai, Jiao Shan, Mo Fou, and the Wu brothers. We're going with each other," answered Sha Zhao.

"You guys slow down. If you come early, Harson's team won't dare to come," Shi Yan contemplated for a while and then continued, "You guys wait for my signal. Just stay by the edge of the desert. You can use the Gu to locate me. Don't stay too far. We need to wait for Harson's team to fall into our trap."

Sha Zhao reacted, "Understood. I'll notify them."

"Good!" Shi Yan smiled and stood up with a dark face. He looked in Harson's direction. He could vaguely sense the bloodthirsty desire from Harson's team.

Apparently, Harson thought that Shi Yan was still hurt and he wanted to take this opportunity to kill him, giving him no time.

When Shi Yan sensed Harson's aura, he found the distance between Harson and him had been shortened rapidly. Harson's team was moving at their maximum speed. It seemed like they couldn't wait any longer.

Good then!

Shi Yan gave a faint smile. He hadn't gathered all of Xuan Shan's blood bones yet. His chance was coming!

Chapter 1169: The Icy World

By the edge of the desert, Audrey, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan were looking at Sha Zhao. They stood and waited for Sha Zhao's news.

After a while, Sha Zhao opened his eyes and said in a low-pitched voice, "I contacted him!"

Everybody was excited.

"He said that Harson's team was coming to kill him. He told us to stay here and not to act rashly. We need to wait for his signal." Sha Zhao's eyes looked so sinister as he said, "If Harson dares to come this time, we'll give him a fatal strike!"

"Can you talk to him all the time?" asked Audrey.

"Of course. My Life Gu is next to him. I can see his move from time to time," said Sha Zhao confidently.

Audrey eased her mind and said coldly, "That's good. We'll wait here. Just let Harson arrive first. Then, we will block their exit!"

Her line of sight moved to Mo Fou, Wu Feng, and Wu Bai as she asked indifferently, "Do you have any idea?"

"You shall decide everything," the other three agreed.

In this dull world of yellow sand, Harson, Mia, Yue Man, and the others moved like swift shadows, flashing and disappearing.

Harson's body was so thin like a wicked demon. The murderous aura twirled around him, which looked real. He looked so dangerous. The warriors of the Charteris family were so ruthless and insane. Their energy fluctuated and matched with Harson's.

"We're almost there!" Harson's cold and gloomy voice echoed. He surfed through the sand like a bunch of light.

Mia's team followed him closely.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

Just like a rainbow descending from the sky, shadows emerged and surrounded Shi Yan, Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue in just a blink of an eye.

There were nine of them including Harson, his six warriors of the Charteris family, Mia and Yue Man. Their sudden appearance had surprised Shi Yan's team and gave them the bewildered look.

Shi Yan's face was pale and his Blood Qi level was low. At first glance, he seemed to have gotten hurt badly.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue looked a little better. However, they still gave people the impression that they didn't have enough energy in their bodies. It looked like they had just survived a severe battle that had already worn them out.

Mia and Yue Man exchanged looks. They both felt happy as they thought that Harson wasn't wrong. Shi Yan surely looked wounded.

She assumed that they had a greater chance to kill Shi Yan this time. She became excited immediately.

"Be careful. He can use Space power Upanishad!" Mia reminded in a low voice.

"The Center of the ancient continent isn't similar to the outer realm. He can't use the Space power Upanishad to run away. Don't worry." Harson waved his hand. Looking at Shi Yan, he grinned fiendishly. "Hey, we meet again."

"Yeah, hello there," Shi Yan darkened his face. He looked as if he was trying to look strong. "You think you can subdue me when I'm wounded or even kill me?"

"Well, I don't know what kind of storm you can rise this time." Harson waved his hand and the Charteris warriors put their hands into their stomach to draw the bones out of there little by little. Instantly, a murderous, bloodthirsty aura shot up into the sky

from behind their backs like the real blood column.

Harson had brought eighteen warriors in total. Shi Yan had taken ten blood bones from them. Harson killed two of them to prevent Shi Yan from taking their bones.

Today, he had only six warriors with him. They were standing in a hexagonal formation, centering Shi Yan's group of three. However, they were watching Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue and they didn't dare to consider Shi Yan as their target.

Harson's bony body changed. He quickly transformed into the Undying God Body. He looked even thinner, but the energy in his God Body was rocketing.

Just like him, Mia had transformed into her Undying God Body too. Her pretty eyes were so cold and harsh. She gazed at Shi Yan as she said coldly, "We should calculate our debts too. Should you give me back my Seven-colored Demonic Flower and the Seven-colored Spirit Flower?"

"Oh, I'm sorry. I used them all." Shi Yan squinted and showed his hands.

Mia's eyes shot out murderous intentions. She gave a curt nod and said, "Harson, I'm joining you."

"No need!" Harson shook his head and said determinedly, "I want to kill him myself! You just need to kill these two women for me. Do not let anyone escape!"

Mia frowned, cursing under her breath. However, she could do nothing but focus on Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue.

"You can't transform to your Immortal Body, can you?" Harson slowly drew the blood bone in his abdomen. The evil formation carved on the bone slowly moved, releasing intimidating power, which was like the giant mouth of a wild, crazy beast. It snatched over Shi Yan and attempted to swallow him.

The sinister thoughts that could distort the soul and slow down

the soul altar rolled torrentially, stirring up Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness and making him puzzled.

The six warriors of the Charteris family cooperated closely with Harson. They grabbed the blood bones and murmured some strange, wicked incantation. They had created a blood net that could bind all creatures and snatch over Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue discolored in fright. Their soul altars suddenly trembled hard as if the blood net had shrouded them and pulled them out!

They couldn't control their soul altar!

Boom! Boom!

Massive bolts of lightning weaved in the sky. The sharp icicles jutted out of Shang Ying Yue's head, moving around and attempting to cut the bloody net.

However, the blood net wasn't a real thing. It was like a special soul attack that was aimed at the soul and soul altar. Even though Shang Ying Yue's lightning and icicles were strong, they couldn't strike the blood net or cut it into pieces. Their soul altars were still shaking hard and trying to fly out of their heads.

"One thousand times heavier gravity!"

Mia opened her jade-like hand, pressing on Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue from a far distance. Instantaneously, Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue shook as if a massive mountain was placed on their backs. They had to bend as they couldn't bear that impressive weight.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

Their soul altars flew out of their head and even their host souls were perceptible. The women became panic-stricken.

"Crack! Crack! Crack!"

Shang Ying Yue's eyes looked resolute when she shouted and

made strange hand seals.

Five sharp Icy Soul Cold Crystals flew out of her Fantasy Sky ring. They all looked like the most beautiful icicles releasing cold air that was chilly to the bone and could freeze and break everything. The Icy Soul Cold Crystal was the Original Incipient material that she could use directly like the most terrific divine weapon.

When it was in the hand of the warriors who cultivated Ice power Upanishad like Shang Ying Yue, once it was urged, it could release the icy power that could freeze the entire world. Its lethality was unimaginable!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Just like space here that was shattered, the gravitational field Mia had created dissolved.

As soon as the icy energy of the Icy Soul Cold Crystal emitted, a cold white air diffused and froze the entire desert. The sand and big rocks were frozen and they broke. The entire desert became an icy world at a speed that naked eyes could observe. Wherever the cold air passed by, the whole place changed.

The blood net created by the Charteris warriors was covered by the cold white air. It was frozen and then shattered into tiny pieces of ice.

Harson's six warriors had no color on their faces anymore. They retreated in fear.

Mia and Yue Man were fighting Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue when they had to run away when the white air came over. They didn't dare to approach Shang Ying Yue anymore. As Harson and Shi Yan were fighting fiercely, when the white air swarmed over them, they felt so chilled. They shivered and in the next moment, they were frozen. Their veins and internal organs had become ice, turning them into two ice sculptures.

Cecilia had the same consequence. She had turned into a crystal ice sculpture as Shang Ying Yue's cold energy had crossed over her.

After dozens of seconds, the entire desert had become a frosty world with a glacier and three ice sculptures.

Only Shang Ying Yue stood in the middle of this icy world, looking at the five Icy Soul Cold Crystal planted on the ground by her feet. She looked so terrified.

She had heard that the Icy Soul Cold Crystal was the sharp sword of the warriors who cultivated Ice power Upanishad. She knew that it had marvelous effects and she could take its energy to improve her God power. She could also use her soul to study it and comprehended the Ice power Upanishad. She could additionally use it to refine treasures or use it directly as a weapon...

Her father had told her these things. The Icy Soul Cold Crystals were her main target coming to this ancient continent.

However, as she had just triggered the power of the Icy Soul Cold Crystal, she knew that her father hadn't told her carefully about the real power of the Icy Soul Cold Crystal. The power of the five crystals was enough to turn the entire scorching desert into the world of ice!

She had even frozen Harson and Shi Yan!

She understood that she had just released 10% or 20% energy of the crystals. If she used them all, would she be able to turn an area of tens of thousands of miles around to ice and everybody else into ice sculpture?

She was panic-stricken.

Shi Yan, Harson, and Cecilia were now ice sculptures. Mia, Yue Man, and the six warriors of the Charteris family had seized the chance when the cold air hadn't reached them to run away at the fastest speed.

No one had the guts to approach this area.

She was baffled for a while and then turned to Harson who was frozen now. A cold light flashed in her eyes.

Although Harson's entire body was frozen, his soul altar wasn't. He was thinking about how to get rid of this.

Seeing Shang Ying Yue's cold eyes glaring at him, Harson's Sea of Consciousness surged powerfully. He had just urged his Charteris secret technique called Burning Purgatory to resume his energy. His energy burst off and released him from the confining ice.

At the same time, a red flame burned on Shi Yan's body.

The icy aura of the Icy Soul Cold Crystal intruding his body was dissolved by the power of the combined flame of the Purgatory True Flame, the Vermilion Bird True Flame, and the Earth Flame.

The top Yang heaven flames could dissolve the power of the Icy Soul Cold Crystal.

Chapter 1170: Real Competence!

Crack! Crack!

The ice covering Harson's terrifying God Body shattered. Pieces of ice fell on the ground around his feet. As he had used the Burning Purgatory power Upanishad of the Charteris, his energy had rocketed!

While Harson crushed the ice, Shi Yan wasn't idle.

The heaven flame shrouded his body. After it washed over him, the ice was melting and the water started to drip. When the ice was melted, Shi Yan's veins were cleared, so he circulated his God power once again.

It sounded like the heavy rain had poured down when Shi Yan moved his body, sending countless drops of water to the air. He had gotten rid of the ice layer shortly after.

Wisps of flames were still moving around his body to prevent the icy energy from entering his body once again to seal him.

He frowned and looked at Cecilia.

A flame flew out of his fingertip and then started to burn the ice on Cecilia's jade-like neck. Her body covered in ice began to melt down like his. After her skin was warm again, she finally got rid of it.

Shang Ying Yue stood behind the five Icy Soul Cold Crystal, her soul altar spinning. She was still connected to the Icy Soul Cold Crystal.

She had just used 10% or 20% of the Icy Soul Cold Crystal's power. However, this amount of power was enough to freeze Shi Yan, Harson, and Cecilia. She didn't dare to urge more power of the Icy Soul Cold Crystal. She just stood in a daze and watched Harson, Shi Yan, and Cecilia recover.

"So cold!"

Cecilia was startled. She felt her entire body and soul get chilled to the bone as if she had just got out of the ice chamber. If that small flame didn't protect her skin, the cold air could still attack her another time and freeze her.

Different from Harson and Shi Yan, Cecilia cultivated Water power Upanishad. The inside of her body was filled with water, which would make her get frozen more easily. She would recover slower than the others.

"Are you all right?" Shang Ying Yue paled and stopped drawing the energy of the Icy Soul Cold Crystal. Looking at this icy world, her clear voice trembled. "I didn't expect the Icy Soul Cold Crystal to be so powerful."

Cecilia was freaking out and she asked her to stop. "You should control it well. I can't stand it."

Boom! Boom! Boom!

All of a sudden, the broken ice around Harson's feet twirled and rolled up into the air. The sharp pieces of ice were like sharp daggers filled with evil energy. All together, they darted towards Shi Yan.

Harson's eyes were so evil. He grinned fiendishly while his skeletal body had the energy rocketed. He made the hand seal to trigger the energy in his flesh. At that short moment, his body became even thinner. However, he looked more perilous.

"I want you to die!" Harson smirked haughtily.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

The broken ice hit more than ten layers of space energy above Shi Yan's head. It sounded like the nails thrusting into the wooden board.

Lifting his head and looking at the sprinkle of ice attacking him,

Shi Yan touched his glabella. His eyes suddenly became the vast starry sky where countless starlight dots moved out and created a halo of starlight layered over his body.

"You can only resist in pain like this?"

Harson sauntered, his face dark and gloomy. He squeezed his blood bones with both hands and sent beams of his blood into it. Savage energy fluctuated from his hands and exploded the air. The world of ice under his feet collapsed and shattered.

Countless pieces of broken ice became a crazy downpour that showered Shi Yan endlessly.

He had around ten layers of space barriers and his body was shrouded in layers of starlight. He looked like an Ancient God who was protected by stars in the sky. When the ice touched him, it would explode and vanish.

Harson's hands had a powerful suction force that swallowed earth and heaven energy of this place like a massive vortex. It felt like the sky was down and was flooding his palms.

However, when the massive amount of energy flowed into his palms, his hands weren't ballooned with energy. Quite strangely, they dried up like ash-white claws that were really freaky to the other people.

The cold, dejected, and sinister aura that shot out from Harson's dry claws had created a desolate world that tried to pull Shi Yan in.

Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia stood not far from Shi Yan. Under that strange space, they both had deep despair arise from their soul that would confine their souls eternally. They knew that it was an evil secret domain of Harson.

"Death or Life by the heart: Earth and heaven turn over!"

Shi Yan suddenly smiled and both of his hands grabbed something in the air. One hand of his was full of vitality like the source of life while the other hand had a lot of Death Qi like the

Scythe of Death.

A mountain-like Death Seal and a Life Seal emerged in the void. They then merged into one. The Death and Life power Upanishad was fused magically into one seal, which was glowing in a strange black and white light. It spun quickly in the air just like the hand of Demon that could destroy everything.

Boom!

The desolate, dead silence world released from Harson's palms was struck. It shook and sparked many beams of ash-gray light.

"Starlight from nine-tiered sky be the Lance!"

Shi Yan hands moved vertically as if he wanted to draw all the stars in the sky. His arms twinkled dazzlingly with a layer of starlight.

The glowing halos of the stars in the vast nothingness fell like the galaxy was descending, creating a starlight lance with the power of earth and heaven. It stabbed directly on the desolate world Harson had built.

That world had cracked by the Death and Life Seal previously. As it now received the thrusting starlight Lance, it shattered and sent light dots everywhere. At first, everything expanded and shrank into a speck of light before disappearing in just a blink of an eye.

"Pfffft!"

Harson spurted blood. He looked at Shi Yan wildly and crazily, "You aren't hurt! You weren't hurt!"

Shi Yan nodded nonchalantly and said earnestly, "I wasn't hurt. My power even grew. When you found me here, I was in my best condition."

Then, he squinted and looked in a direction where something that looked like a scorpion made its way out of the ice and waved its tail at him. "You guys can take action now," asked Shi Yan.

The demonic insect nodded as if it was a human. Then, it swiftly dug into the ice, its aura disappearing shortly after.

It was Sha Zhao's Life Gu, the spoiled child of the desert. Shang Ying Yue's world of ice had just covered the surface of the desert. Deep under the ice was still the hot sand where the scorpion could promote its power to the most. Once it got under the sand, no one could sense it.

The desert and this insect was one.

"You still have some helpers?" Harson changed his visage. Looking at the sand insect get into the ground, he knew that something was going wrong.

Before Shi Yan could answer, the blood bone that Harson was holding suddenly quivered. Harson's chest had to endure a sudden attack. He closed his eyes to sense. His six subordinates were assaulted.

The hiding enemies seemed to not be far from them. They were the eyes that had been watching them silently. As soon as Shi Yan gave them his order, they would storm over to tear Harson's warriors apart.

Harson understood now that Shi Yan had deceived him. He was tricked!

"You two go help Sha Zhao, Jiao Hai, and Jiao Shan. Leave this to me." Shi Yan turned his head and nodded to Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue. After hesitating for a while, he told Shang Ying Yue, "Bring the Icy Soul Cold Crystal away. This toy is really dangerous. Next time, you have to be more careful."

Shang Ying Yue looked a little embarrassed. Her cold face blushed. She bit her lower lip and retrieved the Icy Soul Cold Crystal before running away.

If Shi Yan didn't have the flaming Origin, she would have damaged Cecilia and Shi Yan badly... Shang Ying Yue felt a little

guilty.

"Be safe," Cecilia smiled and followed Shang Ying Yue.

She wasn't really worried because Harson was hurt now and Shi Yan was still intact. If there was a winner for this battle, it wouldn't be Harson.

"You think you can kill me?" Harson looked at Shi Yan and asked Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue to leave. His eyes became more bloodthirsty. At the same time, his body still had a lot of energy. He grabbed his blood bone and took a deep breath, trying to calm down. "It's good that you want to make an end with me. I think the same, you know."

"Oh right, we do need an end," Shi Yan nodded and closed his eyes to sense and then said, "You should leave too."

He looked in a direction.

The sand insect underground sneaked out again. Then, it turned into a beam of yellow light that shot away from this area. It disappeared in just a blink of an eye.

"Just the two of us here now." Shi Yan stroked the Blood Vein Ring, blood light twinkling in his eyes. His God Body shriveled while the pale energy jutted out of his acupuncture points. Sharp thorns emerged from his body. Shi Yan now had the Immortal Demon Body.

The Blood Vein Ring flashed a blood-red halo. A gory sword emerged. The closed eyes on the massive sword slowly opened.

The fearful, brutal, wild, and intimidating energy shot out of Shi Yan's body, diffusing like a terrifying sea and covering the entire area where he and Harson were fighting. The sinister, murderous aura of earth and heaven from this sword was much more savage than the blood bone that Harson was clutching.

Harson felt fear for the first time. He was baffled and he looked at the blood sword. He vaguely remembered that someone had told

him about this word. However, he couldn't remember right now...

The eyes on the bloody sword opened. The entire world seemed to turn into a world of blood. The sky and ground looked bloody when a bloodthirsty aura filled this world. Shortly after, it gave people the desire of murdering.

Harson's negative desires were aroused. He felt right into madness. He couldn't think about anything but he urged his Burning Purgatory and stormed towards Shi Yan.

"This is my real competence."

Shi Yan's eyes became as red as if they had blood drip out. The blood sword in his hand moved in a slash.

A blood-red river appeared with many islets made of white bones, which vaguely created a formation...

From a bird's view, people could see that those white bone islets had formed the blood clouds, which was the family crest of the Bloodthirsty Force.

Chapter 1171: Resurrected?

The blood sword came from the Chasm Abyss Battlefield in Grace Mainland. It looked like it came from the sky but in fact, it was the secret treasure of the Master of the Bloodthirsty Force.

The crimson eyes opened and Shi Yan deliberately cut the air. A blood river appeared in the sky with many bone islets that formed the shapes of bloody clouds. Shortly after, the river shrouded Harson.

Harson continued to burn his soul and flesh, squeezing his blood bone. The energy in the blood bone shot out like a rainbow and streamed.

However, no matter how Harson tried to wiggle, the energy from his blood bone couldn't pierce through the blood river. And at the same time, the blood river had absorbed part of his energy.

Harson rapidly drew his God power to an intimidating level of an Incipient God Realm warrior. The energy in his flesh body was so earth-shaking that it had created a magnetic energy storm. It could crush everything. He wanted to use that storm to resist the blood river.

The white bone islets that looked like white clouds in the river seemed to be the source of evil things in this world. They connected with Shi Yan's acupuncture points and made him full of negative energy. A deadly thought of destroying every creature suddenly flooded the entire area.

Harson had the power as strong as Shi Yan's and because of the blood bone, his power somehow connected to Shi Yan.

However, when Shi Yan took out the blood sword, Harson's God power and power Upanishad were subdued. Also, he felt so begrudging as if he was restrained.

He continuously burned his blood, flesh, and soul to raise more

energy. This burning had drained his Qi, spirit, and soul gradually and changed his life magnetic field. However, his energy was still increasing.

Shi Yan held the bloody sword in his hand, his soul altar slowly spinning. The deadly aura from his body could draw the aura of anything else into him.

The more he fought, the stronger he became. When he swung the blood sword, his God power gushed out and created another blood river, making a cross in the sky. The crossing point of this point was above Harson's head. The blood light dripped as if it was the real viscous blood.

Harson's Undying God Body couldn't resist this attack. When the blood light dropped down, explosions and breaking sounds echoed.

Harson's bones exploded. His body became weak. Although his energy was still abundant, he looked helpless.

Shi Yan had used all of his power and mobilized the most brutal Death power Upanishad, his Immortal Demon Body and the Rampage to strike the other. He didn't retain anything. That's how he had reluctantly gained the upper hand.

It was because Harson had underestimated Shi Yan and gave Shi Yan the chance to hurt him with the Death and Life Seal and the starlight Lance. If Shi Yan didn't use the blood sword, he could only get the slightest advantage.

Harson was the rare expert Shi Yan had ever met. He was the extreme kind that could insanely hurt his body and soul to attack the others. He made Shi Yan discolored in fright. Shi Yan had to gather all of his energy to attempt to kill him here.

By the edge of the desert.

Audrey, Jiao Hai, Jiao Shan, Mo Fou, Wu Feng, Wu Bai, and Sha Zhao were joining hands to fight Mia and the God Clan's warriors.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue came as they were not far from them. They joined the battle and tried to kill Mia and Yue Man.

All of a sudden, Audrey felt a vibe in her heart. She couldn't help but lift her head to look at the center of the desert.

Jiao Shan, Mo Fou, and the others could also recognize something. Even Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue halted while heading toward them. They all looked in the direction where Shi Yan and Harson were fighting.

The sky was scarily red as if it was painted with fresh blood. A flow of savage, bloodthirsty aura shot out grumblingly from the desert. This kind of intimidating energy made Audrey shiver. She looked aghast indeed.

Jiao Shan, Sha Zhao, and Wu Feng were pale and they shivered.

They had sensed a terrifying pressure from deep inside the desert. It was like a giant demon in the ancient time had just woken up. They faced the sky and roared. They had a desperate, dispirited feeling that made them want to bow.

"So intimidating!" Audrey's breast heaved as she was taking deep breaths. Her exquisite face was filled with fright. "The battle between Harson and Shi Yan could reach such a degree. It was really earth-shaking."

Everybody quieted down all of a sudden.

Mia, Yue Man, and the Charteris warriors also looked dark and solemn. They instinctively looked at the center of the desert in fear.

"Sha Zhao, what's going on over there? Your Life Gu is there. You should have gotten something, right?" Wu Feng suddenly shouted.

Audrey's pretty eyes immediately focused on Sha Zhao.

Sha Zhao quieted down and closed his eyes to sense. Then, he shook his head.

Rattle! Rattle!

A scorpion-like sand insect got out of the sand and flew into Sha Zhao's mouth. It looked a little scared.

Shi Yan frowned and gave a forced smile. "Shi Yan sent it away. I don't know what has happened there."

Audrey was very surprised. She hesitated for a while and then said, "You guys stay here and deal with them. I'm going there to check them out."

"He said that he wanted to fight Harson once. Please respect his decision." Shang Ying Yue stopped her with a cold expression. "We're here. It means that he didn't want anybody else to interfere with him. Please stay."

Cecilia also nodded and glanced at Mia and the Charteris warriors. She said deliberately, "When we left that place, Harson was hurt severely. If nothing unexpected happens, he'll die..."

Hearing her, Mia and the Charteris warriors grimaced.

Audrey pondered and then nodded. She stayed at her spot.

As Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, and even Sha Zhao's Life Gu were sent away, Audrey understood that Shi Yan had something that he didn't want anybody else to know. Thus, he had asked everybody to leave.

Whether he was the Immortal Demon or a member of the Bloodthirsty Force, he had many secrets. If Shi Yan didn't want people to know or sneak on him, getting there would make him turn his back to her.

Audrey understood it well. She wasn't persistent. She moved her focus on Mia's team once again. "Then we just need to finish these."

"We have no objection," Jiao Shan, Wu Feng, and the others agreed cheerily.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue also joined the battle, teaming up with Jiao Shan's team to attack Mia and Yue Man.

Audrey looked at the desert and frowned, Then, she turned to Mia. "Shi Yan will kill Harson. So... I'll kill you."

Mia's eyes shot out strange light and said fearlessly, "Although the Imperial Dark Tribe isn't ordinary, it's not easy to kill me."

"Let's try." As soon as Audrey's voice vanished, the Dark God Imperial Throne emerged and connected the Underworld and this area. The wailing ghosts and departed spirits from the endless dark abyss roared and shrieked. They attempted to nibble Mia's soul altar.

The center of the desert.

As Harson was shrouded in the blood river, his blood and flesh were torn off his body and they sprinkled on the ground. He looked as if he was skinned alive, which was so miserable to see.

Even though he was in such a situation, Harson was still crazy and ruthless. He was rolling and crying inside the blood river, trying to show Shi Yan his intimidation before he died.

Shi Yan crazily poured his God power into the blood sword. He felt his energy was running out. The open eyes in the blood sword were using his God power massively. And the two blood rivers crossing in the sky was the energy of his entire body performed using the blood sword.

To create the two blood rivers, Shi Yan had to use almost all of his energy, which had also drawn half of his negative energy.

Since he had come to this world, he had never endured such a terrible battle. Harson's strength was beyond his estimation.

If his power Upanishad couldn't subdue Harson and if he didn't have terrifying tricks, it would be impossible to make Harson this

helter-skelter.

He knew that Harson was now a lamp running out of oil.

He didn't dare to approach Harson as he was afraid that Harson would commit suicide and drag him altogether. Shi Yan didn't care how cruel and terrible Harson's roaring and cursing was. He just stayed deep inside the blood river and held the sword, pumping more energy to wear Harson out little by little.

He didn't look at Harson either.

Gradually, Harson's painful screeching faded out and disappeared...

After a moment later, Shi Yan couldn't sense the life energy fluctuation from Harson anymore. He changed his power Upanishad, retrieving the blood sword and the two blood rivers.

Thud! Thud!

Harson fell from the sky and landed on the ice that was scattered on the ground. He looked like a gory skeleton.

Walking to Harson, Shi Yan could see his internal organs, but there was no fluctuation of life energy. Shi Yan knitted his brows tightly.

Although Harson's God Body remained, his soul was burned down because he had madly urged the Burning Purgatory. That's how he was killed.

Shi Yan's thoughts changed. He extended his hand to grab the bone that Harson had clutched before he died. The blood bone from Xuan Shan flew to Shi Yan.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

Two pieces of the blood bone flew out from Harson's body. They were both from Xuan Shan's skeleton. One of them was the key bone that helped Harson control and made his subordinates die for him. This one had a special evil formation.

Harson's soul energy had ceased. The drawings of the evil formation on the three bones faded to the point where they had almost disappeared.

At the same time, the six members of the Charteris family who were fighting Audrey's group far from them suddenly had their heads exploded. Their soul altars shattered. The blood bones inside the bodies flew out and headed to the desert.

"Oh?"

While Shi Yan was about to gather all the blood bones, his face changed. A divine light shot out from his eyes as he was gazing at the bone from Harson.

A beam of energy arose from the blood bone, which had triggered Shi Yan's Blood Vein Ring and made it glow in the red light.

Swoosh!

The Blood Vein Ring flew out of Shi Yan's finger and was placed on that blood bone, gathering some kind of remnant energy from the blood bone.

The last piece of its memory!

Shi Yan was shocked. His eyes brightened as he knew what was going on.

Xuan Shan's bone had the last part of the Blood Vein Ring's memory. After it had fused with that part of memory, the Ring Spirit would be intact!

While Shi Yan was sinking in his thrill, his face changed again!

He found out that the ten pieces of the blood bone he had collected flying out of the Blood Vein Ring were gathering with the other pieces of bone here. All were releasing a marvelous Corpse Qi. They were moving around Harson and entered his body.

And the dead Harson was now covered in the thick, pure Corpse Qi. Magically, Harson's dried, bloody body was recovering rapidly!

Harson's flesh was growing. Slowly, a drawing emerged on his glabella!

It's the blood mark!

Chapter 1172: Harson's Riddle...

All nineteen bones of Xuan Shan were releasing the pure Corpse Qi and winding around Harson.

Harson's skeletal body grew the flesh once again. His veins were connected and reviving him at a speed that naked eyes could observe.

Gradually, the blood bones exploded and turned into a bone powder that got into Harson's flesh, bones, and veins and became part of his. A mark slowly became visible in Harson's glabella...

Shi Yan was dumbstruck.

The Blood Vein Ring was also carving that mark on Harson's forehead!

The Blood Vein Ring rolled around. Red beams flashed like a spotlight shining on Harson's glabella that carved the mark of the cluster of blood clouds there!

Harson was dead. His God Body was pale and dry like a weathered corpse, which looked scary indeed.

As soon as the blood bones that came from Xuan Shan exploded, it turned into powder and entered Harson's God Body. The blood mark emerged at his glabella. The Corpse Qi winding around Harson made his soul altar fluctuate with strange energy when pieces of his scattered soul were wrapped by the blood mark. They all gathered one more time...

Swoosh!

When the blood cloud mark appeared on Harson's forehead, the Blood Vein Ring flew back to Shi Yan's hand. After a long moment of silence, it started to talk to Shi Yan. "This young man... has learned the Essence of Death many years ago from Xuan Shan's bones. He's like Xuan Shan's successor."

Shi Yan was astounded. He stood baffled for a while before he could ask the Ring Spirit, "What's going on?"

"My memory was divided into three parts. Lao Luo, Xuan He, and Xuan Shan kept them respectively. They would use the memory to search the successor of Bloodthirsty. Lao Luo came to Grace Mainland to use his supernatural power to bend Nature's principles and bring you here and let you receive the main inheritance of the Bloodthirsty Force. Xuan He and Xuan Shan also held a part of the memory to find the heir for our Master. However, receiving the Master's inheritance could take place only in an ancient continent. Xuan He came to Ancient Demon Continent but he failed. Xuan Shan had the biggest guts. He came to the Ancient God Continent of the God Clan. He had broken the plan of the God Clan. Unfortunately, the Charteris family found him. Eventually, his soul and body perished..."

As the Ring Spirit's memory was gradually filled, the secret that had been hidden for years was slowly revealed.

The Blood Vein Ring was the Life Treasure of the Bloodthirsty's Master. That year when their Master had fallen, Lao Luo, Xuan He, and Xuan Shan had divided the memory of the Blood Vein Ring into three parts. They then began to seek the most suitable candidate to impart their Master's power Upanishad.

Lao Luo found Grace Mainland. Xuan He came to Ancient Demon Continent while arrogant Xuan Shan plotted his plan in Ancient God Continent.

Only Lao Luo succeeded. He had arranged the secret formation in Grace Mainland to bring Shi Yan, crossing the realms and falling into the blood pond to receive the Inheritance.

Xuan He came to Ancient Demon Continent. However, earth and heaven energy on this continent had already been diluted when he came. To create the formation to impart the inheritance of the Bloodthirsty's Master, it required a lot of external factors including

stars, the universe, space, and more. At that time, the Ancient Demon Continent wasn't suitable to do that.

Eventually, Xuan He had to give up and he left with a part of memory.

Xuan Shan was the bravest and yet haughtiest among the three of them. He directly went to the ancestral star of the God Clan, Ancient God Continent, planning on robbing the Origin of the continent and choosing the successor for his Master here. Then, they could take the root of the God Clan to revive the Bloodthirsty Force.

Unfortunately, Xuan Shan was exposed. The God Clan had chased after him. When he had been damaged, the Charteris family had exploded his entire body and burned down his soul altar.

Xuan Shan was an extreme expert of the Bloodthirsty Force. Otherwise, he wouldn't have been eligible to keep one part of Ring Spirit's memory. Before his soul altar was shattered, he had condensed and imprinted his whole life attainment of power Upanishad and God power into his bones. Although his soul and flesh were gone, his skeleton hadn't exploded.

He was afraid that the secret of the Ring Spirit would be exposed. Thus, he had sealed the Ring Spirit's memory in the bone in his chest where he had carved the marvelous Essence of his power Upanishad.

The Charteris warriors wanted to kill Xuan Shan utterly. However, no matter how hard they had tried with many experts joining this operation, they couldn't burn Xuan Shan's skeleton into ashes. It scared and surprised the Charteris family a lot.

Eventually, an excellent blacksmith of the Charteris family had come up with an idea: they would use Xuan Shan's skeleton to force the divine weapon and carve the wicked, exclusive formation of their family. That way they could make Xuan Shan's skeleton a

sharp divine weapon in their family.

His proposal was approved. They immediately gathered the team to collect the strange and precious materials from the big star areas to refine the skeleton and make it tougher and become unbreakable.

The Charteris family had spent several hundred years to make Xuan Shan's skeleton a new divine weapon.

However, after they had completed this secret treasure, none of the Charteris warriors could control it. At this point, they thought that there were some mistakes during their forging process that made this weapon dysfunctional.

The weapon made of Xuan Shan's skeleton eventually became forgotten and the skeleton lied under layers of dust in the vault of the family.

Until Harson passed by the vault...

When Harson was young, he wasn't really talented. In the Charteris family, he was just a normal warrior and a chicken one. The precursors of the family had often treated him like trash.

When Harson had his Grow-up Ceremony, together with many other brothers and sisters, he was allowed to enter the family's vault to choose a secret treasure. Not one of this bunch of young men and women had laid their eyes on Xuan Shan's skeleton, which was an ironic joke whenever people mentioned this weapon of the Charteris.

Spiritless, timid Harson wasn't strong enough to compete for the other treasures with his brothers and sisters. Consequently, they had taken all the good treasures and left Harson a very little choice.

Abandoning himself to despair, Harson knew that he couldn't be outstanding in his family, so he decided to take nineteen blood bones. Afterward, the family arranged for him to enter the

deathtrap training court of the God Clan to cultivate. He got to know Mia there. They became friends. At that time, Harson was still timid. Mia had to take care of him all the time.

In that deathtrap, Harson had been lost for a while. The dangers there had almost killed him.

Harson went unconscious...

He didn't know that when he was unconscious, the Ring Spirit sealed in the key bone of Xuan Shan's skeleton had woken up quietly. It then planted a seal in his soul and flesh and sent the everlasting will of Xuan Shan, the extreme expert, into Harson's brain...

After Harson woke up, he found that the nineteen bones that used to be like trash were now part of his body. They became his most powerful divine weapons.

From that day onward, wimpy Harson had changed earth-shakingly!

In that deathtrap, Harson, the weakest warrior, had used his madness and brutality to rise, which made people clean their eyes to observe him once again.

Eventually, he had surpassed Mia to become the winner of that deadly training. From that day onward, Harson seemed to have become another person. He had turned to be bloodthirsty, crazy, and extreme!

Harson took the turn to take a savage revenge on anyone who used to insult him or mock him, whether they were his cousins or the outsiders.

He became the new outstanding star of the God Clan! He even surpassed Haig! Finally, he became the seed warrior that the entire Charteris family had to care for and invest in.

Until now, the elders of the God Clan only thought that Harson was forced to change when he was almost killed in that deathtrap.

He had completely changed after that training course.

No one knew that it was because the Ring Spirit had forcefully implanted the wild, strong will of Xuan Shan into Harson's brain. It made the timidest kid of the Charteris family become the bold pride of the family. He was the brightest star that could compete with Haig of the God Clan.

From that day onward, although Harson was a member of the God Clan, he was actually one of the Bloodthirsty Force's warriors.

The Ring Spirit understood that it had to cover this secret. It didn't even talk to Harson and just hid in Harson's bones to check his development. It had never appeared or spoken to Harson.

Harson's change was considered the most successful case of a weak one becoming strong in the God Clan. It had encouraged the God warriors though. Many young men and women of the God Clan had idolized Harson and had spread his legend.

Xuan He had finally finished it...

That year, when they had divided the Blood Vein Ring's memory into three parts, only Lao Luo, Xuan Shan, and Xuan He knew this secret. The other chiefs could guess but they didn't know the details.

Xuan He knew that his blood younger brother was killed on Ancient God Continent. He knew that the Charteris family had killed him and he also knew that his bones had become the dangerous weapon that the Charteris family had spent hundreds of years to refine. After that, he guessed that the part of the memory that his brother had kept were hidden in his skeleton.

Since the Charteris family couldn't break his bones after his body and soul had perished, it had to have some meaning here.

Many chiefs of the other branches of the Bloodthirsty Force didn't know the secret hiding in Xuan Shan's bones. Only Xuan He who also kept a part of the memory knew their appointment and

he could somehow guess it precisely.

Many years later, Harson's story of a wimpy kid who became the most shining star of the God Clan had spread wide. His bloodthirsty, mad, savage characteristics were admired by the Charteris warriors. Although the Charteris family had covered the fact that Harson kept Xuan Shan's bones, when Xuan He heard about this and connected it to the image of the timid Harson, he understood it almost immediately.

The insane, bloodthirsty, savage, and manic features of Harson's new personality was a version of Xuan Shan's personality, his brother! As the blood older brother of Xuan Shan, of course, Xuan He knew what sort of man his brother was.

If he didn't mind Harson's God Clan's origin, he was the exact copy of Xuan Shan, his brother!

In Xuan He's heart, the death of his brother was what he had regretted the most in his life. Later on, Xuan He had considered Harson's change as his brother's resurrection!

However, the only thing that had weighed Xuan He's heart was that Harson thought that he was a member of the Charteris and that he had to consider the God Clan's welfare the most important thing...

After Shi Yan had appeared, Xuan He knew that Lao Luo had successfully done what he and his brother couldn't. Using his own channel to return the Ring Spirit's memory he had kept to Shi Yan, he then contacted Chief Frederick, the one who cultivated Corpse power of the Bloodthirsty Force, to arrange for Shi Yan to enter Desolate.

Because Xuan He knew that Harson had the third part of the Ring Spirit in his bone and the blood bones of Harson had the energy fluctuation of Xuan Shan's power Upanishad, he knew that Shi Yan and Harson would fight...

As Shi Yan had the bloody sword and shield of the Master of the Bloodthirsty Force together with his Devouring power Upanishad, when he used the blood sword or the shield, he could subdue Harson's power Upanishad. After that, he could defeat the man easily to collect the last part of the Ring Spirit's memory, which had trained Harson. Only the Blood Vein Ring could carve the crest of the Bloodthirsty Force for Harson...

Everything had developed as he had planned.

Xuan He's plan had not even a tiny flaw.

Chapter 1173: Who You Used to be?

Xuan Shan's blood bones turned into bone powder and entered Harson's God Body.

Harson's broken soul was gathered slowly. Corpse Qi swirled around him and gave people a desperate, scary feeling.

It was like a corpse or a dead person slowly waking up...

"Taking things seriously, after the training in the God Clan's deathtrap that year, Harson wasn't pure anymore. His soul has been fused with Xuan Shan's and it gave Harson the purest strong will. He and Xuan Shan's wild fixation have fused..." The Ring Spirit's voice didn't have any emotion as if it was just narrating some simple facts.

"Besides Death power Upanishad, Xuan Shan had mastered using the Corpse Qi that Frederick controls..." The Ring Spirit narrated. "The Charteris family had only urged the brutal Death power in Xuan Shan's skeleton. They couldn't force the other energy of his. Today, this energy and the bone powder have entered Harson's body. When he wakes up, he will be much stronger."

"Eh, so he's alive or dead? Is he the member of the God Clan or the Corpse Clan?" Shi Yan was surprised. "He's still Harson. After the Death energy in Xuan Shan's skeleton is used up, the Corpse Qi will appear. Of course, the dead will become corpses. However, Death and Corpse Qi energy have something in connection. Only Xuan Shan of the Bloodthirsty understood this essence that year. Because of that, he became a foreign race. That's how he was eligible to keep one part of my memory."

The Ring Spirit didn't make it clear. "After Harson wakes up, the Corpse Qi will fill him. He can use the Burning Purgatory Upanishad to burn Corpse Qi to generate his life magnetic field. It will be the same with what he used to have. The reason why I chose Harson that year was because he's a member of the Charteris

family that cultivated Burning Purgatory power Upanishad. I can't say what would be created when the Death, Corpse Qi, and Burning Purgatory power Upanishads are combined. However, I had chosen Harson as the successor of the Bloodthirsty's Master at that time to take care and nurture..."

The "I" that the Ring Spirit had mentioned was the third party of the ring's memory staying in Harson's blood bone.

"If you, a better option, hadn't appeared, Harson would have become my master and the successor of the Bloodthirsty Force. The reason why I had to divide into three parts was to prepare for every case. We don't want to hang me on only one tree. It turns out that we've made a right decision. Besides Xuan He who didn't find his luck, Xuan Shan had succeeded in finding Harson. Although he wasn't the best choice because of his soul and fate, we still have another option..."

"I don't quite understand," Shi Yan shook his head.

According to the Ring Spirit, Harson was a member of the God Clan, but he had fused with the crazy will. And as Shi Yan'd known, he was the new star of the God Clan.

Shi Yan had fought with Harson, so he knew how intimidating Harson was. This young man was one of the rarest terrifying enemies Shi Yan had ever encountered in his life. If he didn't have the blood sword, which had boosted his power, it was hard to say who would be killed.

If the Ring Spirit had considered Harson a chosen one, it must have keen eyes. Harson was eligible. But why did the Ring Spirit say that Shi Yan was the best choice?

When the Death power Upanishad, the Corpse Qi power Upanishad, and the Burning Purgatory power Upanishad combined, even the Ring Spirit was terrified. When the Ring Spirit's memory was complete and could impart Harson the Devouring power Upanishad of the Bloodthirsty Force, wouldn't

he become invincible? Who could subdue him then?

But why did the Ring Spirit choose him?

Although he was always self-confident, when he faced Harson and got to know his power, Shi Yan still felt pretty strange.

"The Inheritance of the Bloodthirsty's Master can be imparted to only the members of the four great races and in the ancient continent..." the Ring Spirit continued calmly. "Harson is a God warrior and you have Immortal Demon Blood. You guys are the same in this aspect. You were born in Grace Mainland and Harson was born in Ancient God Continent. It's not really different... However, there's one thing that distinguishes you two. It's also the reason why you are the successor of the Bloodthirsty's Master!"

"Please tell me!" asked Shi Yan earnestly.

"Although you have the Immortal Demon Blood in your body, your soul is..." The Ring Spirit paused for a while, "You know how you came here better than anybody else? Who you used to be before you had entered this body?"

Shi Yan was shaken. He looked panic-stricken.

Of course, he knew who he used to be and why he had descended to this world. However, that year, he was an extreme athlete. He didn't belong in this universe. He thought that he was dead in an adventure, his soul sinking...

When he woke up, he found himself inside a dark cave of Grace Mainland in the body of another Shi Yan. He had become another man from that day.

Shi Yan thought that no one in this world could know this secret of his. He had never thought that when the three memory parts of the Ring Spirit reunited, it could expose him quickly and make him feel naked like that. It scared him out of his wits.

"Don't worry. We've chosen you. Lao Luo and I had exerted our efforts. We didn't regret using the Origin of Grace Mainland to

bring you here from another universe. Of course, we won't hurt you. If we hadn't used the Origin, Grace Mainland wouldn't have drained its energy that fast. Since he had to guide you here from another universe, Lao Luo was dead because of his exhausted energy..." said the Ring Spirit indifferently.

After the Ring Spirit had its full memory, it didn't conceal information anymore. It began to explain to Shi Yan, "The reason why you were the best choice and the reason why you were chosen by the Bloodthirsty Force is that your soul doesn't belong in this universe. It's the main reason why Harson could never be compared to you!"

Pausing for a while, the Ring Spirit continued, "Since your soul doesn't belong in this universe, it means that rules and principles of this universe can't bind you. Because your soul wasn't born in this universe, you are able to cross any barriers of this world! What our Master couldn't do that year, you could do it all. It's because you can break all the rules and principles! It's the reason why Harson couldn't be compared to you. His soul was born in this universe. His soul was shrouded by the principles of the cosmos that nothing could free him."

The Blood Vein Ring slipped on his finger once again and emitted immense red light. He stroked the ring while his soul listened to the Ring Spirit. He stood there in a daze and said nothing for a long time.

Until now, he had thought that his soul coming to Grace Mainland was just something coincidental or unexpected. Today, he had finally figured out that the Ring Spirit and Lao Luo had used the power of Grace Mainland's Origin to activate something that he would never be able to understand to bring him into the body of a warrior who belonged to one of the four great races, the one with the Immortal Demon Blood.

None of these was coincidental. Someone had plotted for this.

Everything was planned!

Shi Yan was so astounded!

"My memory hasn't fully combined yet. I need more time. I'll be idle for the time being. After you get into Desolate, I'll tell you what to do." The Ring Spirit's voice faded away. "You don't need to care about Harson. The mark on his head will fade away. It will tell him what has happened. He can still be a member of his Charteris family. He needs time to clear his head and know what he got. The God Clan won't spare his life and he won't be willing to be under someone's control. He's predestined... to be our warrior."

The Ring Spirit's voice grew faint. The halo of the Blood Vein Ring dimmed. Eventually, it quieted down.

Oddly enough, the Corpse Qi in Harson's body was burning. After the Corpse Qi burned, it changed and generated vitality in his body, giving people the feeling of something becoming robust once again.

As Shi Yan knew Death and Life power Upanishad, he knew it could change. Although Harson didn't know Life power Upanishad, his Burning Purgatory power Upanishad had the magical power of burning the soul to generate energy and vice versa as well. It could burn the Death energy to produce vitality.

No wonder why the Ring Spirit said that it didn't know how powerful Harson's power could be when his three powers Upanishads could fuse altogether. We couldn't use the normal standard to assess this man.

That year, when Xuan Shan had cultivated his Death and Corpse Qi power Upanishads to a profound level and decoded the connection between the two powers, he had become a new race of the Bloodthirsty Force. That was how he was eligible to receive a part of the Ring Spirit's memory. Today, with the Burning Purgatory power Upanishad from the God Clan, no one knew to what height Harson could reach in the future.

Luckily, his soul didn't belong to this cosmos. In the future, he could tear all the principles and rules that had bound creatures here. Without this advantage, perhaps Harson would have been the chosen one and the Ring Spirit's best option.

Looking at Harson reviving, Shi Yan frowned. He knew that it would be awkward when Harson woke up and saw him here. Another battle would be inevitable. And now, Harson had been imprinted the mark of the blood cloud, which certified his membership of the Bloodthirsty Force. At the same time, Shi Yan was the current leader of the Bloodthirsty Force. When Harson had made up his mind, he would be Shi Yan's subordinate.

As things were all set, Shi Yan didn't need to care about them so much. Studying Harson for seconds, he smiled frankly and then left.

After he had left, Harson woke up, his face baffled. He looked so confused when he sat up and mumbled to himself. "Weren't I... just dead...?"

The mark flashed on his forehead. Images appeared in his brain. Death power Upanishad Inheritance... Corpse Qi flowing like a stream... All the memories flooded his soul altar like a rushing river. The two powers Upanishad that had been existing vaguely in his soul altar for a long time became clear. Many magical things he had touched before in his dreams were now visible in front of him...

Harson gradually understood it. He sat in silence for a long time before clutching his head and screaming in pain. "No! Impossible! It shouldn't be like that!"

Harson cried and screamed pitifully, tearing his skin and hair. He looked like a howling beast that wailed as he wanted to eliminate the Death power and Corpse Qi in his soul altar. He wanted to wash the power in Xuan Shan's bones. He couldn't accept all of these.

He had always considered the Charteris family his pride and glory. He had set his mind to kill Haig and become the next leader of the God Clan. He deemed the Bloodthirsty his mortal enemy, and the Immortal Demon Clan, the Heavenly Monster Tribe, and the Imperial Dark Tribe his rivals.

All of a sudden, he was resurrected from death and he found that everything was tumbled upside down. What he had believed in for years was shattered. He had become the archenemy that he had pledged to kill. Harson collapsed.

Harson screamed and cried, trying to harm his body and torture himself. He didn't want to accept all of these.

He needed time to adapt to this tragic change.

Chapter 1174: The Remains of the Holy Beast White Tiger

By the border of the desert, the six warriors of the Charteris family had their soul altars shatter all of a sudden. They died tragically, which put a stop on their bloody battle. Mia and Yue Man didn't think anything and they ran away at their max speed immediately.

Mia understood that unless Harson had encountered something terrible, his warriors wouldn't perish abruptly like that.

Mia and Yue Man were wise enough to run away right after that.

Sha Zhao, Mo Fou, and Shang Ying Yue wanted to chase after them, but Audrey raised her hand to stop them. "No need to pursue them. Haig is near."

Mo Fou and Wu Feng were surprised. They became thrilled. "We can kill them all together!"

Audrey shot them a cold look and said indifferently, "Haig gathered more warriors than we did. If you think you can destroy him, just go there and check yourself."

Sha Zhao, Mo Fou, and the others looked frightened. They waved their hands reluctantly and didn't want to insist on this.

Are you kidding us! Haig was the strongest of his generation in the God Clan. He was even stronger than Harson. And, he had a lot of warriors going with him. Without Audrey's support, how could they dare to take risks?

"Didn't you say that your Soul Consciousness couldn't sense this area?" asked Cecilia in confuse.

Audrey was still cold and calm. She said simply, "Too close. We can still feel each other. The battle between Shi Yan and Harson had stirred up the energy in the center of the desert, which has

changed the earth and heaven's principles out there. Many warriors were attracted to them. Haig wasn't an exception."

"Should we prepare to engage in a battle with them?" asked Sha Zhao.

Audrey shook her head. "I think that we shouldn't. Haig's team isn't very different from us. Before we reached the Holy Mountain, he won't spend energy in vain. Unless his team is stronger than us, he won't come to us proactively. I know this man. He's very cautious. He won't be wild and rash like Harson."

"Did Shi Yan win?" Wu Feng's eyes looked strange. "As we can see that the six warriors of Harson's team had died all of a sudden, I think Harson is now in big trouble. Otherwise, it wouldn't be that fast."

Everybody thought the same.

"Harson was the hope of the Charteris family. His power Upanishad is refined and he's brutal and crazy. He's the only warrior of the God Clan who can face Haig directly. I didn't expect that Shi Yan could defeat him. It's a big surprise, though." Sha Zhao seemed to admire the other a lot.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue had waves of happy light ripple from their eyes. Their hearts had many vibes as if they could share his glory.

Audrey was astounded. She was a little shocked knowing how strong the Immortal Demon Clan was.

"Here he comes," Audrey hissed.

Everybody focused and waited.

Shortly after, a shadow approached and appeared in their sights at a normal speed. He pitched his voice. "Are you all right?"

It was Shi Yan.

Everybody else smiled and jabbered, "Where's Harson? Did you

kill him? Are you hurt?"

All of them cared about Harson's situation since he was the sharpest weapon of the God Clan who was the big fear in their heart. This included Audrey.

People's fear for Harson was bigger and deeper than what they had for Haig. This was because Haig was a sane man and he could reason like a normal people while Harson was a bloodthirsty mad dog that no one dared to touch. No one wanted to taste his sharp, spear-like madness...

"Harson is still alive. I haven't defeated him yet. However, his God Body has some problems... He ran away." Shi Yan had something made up already. He said with his jaw clenched, "The Burning Purgatory power Upanishad of the Charteris family is really terrifying. Harson's power seemed to be able to increase unlimitedly. If his soul and body could endure it, I think that I would be the one who had to run away..."

Hearing him, people changed their visage. "Harson is still alive?" they couldn't help but yell.

"Seems like Harson's damages were significant and his body couldn't bear it. Thus, he had killed his six subordinates to supply energy to him. He seized the chance and then ran away. He's going to come for you to take revenge later." Audrey drilled her look into Shi Yan. "It's enough for you to be proud. After Harson grew up, he has been experiencing countless big and small battles. He has left his mad reputation in the big star areas. No one has ever heard that he had to run away because he couldn't resist the enemy. You could force him to run away. Your reputation would spread throughout the cosmos."

Listening to Audrey, people then looked at Shi Yan with more respect and admiration.

The one who could force Harson to run helter-skelter would be the most talented warrior in the vast universe. He was eligible to

resist Haig.

In their minds, Shi Yan's position had just leaped up. He was about to surpass Audrey for sure.

"Leave the desert. We're heading to the Holy Mountain in the center." Audrey observed the area and let out a low shout.

People replied cheerily.

Situated by the desert was a dark valley where filled with strong howling winds.

Mia and Yue Man staggered and landed in this valley as if someone had guided them here. As soon as they landed, they felt a sudden chill as if some beast was watching their soul altar.

A strong gust slapped over and cleaned the thick mist in the valley. Haig, Phelps, and around ten warriors of the God Clan appeared.

"Haig!" Mia hissed.

Haig nodded and said coldly, "Has something unexpected happened to Shi Yan?"

He could feel the heat from Shi Yan and Harson's fighting in the center of the desert. The earth-shaking energy changed due to their battle and it attracted other warriors who came and checked.

"Harson... I think he's over..." Mia frowned painfully. She tried to talk while hiding the pain. "His six troopers died instantly. Their soul altars shattered. It means that Harson has encountered something unexpected. Perhaps, he was dead already."

Phelps, Payton, and the other warriors of the God Clan discolored in fright.

"We know something unexpected had happened, but I don't think Harson would be killed that easily," Haig pondered for a while and said with his brows knitted. "I've been competing with

Harson for years. I know how strong and wild he is. Whoever wants to kill him including me, has to pay the most disastrous price. Perhaps, the god body was smashed."

To that point, Haig paused for a while and then looked at the desert and said, "The one who fought with Harson still has full energy. He wasn't hurt. Thus, even though something had happened to Harson, I believe he's still alive. If Harson was killed, I'm afraid his opponent wouldn't be able to even move now."

Haig understood the situation well.

After years of fighting with Harson, Haig knew clearly how terrific Harson was. He knew that Harson's most fierce feature was that no one would return intact from the battle where Harson had to die.

The fact that Shi Yan was safe and sound helped Haig confirm that Harson was still alive. However, his condition wasn't really good.

"We should go there to rescue Harson!" Mia proposed, her face stern and her eyes begging.

Haig looked unconcerned. "They aren't weaker than us. If we go there, both sides will bear losses. It's not my style. The wisest thing to do now is to gather our people. We should try to kill the enemies on the way and try our best to destroy them to reduce our loss." Haig explained his plan.

Phelps and the others nodded. Apparently, they had considered Haig their leader. No one batted an eye on Harson's story.

Mia sighed discreetly. After she could confirm that Harson was alright, she wasn't so persistent. She agreed to Haig's plan too.

"They are heading to the Holy Mountain too. We should hurry up." Haig waved his hand and smiled at Mia. "I got many good things to help you increase your power a little bit. Desolate is a rich land. If you notice, you will find treasures everywhere."

Mia cheered up.

From a bird's view, people could see many small dots like a colony of ants heading to the Holy Mountain in the Center.

Shi Yan, Audrey, and their warriors gathered on one side while Haig, Phelps, and Mia took their warriors and walked on the other trail. The two teams weren't close or too far from each other. However, it was impossible to use the Soul Consciousness to sense them. Anyway, if one team moved faster and the other team moved slower, they would encounter each other.

Many warriors from the other clans were operating alone in the other areas. Regardless, every person was heading in the same direction.

The Holy Mountain stood majestically in between the radiant rainbow and auspicious clouds. It looked so beautiful even though it stood still. It sparkled and waited for people to come and explore.

There was a small dot, which was closest to the Holy Mountain. He was moving really fast though.

If nothing unexpected happened, he was going to be the first one to enter the imposing mountain.

That warrior was Cang Yun.

Cang Yun was part of the first wave of warriors entering the Center. As soon as they had stepped in, Cang Yun separated from Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue and moved away alone.

Shi Yan, Audrey, Mia, Haig, Phelps, and the others had encountered battles or deathtraps, which delayed them for a while.

However, as Cang Yun was heading to the Holy Mountain alone, he was ahead of all of them.

Cang Yun's monster body was as tough as granite when he moved

between the thorny bushes. He wasn't afraid of the hooked thorns from the bushes as he moved forcefully and brutally. His body was like a bulldozer that crushed the thorny bushes that could tear normal warriors apart. He was dashing like crazy.

Being a member of the Heavenly Monster Tribe, one of the four great races, Cang Yun had shown his intimidating power of the Heavenly Monster Tribe.

Cang Yun suddenly changed his direction and moved between the bushes. After traveling for several hours, he halted.

A mountain range that had the shape of a roaring tiger appeared in front of Cang Yun. This mountain range wasn't as majestic as the Holy Mountain. The brown-gray rock was built in the shape of a tiger that roared at the sky. It looked lively and it gave people a terrifying impression.

Cang Yun reached the foot of the mountain and then thrust his arm into the rock flange. The sea of energy in his arm gushed out tremendously.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

The mountain range exploded. Big rocks fell and shattered in the mountain stream.

A massive crystal white skeleton emerged inside the mountain range, which had the shape of a robust tiger.

"The Holy Beast White Tiger!"

Cang Yun mumbled. His eyes glowed with a magical halo as he was tenderly stroking the white-jade claws of the huge tiger skeleton. He was trying to sense something.

Chapter 1175: After Five Years!

Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird, and Black Tortoise were the four Great Holy Ancestors of the Heavenly Monster Tribe. The Vermilion Bird and the Black Tortoise had fallen and their remains were wandering around the vast sea of stars.

Shi Yan had met the Vermilion Bird's remains by chance. It helped his Vermilion Bird True Flame evolve. The Black Tortoise's skeleton now belonged to Zuo Shi and it turned into her Seal of power. At the same time, no one knew where the Azure Dragon and the White Tiger were.

Today, in the Center of the ancient continent, Cang Yun had found the White Tiger near the Holy Mountain. The skeleton of the beast was like a several-thousand-meter tall mountain range. It was fulgent in white and it radiated beautifully like the white chalcedony. Still, the skeleton had maintained a fierce, bloodthirsty aura.

The White Tiger was the Killing Star. The genealogical book of the Heavenly Monster Tribe had a detailed record of it. In the White Tiger was one of the branches of the Heavenly Monster Tribe who held a similar position to the Charteris family of the God Clan or the Immortal Demon Clan of Demon Clan. They were the best valiant warriors of these clans.

Cang Yun stroked the giant skeleton of White Tiger. His face had some subtle, magical changes in silence...

Tiger stripes appeared on his skin. The word "King" identifying the White Tiger branch also appeared on his forehead.

Cang Yun was from the lineage of the Holy Beast White Tiger!

As he fondled the white crystal bones, boiling energy fluctuations emitted from his monster body just like a massive whirlpool that could swallow everything in this world.

Streams of crystal white energy gushed out of the White Tiger's remains and slowly entered Cang Yun through the palms of his hands placed on the skeleton...

The drawings on Cang Yun's body rippled and surged like sea waves. He suddenly faced the sky and roared like a real tiger. His monster body changed immediately. He had transformed into a majestic tiger that was several hundred meters long. He had become the king of the animals in the forest and he drew in the torrential energy from the chalcedony bones of the White Tiger.

Beams of white light emitted from the Holy Beast White Tiger and fell on Cang Yun's body like a dense sprinkle. Cang Yun's Blood Qi became brimming. It looked like he was taking in the Immemorial Inheritance to obtain the purest power and the power Upanishad of his branch!

The Holy Ancestor White Tiger's remains turned from crystal white to gray-white. As its energy was being taken out, it lost the halo gradually. The skeleton cracked as if it couldn't remain tough any longer.

In contrast to this, Cang Yun had become more robust and imposing. He was filled with power that could help him tear all the flesh of any creature. He looked imposingly tyrannical, indeed.

It was the imperial aura of the Holy Beast White Tiger!

Cang Yun was absorbing the energy from the White Tiger's remains.

By the river flowing through a mountain stream, Shi Yan, Audrey, Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, Wu Feng, and the others were moving along the river and heading towards the Holy Mountain. Audrey had picked this trail, so no one had any other opinion.

It was strange that since they had walked along this river in the valley, they didn't encounter any deathtrap. Everything was so

smooth that it made people confused and afraid.

Audrey didn't give them an explanation. They could only hold their doubts within.

Everybody understood that as Audrey was the Princess of the Imperial Dark Tribe, she must have a lot of knowledge about this ancient continent. Also, Audrey had mastered the abilities of the soul altar. She wouldn't bring people to a dead corner.

"Dangers are awaiting us ahead after we pass this area. If my ancestors weren't wrong... there should be a big lake over there that we can't walk around to pass. Otherwise, it will be much more dangerous," said Audrey all of a sudden.

Everybody was perplexed.

"Our Imperial Dark Tribe will come to this ancient continent every ten thousand years. Many of my precursors had been here. Of course, most of them had explored the area and returned with nothing good. Only some of them had a significant harvest." Audrey pondered for a while before telling the details. "The precursors who had visited this continent had recorded things that they had experienced. They wanted the next generations to explore more..."

People understood it now.

In this vast universe, it was rare that the dominant force could keep their power without declining for a long time. It meant that the force or the family of Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, Wu Feng, and Mo Fou might not have existed tens of thousands of years ago.

Thus, they knew the magical features of this ancient continent from others or some special channels they had. However, they couldn't have any ancestor telling them the marvelous characteristics of this place... Tens of thousands of years ago, their ancestors weren't born yet!

Anyway, the Imperial Dark Tribe was different.

They were the strongest race in this world. They were the key characters of the cosmos in every era. Thus, the experts of the Imperial Dark Tribe were able to come to the ancient continent every time it opened.

Throughout many generations, the precursors of the Imperial Dark Tribe had described the features of the ancient continent and gave instructions to their future generations. Thus, they could have better knowledge than anyone else on getting into this place, which made them different from ordinary warriors.

That was why Audrey knew that Desolate has consciousness. She even knew its strange interest to give Shi Yan some advice.

"So... we should be more cautious in the coming time, right?" Wu Feng asked with a heavy face.

"Correct," Mo Fou replied and frowned. He didn't walk more, his eyes scanning Jiao Hai, Jiao Shan, and the others as if he wanted to find some scouts.

At this point, they all knew that it would be perilous to advance further. There would be a lethal deathtrap waiting for them. Thus, they became careful. No one wanted to walk ahead. Everyone hoped that someone would replace them to be the vanguard.

All of a sudden, no one proactively stepped forward. Everybody halted.

Audrey and Shi Yan knitted their brows.

"You and your brother go ahead and make way for us." Shi Yan darkened his face and pointed at Wu Feng and Wu Bai, asking them to scout.

"Why us?" Wu Feng's eyes changed and looked at Jiao Hai, Jiao Shan, and Sha Zhao sinisterly. "Why not them?" He turned to Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue. "How about them?"

Apparently, Wu Feng didn't want to do that.

"It's okay if you don't want to go," Shi Yan pursed his lips and grinned, "Then leave this team."

Wu Feng felt a sudden chill in his heart. He couldn't help but look at Audrey with the hope that she would say something fair.

He understood that Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, and Shi Yan had something ambiguous. He also knew that Jiao Shan, Jiao Hai, and Sha Zhao had followed Shi Yan. During a moment like this, of course, Shi Yan would protect them to maintain his force. That was why he asked his brothers to take risks.

Shi Yan had proven that his position and state could surpass most of the people here and he was able to stand shoulder by shoulder with Audrey.

Thus, he could only count on Audrey.

Unfortunately, Audrey didn't give him face. "You brothers should go scouting. After ten miles, Mo Fou will take the shift. Then, we alter every ten miles," said Audrey.

In Audrey's eyes, only Shi Yan was strong enough to talk to her or bargain with her in this group. The others were all inferior creatures that weren't worth her time.

Listening to Audrey, Wu Feng's face turned pitiful. He had no other choice.

The two big bosses had agreed. They had no way to reject it. The two brothers put on faces that they would have when they attended a funeral. Since they didn't have any other option around, they started to walk ahead of the team, guarding and checking dangers for every people. Their existences were like sacrificing pawns.

Shang Ying Yue's eyes had a strange light twinkling. She eyed the Wu brothers and then Mo Fou with his wince. All of a sudden, she felt that the wind had changed.

That year, when she had just entered the ancient continent and

accompanied Shi Yan, Shi Yan had only First Sky of Ethereal God Realm. No one appreciated him. Sha Zhao used to want to finish her and Shi Yan at the same time. Thinking back to that time, she thought that the Wu brothers and Mo Fou were really tough to deal with. At the same time, she wanted to kill the Bai family's warriors too.

It'd been just five years! Five short years!

Today, Sha Zhao was filled with admiration and gratitude for Shi Yan. He always tried to protect Shi Yan's welfare and he treated him as his leader. The Wu brothers also needed to follow Shi Yan's orders.

And Shi Yan had killed all of the Bai family's warriors. Afterward, Shang Ying Yue had a strange, yet new affection for Shi Yan. She also viewed him from another angle...

After five times, people's position and status here had changed dramatically. It felt like they had survived several generations. Thinking about it, Shang Ying Yue felt so emotional.

Her cold and clear eyes studied Shi Yan quietly while her heart became resolute. He could change everything around him within five years. So, after fifty years or five hundred years, could he change the entire world?"

Since Wu Feng and Wu Bai had walked in the front of the team to make way, they had indeed encountered a lot of troubles. The natural barriers had struck them all the time.

Audrey and Shi Yan followed them closely. Once they found the Wu brothers encounter danger, they would help them timely. They had saved Wu Feng and Wu Bai many times.

After ten miles, it was Mo Fou's shift. This time, Mo Fou happily performed his role. He didn't resist even a bit.

It was because Audrey and Shi Yan were worth their trust. They

wouldn't ignore them when they were in danger. Audrey and Shi Yan were trying their best to reduce the losses for this team.

Mo Fou had advanced eight miles ahead.

He halted and raised his voice. "Guys, check it out. There's a lake ahead of us, which looks like a bright mirror!"

People dashed forward and stood by Mo Fou to watch. They then saw a lake ahead of them that was so crystal clear that it was like a mirror. It didn't have a single leaf or a small fish.

This lake had a strange, clear water that reflected some images. With a closer look, they found that there were the bright moon and the dazzling sun as big as the stone mill.

People instinctively looked up to watch the sky.

The sky was covered by the cotton clouds and it left no gap for the sunlight to reach the ground. They didn't see a single star, let alone the sun or the moon.

If there were no star, moon, or sun in the sky, why could they see their reflections on the water?

Everybody frowned and felt something strange happening around them. This abnormal lake made them feel insecure.

A cold, soft hand appeared in Shi Yan's palm. He was surprised and he turned around to find that it belonged to Cecilia.

Cecilia didn't have her sexy makings anymore. She looked a little pale, mumbling with fear. "Remember you've promised me to help me with something?"

"I do," nodded Shi Yan.

Cecilia's cold finger pointed to the lake as she whispered, "It's this place. Will you come with me to the lake? You've promised me..."

Shi Yan was astounded.

Chapter 1176: Wonderland

It was true that Shi Yan had promised her.

He had agreed to do one thing for Cecilia even before he had anything ambiguous with Cecilia.

He had almost forgotten it until Cecilia reminded him. He thought that Cecilia came to the ancient continent just to collect the treasures of Water Class. In the middle of the desert, Cecilia had harvested a lot of Water Heart Crystals. He assumed that those crystals were the reason why she was here.

Today, Shi Yan finally understood that he was completely wrong after listening to her.

"You've agreed with me. Will you help me?" Cecilia begged him.

Shi Yan smiled and nodded naturally. "It's true. I agreed with you. Of course, I will help you."

Shi Yan and Cecilia walked behind the group. When Cecilia talked to him, she held his hand, so they had to stop walking for a while, which gave them a little distance from the others.

People who walked in the front couldn't hear their conversation.

Mo Fou was still scouting ahead. That strange lake stood in front of him where the images of the suns and the moons were reflected. However, there weren't only one sun and one moon. They counted and found nine dazzling suns and nine bright moons.

Gray clouds stuck in the horizon. This place didn't have a single star, which made the reflections of the suns and the moons in the lake so odd.

It made people not dare to act rashly.

Mo Fou stopped. He urged his energy and tried to sense the surrounding.

Audrey frowned and said, "We need to swim across the lake. The

areas around the lake are even more perilous."

No one dared to doubt Audrey. They changed their visage and studied the lake. Their hearts sank and felt helter-skelter.

Audrey looked at Mo Fou and said indifferently, "You still need two more miles. You go first."

Mo Fou's countenance changed.

According to their agreement, they would take turns to scout. After he finished his ten miles, the Wu brothers would take their turn. He had finished eight miles. If that damn lake wasn't there, he could finish his turn smoothly.

But now. . .

Mo Fou wore a dark face. He accepted his unfortunate fate, sighing and preparing to jump into the lake.

"Wait a minute."

However, at this moment, Shi Yan called out from their back and sauntered to their front.

People didn't know what was going on and they just turned around to look at him. Mo Fou had no clue. He asked, "Is there anything you want me to do for you?" He sounded friendly because Shi Yan had helped him many times during this trip.

"You stay here. We will enter the lake first," Shi Yan turned to look at Cecilia.

They now noticed Cecilia following him closely. Her charming face was stern.

"You two?" Shang Ying Yue screamed in surprise.

Shi Yan waved his hand as he said, "That lake is a little strange. Let's go there first. We will notify you later."

Mo Fou showed great gratitude.

They all could see that the lake had something weird. Mo Fou had

prepared to encounter dangers. At this critical point, Shi Yan suddenly took the responsibility. Although Mo Fou didn't know his intention, he had appreciated Shi Yan from the bottom of his heart. He had made up his mind that whenever Shi Yan and Audrey had a dispute, he would stand on Shi Yan's side.

"Thank you," Mo Fou exhaled in relief. He backed off and said sincerely, "You must be careful. This lake isn't normal at all."

Audrey frowned. She studied Shi Yan and then Cecilia, and then snorted. She didn't voice her opinion in this.

If Audrey didn't have any opinion, of course, no one would oppose it. They decided this task that way.

When Shi Yan and Cecilia came by the lake, he gestured and said to the others, "Guys, back off. I need to talk to Cecilia."

Audrey nodded. The other warriors stepped backed and left Shang Ying Yue at her spot, looking at Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia worriedly.

Shi Yan smiled and didn't mind Shang Ying Yue who stood still at her spot. He asked calmly, "Can you explain the situation now?" He looked at Cecilia.

"I have an elderly teacher. Ten thousand years ago, she used to visit this area..." said Cecilia sadly.

Her teacher cultivated Water power Upanishad and she had lived for more than ten thousand years. The last time this planet opened, she had come here with her husband. They had made it to the Center of the ancient continent and reached this lake. Her husband went to the lake and sank little by little as if he was pulled by something invisible and drowned.

While he was sinking to the bottom of the lake, he sent his wife the soul message and asked her not to get into the lake no matter what. He told her to stay and wait for him.

Cecilia's teacher had waited for him.

Not long after that, the lake became normal and had no reflections. Everything became pretty normal.

Cecilia's teacher couldn't sense any commotion of her husband. She entered the lake to search but found nothing. Her husband seemed to have vanished into thin air.

Right after that, she stopped her expedition of this ancient continent to search the lake for years. When the ancient continent kicked her out, she hadn't found her husband yet.

It became a sickness in her heart.

Afterward, she left the ancient continent and returned to her life star. She had continued to search for her husband's whereabouts. Unfortunately, she didn't have a clue.

She was sure that her husband had disappeared in this lake on the ancient continent. Perhaps he had been dragged into a strange domain or confined somewhere. Probably... he had died...

She stopped yearning for the day she could reunite with her husband. However, she wanted to see his remains. Thus, she accepted a disciple and taught her skills and abilities. She had even tried to find a Guiding Fruit for her to send her to the ancient continent the next time. She hoped that her disciple could fulfill her wish.

"My teacher used to tell me that this lake has some power of Water with the Space power. She couldn't see its real competence. She told me that it would be possible to enter the lake when I go there with someone cultivates Space power Upanishad. Then, we can decode the riddle of this lake," Cecilia looked at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan suddenly understood.

No wonder why Cecilia showed a deep interest in him when she saw him using Space power Upanishad. Later on, she wanted to go with him and shoulder to fight Mia's team.

Cecilia had wanted to count on his power earlier.

Because he knew Space power Upanishad.

"I want to enter the lake. I've promised my teacher to help her find her husband's remains. My teacher has done so many things for me to come here and to have my attainment today. I won't let her down," Cecilia looked at Shi Yan tenderly, "Please help me..."

"Alright," Shi Yan smiled and agreed with her. He turned to Shang Ying Yue and said to her, "You heard it, right. We know what had happened. I will jump to the lake with her. Don't worry. We will be alright."

"I'm going with you guys," Shang Ying Yue suggested all of a sudden.

"No need," Shi Yan waved his hand to stop her. "I can deal with it. You just stay here. Leave it to me."

Shi Yan didn't wait for Shang Ying Yue to talk more, directly jumping and pulling Cecilia into the lake. No water splashed. It seemed like they had just walked through a door and disappeared.

Shang Ying Yue was scared.

Shi Yan and Cecilia had jumped into the lake. She saw it with her own eyes. However, she couldn't see any signal of them in the lake. Cecilia and Shi Yan seemed to have vanished into thin air right at that moment.

The lake was still clear and bright like a mirror with the reflections of the suns, moons, and the cotton clouds. Everything looked normal.

Shang Ying Yue felt her hair rising on her nape.

Where have Shi Yan and Cecilia gone?

Audrey, Mo Fou, Sha Zhao, and the others also saw Shi Yan and Shang Ying Yue jump into the lake. They dashed forward and stood by Shang Ying Yue to look at the lake skeptically.

Shang Ying Yue took a deep breath. She told Audrey what she

had found. Since she knew Audrey had a supernatural ability, she wanted to use her to find Shi Yan and Cecilia.

Audrey changed her visage. She immediately closed her eyes to urge the soul altar. She wanted to use the secret technique of the soul-searching of the Imperial Dark Tribe. She set her Soul Consciousness to the lake.

After a while, Audrey shook her head, her face cold. She confirmed, "This lake doesn't have their auras!"

They then wore heavy faces.

"Don't rush. Shi Yan isn't like the others. I think he could deal with it." Audrey contemplated for a while and then comforted them, "We just have to wait here and see."

Since they didn't have any better idea, they had to agree with her. They scattered by the lake and focused on the water, waiting for Shi Yan's commotion in silence.

"Where are we? This is absolutely not the bottom of the lake!"

Cecilia looked at the sky and screamed in surprise.

Shi Yan also wore a strange countenance. Lifting his head to look at the sky, he mumbled, "Is it a real world?"

The dark red sky held nine suns and nine moons arranged in some particular formation. The eighteen suns and moons radiated the hot sunlight and the cold moonlight, which looked like a light column piercing through the sky and earth to illuminate this area.

The ground under their feet was like a massive crystal with dazzling light streamers moving inside.

Above their heads were the suns and moons and under their feet was the galaxy of stars. This strange world couldn't be caught even in their fantasy dreams. It looked so strange, indeed.

Shi Yan wasn't so sure if those things were all real. He urged his

soul altar and focused on his Ethereal Extent and the Star power Upanishad.

Swish! Swish! Swish!

The sunlight, moonlight in the sky, and the starlight streamers underground suddenly surged torrentially as if they were revived. Together, they flooded his body.

The sunlight and moonlight columns above their heads moved, all shining on Shi Yan's body.

"Oh Gosh! They are real!"

Shi Yan couldn't help but whine, his face disbelieving.

It was not a fantasy world!

The suns, moons, and stars in the imaginary world couldn't bring him any energy. His Star power Upanishad couldn't work in a fantasy world. But it was real here. Is this place... still the ancient continent?

Cecilia covered her mouth, looking at the fierce shower of sunlight, moonlight, and starlight swarming Shi Yan. Suddenly, she saw an Ethereal Extent emerge over Shi Yan's head. She could even see the sun in that Ethereal Extent. Magically, it looked quite similar to the world they were at.

Chapter 1177: It Seems Like a Dreamland

Audrey, Shang Ying Yue, Mo Fou, and the others stood by the clear lake and looked at the suns, moons, and scattered stars twinkling.

All of a sudden, the lake rippled. It looked like some strange and evil energy was trying to do something to the lake to hide its peculiarity.

The ripples on the lake surface ceased.

Everybody changed their visage in fear. There was no sun, moon, or star anymore. The lake now reflected the clouds, which were the exact objects floating above their heads. The strange reflections in the lake... were gone.

Shang Ying Yue paled. She couldn't help but scream in panic.

The other warriors looked at her.

Shang Ying Yue promptly told them what Cecilia had told her. She explained how Cecilia's teacher's husband had disappeared into that lake. The lake became normal, but her husband had gone forever. No one knew whether he was alive or not.

And now, things on the lake had changed the same way it had done ten thousand years ago. It happened exactly as Cecilia had told them.

"Do you know what's going on?" Wu Feng looked at Audrey. "As you're from the Imperial Dark Clan, if you don't know it, I think no one will have a clue."

Everybody was waiting for Audrey to talk.

Audrey shook her head, "I don't know."

"What should we do?" Shang Ying Yue was so worried as if she had a flame burning her. "If what Cecilia said is true, are they gone in this lake and we won't be able to find them even ten thousand

years later?"

Jiao Shan, Sha Zhao, and Mo Fou had serious faces. They were really worried about Shi Yan. They frowned and thought about what to do.

"No! I have to go there to see!"

Shang Ying Yue gritted her teeth and then jumped into the lake. She moved around the bottom of the lake for a while. Audrey, Sha Zhao, and the others were baffled to watch Shang Ying Yue moving into the lake. However, she didn't disappear. They could still see her swimming and raking through the lake bottom.

They knew that the lake had resumed its normal state.

Sha Zhao, Jiao Hai, Jiao Shan, Mo Fou, and Wu Feng jumped into the lake, trying to see if they could find the secret of the lake to rescue Shi Yan and Cecilia.

After a long time, they got out of the lake including Shang Ying Yue. This lake wasn't really big. After two hours, they had carefully checked the entire lake several times. Audrey had even used her Soul Consciousness to check. No one got anything.

Shi Yan and Cecilia had disappeared like that.

"I can say that when we saw the lake having the suns and moons, it would be a magical space entrance at that time," Audrey contemplated and then spoke.

People nodded in agreement.

"I mean Shi Yan and Cecilia aren't in the lake. They've been transferred to another space or are confined somewhere. Or they didn't want to get back. And if they want to get back, it's not sure if they will reappear here. The ancient continent has so many marvelous secrets that I can't see through."

Pausing for a while, Audrey sat down cross-legged and said indifferently, "We'll wait for them for half a day. If they don't go

out, when our time is up, we must leave without them."

Jiao Shan and the others wore heavy faces. They knew Audrey's decision was correct so they could only nod begrudgingly.

"I'm going to stay and wait for them," said Shang Ying Yue coldly.

The suns and moons were in the sky while they had stars under their feet. It felt like they were walking in the void.

Shi Yan stood there and lifted his head to look at the sky and the columns of sunlight and moonlight descending from the sky like the rivers. Specks of starlight like flying fireflies entered the Ethereal Extent above his head.

His Ethereal Extent was like an unreal world or a massive, greedy mouth that was swallowing the moonlight and sunlight and making them a part of it.

Shi Yan looked like he had been petrified. His God Body was still and it remained in his state to receive all of the light.

His soul altar was emitting terrifying energy fluctuations... especially his Devouring power Upanishad!

The black hole was connected to the Ethereal Extent. Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent was swallowing the lights of the suns, moons, and stars. It seemed like his Ethereal Extent had controlled everything.

Cecilia looked at Shi Yan and gasped in fright for a while. Then, she realized that Shi Yan was standing still as if he didn't hear her calling.

However, she knew that Shi Yan was fine. She could see that he was taking in the marvelous benefits of this area. Except for the fact that she didn't know where they were. Looking at Shi Yan standing still for a long time, she didn't dare to disturb him.

Cecilia hesitated for a while and then moved around this strange place to explore.

As she always remembered her teacher's words, she wanted to find the remains of her teacher's beloved one, which was possibly here for ten thousand years. She started to walk around.

She continued walking...

This place seemed to not have an end or any border. After a long time of moving, she figured out that she was pretty far from where Shi Yan was standing. Unfortunately, she hadn't found anything yet. There was no river, mountain, sea, rock, or even a leaf of grass. Nothing she knew was found here.

Not a single bone.

Eventually, she felt hopeless, so she turned around and walked back to Shi Yan.

All of a sudden, she saw a mountain, which was very massive like a pillar that supported the whole sky and stood majestically.

She stood still and watched the massive mountain. After a while, she was struck that she suddenly recognized that it was the Center of Desolate!

She woke up all of a sudden.

She found that she was standing in a vast forest by the foot of the Holy Mountain. She was just one step away from the mountain!

The galaxy under her feet and the wonder of eighteen suns and moons above her head had disappeared. It looked like everything was a dream, a fantasy dream...

It felt like she had entered the lake and got to this place when she got out.

Cecilia stood in a daze and knitted her brows to think. She wanted to know the truth. She wanted to confirm that she wasn't just dreaming.

Bewilderedly, she thought that she just had a hallucination. However, she thought it was more of a hallucination now than

before. She stood with a dull, baffled face.

"Oh, you've come here one step ahead!"

A surprised voice arose. Cang Yun's succulent body appeared. He immediately retrieved his murderous aura and showed his innocent smile.

Cecilia pulled herself together from her thoughts, her charming face bewildered. "I don't know how I got here. Just a moment ago, I was in a strange place where there were nine suns and nine moons. I could see the galaxy underneath my feet. Why am I here all of a sudden?"

She furrowed her brows and said uncertainly, Abruptly, she yelled, "Shi Yan! Where's Shi Yan? It's not a dreamland! It's not a dream!"

She didn't notice that Cang Yun had a panic-stricken visage when she described the area to him. He looked at her but his eyes weren't focused as he was mumbling something.

Cang Yun surely knew something!

Chapter 1178: The Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm

Shi Yan stood still in that strange world.

The light from the nine suns and nine moons shone above his head while specks of starlight surged under his feet. All congregated into his Ethereal Extent.

Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent changed slowly.

The Ethereal Extent seemed to reflect this area. Slowly, it had nine suns, nine moons, and specks of stars that looked marvelous and yet strange.

Shi Yan sank in the transformation of the star and space. He could touch the ripples of Death and Life power Upanishad in his soul altar while his powers Upanishads in the soul altar were changing at a speed that he could never imagine.

Gradually, his world dimmed when the light of the suns and moons above his head partially disappeared. They faded away like shadows. Suddenly, countless stars under his feet were all gone.

This world seemed to be absorbed by his Ethereal Extent and was imprinted in his Ethereal Extent.

Shi Yan found himself standing in a place of white fog. He couldn't see or sense anything else. It seemed like he was lonely in this peculiar earth and heaven.

After an unknown time, Shi Yan woke up. He had a wonderful feeling as if he had conquered and embedded a whole world in his brain. As soon as he received this thought, he was shaken hard.

The God power Ancient Tree in his body had doubled. His bones and veins were quenched by the sunlight, moonlight, and starlight. His Space, Star, Death and Life intent domains had been upgraded. He had reached Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm!

His soul was inexplicably sublimated!

Using his Soul Consciousness to check his body, he found that his Ethereal Extent now was like a real world with the sun, moon, and stars. He could understand all of their mysteries. However, the real powers of the sun, moon, and stars in his Ethereal Extent were much weaker than he had imagined. Also, it wasn't as strong as the strange world he used to visit.

Shi Yan frowned and felt puzzled as if he had fallen into a thick mist.

"It's not easy for you to merge the truth of Star and Space power of that man into your Ethereal Extent. Your realm is too low. Of course, you can't take all the roots of the world that man had created based on Desolate that year. Desolate... won't allow you to do that." Suddenly, Shi Yan heard the Ring Spirit's voice in his soul.

Shi Yan was surprised. He asked, "I don't quite understand."

"One hundred thousand years ago, that man was the top warrior of the God Clan. His powers Upanishads were very similar to yours. He had fused the power of the Star and Space. The primary Light power Upanishad of the God Clan is now actually the source of the Star power Upanishad. The moonlight, the sunlight, and the starlight are all light in nature. They are very similar to the Light power Upanishad of the God Clan." The Ring Spirit explained. "Your Star power Upanishad comes from the Three God Sect of the Endless Sea. The Three God Sect is a branch of the Radiant God Cult and that Radiant God Cult was founded by the warriors cultivating Light power Upanishad of the God Clan from the ancient time. Real experts of the God Clan had visited Grace Mainland pretty early. They spread out the Light power Upanishad, which then derived into Star power Upanishad. Although they aren't really similar, they have connections..." the Ring Spirit continued.

Listening to the Ring Spirit, Shi Yan understood the matter.

Many years ago, he received the Star power Upanishad from the secret domain of the precursor named Ouyang. When he got to the Endless Sea, he learned that that precursor was the Star God, one of the sages of the Three God Sect.

Entering the Divine Great Land from the Endless Sea, Shi Yan knew the Radiant God Cult. Then, he learned that the three Gods of Sun, Moon, and Star were the three guardians of the Radiant God Cult. The Star martial spirit was just one part of the Radiant God Cult. This cult had the Flaming Sun martial spirit, the Silver Moon martial spirit, and the Star martial spirit, which the warriors could practice with the Flaming Sun Secret, the Silver Moon Secret, and the Star Secret. Yun Hao, the Cult Master of the Radiant God Cult had fused the three powers into one and called it the Light power Upanishad...

After Shi Yan had left Grace Mainland and experienced many kinds of struggles, he had comprehended the truth of his power Upanishad and he was able to gather the light of the sun, moon, and stars. However, he still called his power the Star power Upanishad. However, Yun Hao had referred to his power as the Light power Upanishad.

Listening to the Ring Spirit, Shi Yan understood that his power Upanishad now had been beyond the Light power Upanishad of the God Clan. Although it changed, it still had some connection.

However, why did the top warrior of the God Clan create a world in Desolate one hundred thousand years ago?

"He wanted to absorb the power of Desolate and use the Star and Space powers to create a whole new world. He wanted to refine Desolate..." The Ring Spirit's voice trembled. "Of course, he failed. He was really dominant at that time. Anyway, he is not the only one who got the same idea. White Tiger of the Heavenly Monster Tribe, an expert of the Immortal Demon Clan., and another expert

of the Imperial Dark Tribe had the same thought. In that era, they represented the peak existences of the Great Four Creatures. However, all failed..."

"Why did they fail?" Shi Yan asked, "Weren't they strong enough?"

"Not strong enough?" The Ring Spirit paused for a while and then continued. "Even in comparison to warriors of this current era, they were the best of the best. Their intimidation could be compared to the Chief of the God Clan, Imperial Dark Tribe, and Heavenly Monster Tribe. They were even stronger in some aspects..."

"But they still failed?"

"They weren't qualified to refine Desolate... Until now, no one had that qualification. No one could do that."

"What is Desolate after all?"

"You will know later."

"How about the others who had failed to do that?"

"White Tiger's remains had turned into a mountain range. The Incipient Extent of that God warrior had turned into the world you've just visited. Desolate has sealed it. After you decoded its Essence, that world lost its existence. You've used it to break to Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm. It will be the primal form of your Incipient Extent. If you have enough power, you can create a whole new world too. The Imperial Dark warrior had turned into the ice blue light cage covering Desolate, which you saw when you got through the atmosphere. The Immortal Demon expert had turned his God Body into that Holy Mountain. Desolate controls him.

"One hundred thousand years ago, the four of them were the strongest experts who led the four great races. They were the Essence crystallization of the four ancient continents. But still,

they failed."

"What is the connection between the four ancient continents and Desolate? Why does Desolate open when the other four continents are at its worst exhausted condition? And when they recover their prosperity, Desolate will close? There should be some marvelous connection between them, right?" asked Shi Yan.

"You're not dumb. The five ancient continents used to be one entity. However, they were divided when they were born. It was like dividing a person into five pieces. The other four continents are its limbs and the Desolate is the control center. Did you understand this example of mine?"

Shi Yan felt shocked.

After years of wandering around this ancient continent, he soon had this thought. He guessed that the four ancient continent and Desolate had some connection.

Shi Yan, Haig, Audrey, and Cang Yun didn't have their Soul Consciousness bound on this ancient continent. They felt like they were at home and they could gather earth and heaven energy easily. All of these were because of the Origins of the ancient continents.

However, a guess was just a guess. He couldn't solve the mystery if the Ring Spirit didn't tell him. Perhaps, he would never understand this thoroughly.

At the dawn of the universe, the five continents were one. They were divided after that. The four ancient continents had drifted apart like limbs of a body that scattered around the regions of the universe. They all had the incredible abilities.

Desolate had intelligence and consciousness. Many people had told him this. He also had his cognition of it.

If it was true, would the other four continents that departed from Desolate have the same intellect as a living being?

"As you can come up to this point, you didn't fail us. It's true that not only Desolate but also the other four continents, Grace Mainland, God-blessed Mainland, Ancient Demon Continent, and Ancient God Continent have incomplete intelligence and consciousness. Otherwise, there would be no Immortal Demon Clan, God Clan, Heavenly Monster Tribe, and Imperial Dark Tribe. The four great races were born in the four ancient continents respectively. They all wanted to prove that the creature that they had birthed was the most perfect. And they hoped that the creatures they had created could bear their soul memory. Unfortunately, they couldn't do that. Even though the Great Four Creatures that they had birthed were really strong, they couldn't bear the continents' formidable memory. Thus, they had no choice but to try to use some other alternative..." said the Ring Spirit.

"Making us fuse with their Origin to create the co-soul and stay in our soul alta? A co-existence? The co-soul... is some kind of continent's mediator?" Shi Yan screamed in fright.

"Really smart!" appraised the Ring Spirit.

Shi Yan suddenly felt his hair rising on his nape.

He couldn't help but release his co-soul. A magical flame spun as his thoughts changed. It was a part of his soul and it had the same pulsation as his.

It... stores the will and memory of the ancient continent?

"You don't need to be tense. It can't affect you just yet. When the ancient continents are weakest, they can let out a part of its Origin to fuse with your souls and become your co-souls. Currently, Grace Mainland, God-blessed Mainland, Ancient God Continent, and Ancient Demon Continent are like lamps running out of oil. Their power and intellect are in its weakest condition. How could they threaten you guys? No need to worry" comforted the Ring Spirit.

"Recently, the ancient continents have begun to revive and collect energy from outer space. When they become strong again,

could we... still be able to control ourselves?" asked Shi Yan seriously.

"As long as you're stronger than it, you can control it. Otherwise..." The Ring Spirit didn't finish its sentence.

Shi Yan grimaced.

"So it's not coincidental when a bunch of people like me, the ones who have fused with the Origin appear here, right? What are they seeking? What do they want from Desolate?" Shi Yan pointed out the critical question.

"You'll know it shortly," the Ring Spirit replied and then went silent.

After that, Shi Yan found himself in the lake, soaking wet.

Audrey's team had left the lake a long time ago. Only Shang Ying Yue was waiting for him by the lake. Seeing him, her eyes brightened.

He frowned and hissed, "Where's Cecilia? Did you see her?"

"Didn't she accompany you?" Shang Ying Yue was inexplicably bewildered.

"She hasn't gotten out of the lake yet?" Shi Yan changed his visage slightly.

Shang Ying Yue shook her head. "I've always been waiting here. I didn't see her. I thought that she went with you all the time."

"Damn it!"

Shi Yan cursed under his breath. He wanted to enter that wonderful world one more time. However, he couldn't find the entrance. He understood that the magical world generated by the Incipient Extent of the precursor from the God Clan had disappeared after the Essence of it was carved into his Ethereal Extent to boost him to Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

Chapter 1179: Destination

The lake was still crystal clear without a single algae leaf or fish. The only thing different from the time he had jumped into the lake was that Shi Yan didn't see any moon or sun.

Shang Ying Yue wore a white dress, her face elegant and quiet. However, there was a gleam of sadness on her face.

Both Shang Ying Yue and Shi Yan were worried about Cecilia going missing a lot. They didn't know where the woman had gone.

As she was too worried, she didn't even notice that Shi Yan had reached a new realm. Now, he was at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

"How long have you been here?" asked Shi Yan in a low-pitched voice.

"I didn't count the time. After Audrey's team left, I sat down to cultivate. I didn't notice the time," said Shang Ying Yue dishearteningly.

Shi Yan released a flow of Soul Consciousness and moved around Shang Ying Yue. Then, he said, "Although your realm didn't advance, your God power is more sufficient and purer. The time you've been cultivating here isn't short, I suppose."

"Could be..." Shang Ying Yue wasn't so sure. . .

Looking at the Holy Mountain that was far from them, Shi Yan frowned and pulled himself together, "Let's go. Maybe we will meet her at the Holy Mountain."

The strange, secret domain generated by the God expert's Incipient Extent had been imprinted in his Ethereal Extent. Since he didn't see Cecilia in there, it meant that Cecilia wasn't in that strange world with him. She had gotten out earlier.

When she got out of that place, if she couldn't find Cecilia and

Shi Yan, she would definitely head to their destination: the Holy Mountain.

Shang Ying Yue was still cold and not really talkative. She rarely voiced her opinion, so when Shi Yan made up his mind, she just followed him quietly. They swam across the lake and ran towards the Holy Mountain.

Their way was strangely smooth.

The perilous barriers and deathtraps in the Center of the ancient continent were weakened unknowingly. They didn't bother Shi Yan and Shang Ying Yue too much.

Shang Ying Yue and Shi Yan didn't understand why Desolate suddenly became so kind and showed a great deal of mercy.

The majestic Holy Mountain standing firm in this world wasn't far from them anymore. They could reach it soon.

Shi Yan and Shang Ying Yue were like two departed spirits that were crossing a swamp where five-colored toxic gas hovered above their heads. Their feet didn't touch the swamp.

All of a sudden, Shi Yan halted in the middle of the bog.

He looked in a direction, his left hand grabbing something in the air.

Swish!

A starlight stream shot out from his fingertip like a water current, which had the power to detain the world.

The starlight stream extended like a snake that swam through the toxic green gas in the swamp.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

The poisonous smoke was struck and dispersed by his starlight, revealing two members of the God Clan.

They were Phelps's troopers. One was at Second Sky of Ethereal

God Realm and the other was at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm. Their skin and eyes were now glowing in green. Apparently, they got poisoned by the miasma.

Their soul energy fluctuated strangely and was unstable. A cold and evil aura emitted from their bodies. It seemed like the toxic smoke had entered their soul and changed their soul altars. Their God power wasn't reduced but it increased somehow.

When they looked at Shang Ying Yue and Shi Yan with their monstrous, green eyes, Shang Ying Yue felt a chill in her heart as if some monsters were eyeing her.

"It's some sort of mutant. Their bodies are eroded by the poisons, which have pushed them into bedevilment. They don't have human emotions anymore," muttered Shang Ying Yue.

Shi Yan didn't change his visage. His soul altar spun rapidly and changed his powers Upanishads.

The Ethereal Extent emerged like a vast galaxy above his head with the radiant sun, the cold moon, and the twinkling stars. Its energy seemed everlasting and it seemed like it could affect the real world out there.

In Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent, the suns spun and turned into scorching fireballs as big as mountains. They covered the two members of the God Clan with tremendous heat waves.

Under the burning power of the suns, which looked so real, an entire swamp evaporated shortly. Even the grass and rocks burned and melted. The suns could destroy the real world.

The two members of the God Clan were poisoned. Under the scorching suns, water in their bodies evaporated. Their bodies then dried up like fish drying under the sunlight for years.

The hot sunlight could burn any creature in the world. It dried their bodies and exploded their bones. Pieces of their flesh ignited and burned into ashes.

Although they were experts at Second and Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent could burn them easily. They couldn't even wiggle.

It was like when the Incipient God Realm expert had the suppressing slaughter to them. It was a big gap between a realm they could never make up.

The dazzling suns above their heads released terrible heat waves that expanded torrentially. Although the toxic gas was recovered, all the trees and rocks around the area burned and exploded. The ground didn't have a drop of water. This scene looked like doomsday.

Shang Ying Yue couldn't help but take out an Icy Soul Cold Crystal and hug it.

The icy cold energy from the Icy Soul Cold Crystal had kept her safe from the heat. She now looked at Shi Yan in fear.

"How did you suddenly become so strong?" Shang Ying Yue was bewildered for a while. She couldn't help but scream.

The energy and intimidation that Shi Yan was performing were much more terrifying than when he fought with Harson. He hadn't transformed into his immortal body, but he could simply kill two warriors of the God Clan. This kind of deliberation had shocked Shang Ying Yue.

"I've reached Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm." Shi Yan squinted, the acupuncture points in his entire body operating.

Beams of Essence Qi from the dead flooded his acupuncture points. It was a process that naked eyes couldn't observe. The whirlpools there filtered and refined them at an amazing speed.

Shi Yan chuckled.

As he had reached Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, his Space, Star, Death and Life powers Upanishad had all grown. The strange world generated by the God Clan's precursor's Incipient Extent had

been carved in his Ethereal Extent, becoming the reflections there and bringing his Ethereal Extent a marvelous transformation.

He had a feeling like he was able to hold the whole world in his hands.

He was confident that if he fought Harson now, he wouldn't need to pay a bloody price to kill him.

In this Center of the ancient continent, he now had the confidence to face anybody directly. He even believed that he could win in the end.

It was a new transformation of the soul and spirit caused by the marvelous increase of power!

"The energy fluctuation from your body is really intimidating. You can compare it to the warriors at Second Sky of Incipient God Realm. It seems like you're Haig's real rival." Shang Ying Yue appraised him wholeheartedly.

Dry, cracked soil and suns with tyrannical power that could burn down everything were around Shi Yan. Listening to Shang Ying Yue's appraisal, he retrieved the Ethereal Extent into his soul altar and said, "We should move."

Their way became even smoother.

They reached the foot of the Holy Mountain.

Shi Yan glanced at the corpses, which belonged to the God Clan and the other races. They were possibly warriors from the other star areas led by Audrey.

Those corpses weren't intact. Their faces were barely recognizable. Shi Yan and Shang Ying Yue couldn't tell their identities. Nothing was lingering here. Apparently, they were dead for a long time.

Shi Yan and Shang Ying Yue stopped by and searched around the foot of the Holy Mountain. Shi Yan spoke to her, "It seems like

we're the last ones who arrived here. You and I... are late."

Shang Ying Yue nodded.

It was really hard to tell the exact time in this place. Shi Yan didn't notice the time when he had cultivated in the strange land and when Shang Ying Yue used the Icy Soul Cold Crystal to improve her God power, she didn't keep track of time. Thus, they didn't know how long they had lagged behind the others.

However, they saw the remains of the others by the foot of the Holy Mountain that possibly stayed there for a long time and belonged to the groups they knew. They knew that they had wasted a lot of them for their cultivation.

Shi Yan lifted his head and looked at the Holy Mountain.

The Holy Mountain was like the sharpest sword piercing into the high sky. They couldn't see the peak. The Holy Mountain looked like it was covered with fresh blood as it had a dark red hue. At first glance, it gave people a mind constraint.

The mountain had a lot of caves that stretched to its summit. They looked like the steps leading to the Holy Mountain. In the distance, each cave looked like a peculiar eye.

Looking at the crimson mountain with caves that were like eyes scattering here and there, Shi Yan suddenly had a familiar feeling...

It seemed like he had seen this image somewhere. He was so surprised.

Shortly after, his eyes became odd. He couldn't help but take out the blood sword and carefully study it for the first time with the earnest attitude he had ever had.

The broadsword was straight and blood red. Closed eyes filled the body of this broadsword and made people's scalps numb.

The crimson Holy Mountain standing majestically with so many

caves looked amazingly similar to this broadsword!

Absolutely, it wasn't coincidental!

Taking a deep breath, Shi Yan rose the scarlet sword and tried to contact the Ring Spirit. "Explain it to me. What's going on?"

The Ring Spirit didn't answer him. It seemed like it was asleep or it just didn't want to talk to him.

Shang Ying Yue placed her jade-like hand on her mouth, her face aghast. She looked at the blood sword and then the Holy Mountain. She shivered and said to Shi Yan, "So similar!"

"I think so."

Shi Yan turned his wrist. Flames danced along the body of the bloody sword in his hand. The closed eyes on the sword quietly opened. The handle of the sword where Shi Yan was holding now had a mark of the clusters of blood cloud that emitted a magical energy fluctuation.

"It's..." Shang Ying Yue's bright eyes gazed at the mark of the blood cloud. She suddenly screamed as if she was encountering a ghost. "The thing you've inherited... Is it the Bloodthirsty's Master's Inheritance?"

"Yes."

"Oh boy!"

Chapter 1180: The Genesis Fruit

Until now, Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia had assumed that Shi Yan had inherited the Death power Upanishad. They had never thought that he had received the power Upanishad Inheritance of the Bloodthirsty's Master. They were two different concepts!

The Death Inheritance was one of the Eight Great Inheritances. Xuan He was one of the eight Chiefs of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight. He couldn't represent the entire force.

However, the inheritance from the Master of the Bloodthirsty Force wasn't a joke. It was the peak of the powers Upanishads in this world. It also meant that Shi Yan could be the leader of the Bloodthirsty Force and would rule the entire cosmos.

"How do you know that I've inherited the power of the Bloodthirsty Force's Master?" Shi Yan arched his brows.

Shang Ying Yue looked at the blood sword he was holding and said faintly, "I heard some rumors from my father about that... man. He has a bloody sword and a blood shield. They all have the blood mark." She pointed at the mark on the broadsword.

Shi Yan understood it immediately.

After pondering for a while, he asked, "How much you know about the Master of the Bloodthirsty Force?"

"Not much," Shang Ying Yue considered her words and said carefully, "He's the most mysterious man in the universe. No one knows where he's from or what race he is. I heard my father say that he was mighty from the moment he made his debut. He knows many kinds of strange powers Upanishads. At that time, experts of the four great races wanted to kill them. However, many powerful existences of the four great races started to follow him after they had chased after him for a while. They then became his loyal subordinates."

Shi Yan was frightened. "Many warriors of the four great races had followed him?"

He didn't know that.

"Yeah," Shang Ying Yue confirmed, "As far as I know, the key members of the Bloodthirsty Force were mostly from the four great races. After those people had followed the Bloodthirsty's Master, they had new powers Upanishads. Their realms and competences rocketed. Gradually, the Bloodthirsty Force grew fast. It became a brutal force of this universe. Eventually, the God Clan had joined hands with the other experts from the big star areas to wear out the Bloodthirsty Force. They had spent many years to destroy this force..."

"As soon as the Bloodthirsty's Master appeared, he was already formidable?" Shi Yan frowned and felt baffled.

No one could become strong without experiencing difficulties. According to Shang Ying Yue, the Bloodthirsty's Master was extremely strong right when he had come to this universe. Thus, he must have experienced something or was holding another identity.

Anyway, no one knew this.

"The powers Upanishads of the Bloodthirsty Force all came from the Master. Before he appeared, those powers Upanishad had never been found in this universe. When the experts of the four races had any one of them, they became so formidable. Those powers Upanishad had made them terrifying, infamous existences. This force really consisted of aliens. It was like a dark cloud shrouding the cosmos. No one could struggle out of their hands for so many years."

Shang Ying Yue explained to Shi Yan while the man was listening to her quietly.

Apparently, what Shang Ying Yue knew about the Bloodthirsty

Force came from her father, Shang Chen. Although Shang Chen was the Fate Traveler, he didn't know the profile of the Bloodthirsty's Master. Thus, it would be a big secret...

The Ring Spirit must know this!

He tried to contact the Ring Spirit, but it was still silent. Shi Yan knew that it wasn't that the Ring Spirit didn't want to talk to him. It was in its last phase of combining parts of its memory.

The memories that came from Xuan Shan's bone had a large amount of information. It required time for the Ring Spirit to absorb all of them. Shi Yan understood it well.

Shi Yan looked at the Holy Mountain standing majestically in the cloud and the caves on its flanks. After turning to look at the bloody sword in his hand, Shi Yan pulled himself together. It wasn't the right time to figure it out. He decided to wait for the Ring Spirit to wake up and tell him the details.

"We should go to the cave."

Calling for Shang Ying Yue, Shi Yan jumped into the cave nearest to him. Nothing there prevented him from entering the cave directly.

Shang Ying Yue followed him closely.

The cave was dark and deep with many rocky turns connecting each other. The world inside the caves was cold and gloomy. It gave people a strange mind pressure.

Countless caves connected to countless passages and led to unknown areas. Shi Yan and Shang Ying Yue walked through the passages. Seeing more turns, they somehow felt lost.

Shi Yan paused and closed his eyes to sense instead of moving around aimlessly.

The center of the Holy Mountain sent out a surging life energy that vibrated his soul. It was like the sea of life that was immense

and unimaginable. It was even more robust than the oldest immemorial living beings. It was like the life magnetic field of hundreds or thousands of Incipient God Realm warriors combining.

Shi Yan had a concussion. He seemed to see the unknown divine light shining on his Sea of Consciousness...

"Follow me."

His eyes radiated brilliant divine light. Thinking for a while, he grabbed Shang Ying Yue's small, soft hand.

He could clearly feel her shivering. Shang Ying Yue wiggled as she was shy. Eventually, she didn't resist anymore and let him clutch her hand and follow him.

In the deep and dark cave, so many complex passages connected to each other and lead to different areas. The gloomy pressure in this place made people insecure. They felt like they were taking steps to death.

Shi Yan couldn't see that Shang Ying Yue was uncomfortable. In this dim-lit cave, he couldn't see Shang Ying Yue blushing either. She was slightly shivering though.

The Center of the Holy Mountain had a giant ancient tree that was firmly rooted filled each corner of this majestic mountain.

This big tree was like the spirit bell that connected the Underworld and the sea of stars. Its thick branches jutted into the rock passages. It looked like the imposing mountain was just a cover of this ancient tree that protected the tree. That was the meaning of its existence.

The ancient tree had transparent, fulgent branches like real jade. A five-colored light like a rainbow was moving through the branches, radiating magnificently.

If this ancient tree were resized billions of times, it would look like the Essence Qi Ancient Tree in the abdomen of any warrior. It seemed like the Essence Qi Ancient Tree, the source of energy in the warrior's body, had been created with this ancient tree as the model.

Haig, Mia, and Phelps were in a corner of the Holy Mountain where the branches had reached through the rock passages. Cang Yun was with Cecilia in another corner. Audrey, Jiao Shan, Jiao Hai, and the others walked together while Harson stayed alone in another area.

All of them were about to reach the center of the mountain.

As they were scattering in different directions, they didn't see each other as if they had a net blinding them. From the mountain foot, they had encountered and killed some warriors before they got into the caves. They moved around the rock passages. Eventually, they were about to reach the important area inside the mountain.

It was a vast, wonderland inside the mountain where a giant ancient tree grew.

They could see many Guiding Fruits hanging on the thick branches. Ten thousand years later, those Guiding Fruits would be the keys to bring the warriors into the ancient continent. Those fruits were currently ripening fast...

Inside a bush of branches and leaves covered by the rainbow halos and in between the Guiding Fruits, a special fruit was hanging. It was just as big as a human fist, but it looked like a small figure of an ancient continent. It had clouds hovering on the surface, seas, deserts, and forest, and lots of beams of pure energy.

With a close look, that fruit had everything an ancient continent had.

It was ripening.

As soon as Haig, Cang Yun, and Audrey had entered the passage, their co-souls continually sent them vibes and matched with the energy of that fruit. They had followed the trace of energy to head to that fruit.

The massive life magnetic field and the unimaginably tremendous vitality that Shi Yan had sensed came from this fruit. It was like the combination of the souls of thousands of Incipient God Realm experts to release such a marvelous life energy fluctuation.

However, it was just a fruit: a very special fruit.

Time flew fast.

When Shi Yan and Shang Ying Yue were heading to the wonderland inside the mountain, Cang Yun, Haig, and Audrey were scattered and waiting in different corners.

After an unknown time, Haig, Audrey, and Cang Yun had moved almost at the same time and quickly headed to that strange land inside the mountain.

Shadows started to emerge and gathered in the area of thick mist. The ancient tree in that wonderland was so big that its branches and leaves towered over everything else. Rainbow light circulated around the crystal-like branches. All together, they made people feel like they were in the best dreamy land.

When Haig, Audrey, and Cang Yun appeared in this area, they all looked at the same thing.

They were all looking at the fruit that looked like a whole planet.

They didn't care about the Guiding Fruits. Apparently, those fruits weren't their target.

"Genesis Fruit . . ."

Cang Yun, Haig, and Audrey muttered. Their eyes became hot and their faces were resolute as if they had to get that thing at any

cost.

Harson hid alone in the dark. He glumly watched them and said nothing like a ghost. No one knew what he had in his mind.

Shi Yan and Shang Ying Yue were still moving to this area.

The fruit they called the Genesis Fruit was taking the rainbow light inside the crystal branches to grow. Currently, it had many arches of rainbows above the surface. It looked like massive structures of this fruit were getting the last speck of material to be completed. And then, it would be time for the birth of a new continent.

"Oh?"

Haig and Audrey studied Cang Yun, their faces astounded.

Cang Yun smiled and said curtly, "You guys want the Genesis Fruit. I do too."

Audrey's face turned cold. "You are a member of the Heavenly Monster Tribe?"

Cang Yun smiled again. he nodded and bowed modestly, "I'm from the White Tiger branch."

Audrey was shocked. She became stern. When she looked at Cang Yun again, she became more cautious.

The Imperial Dark Tribe had fought the Heavenly Monster Tribe for so many years. Audrey knew the Heavenly Monster Tribe well. The White Tiger branch was the best fighter of the Heavenly Monster Tribe. They had made the Imperial Dark Tribe pay a bloody price that year. Audrey didn't dare to look down on this branch's strength.

"Still, someone hasn't come." Haig was calm and indifferent. "Where's the guy from the Immortal Demon Clan?"

Audrey and Cang Yun put on dark faces.

Chapter 1181: The World Tree

When Shi Yan got into the lake and Shang Ying Yue cultivated outside, it took a long time.

During this time, Cang Yun and Cecilia were the first warriors to enter the Holy Mountain. Haig and Audrey took their team and crossed a lot of barriers and deathtraps to collect many jades, crystals, and spirit herbs that were at Original Incipient Grade. Eventually, they came to the foot of the mountain.

Harson of the Charteris family had experienced the lowest tide of a human's life. He had to bear different kinds of mind torments. He collapsed, endured, harmed himself, and finally sobered.

No one knew what had happened to him after Shi Yan had left.

But he became more fearsome.

Cang Yun, Haig, Audrey, and Harson had gathered at the Holy Mountain from four different directions. They had collected many Original Incipient Grade materials along their way. And perhaps, they had created a connection with Desolate somehow...

What they had encountered, only they could know. Nobody else could ever understand.

They all walked to the Holy Mountain and entered the cave to reach the World Tree: the nucleus of the ancient continent.

In legends, a tree of earth and heaven grew in the middle of the universe. It was called the World Tree. It was the critical point of earth and heaven energy that connected currents of energy in the universe. The Essence Qi Ancient Tree in the body of the warriors was the miniature version of the World Tree when it was created using this model.

The World Tree was a perfect hub that gathered, connected earth and heaven energy, and communicated the eight poles of the universe.

The God power Tree in the creature's body had the essence and secret of the World Tree. It could conglomerate energy from earth and heaven. The veins in a warrior's body were the branches of the ancient tree in their abdomen. Their veins filtered, refined, and compressed the energy, creating the God power and Essence Qi. The God power and Essence Qi watered the God power Tree or the Essence Qi Ancient Tree and filled the branches with energy.

When each branch of the tree was full of pure energy, the warrior would break into another realm. Their tree would grow more.

Rumors said that if the World Tree broke or shattered, the energy of this universe would become chaotic. Disasters would occur to earth and heaven. The God power Tree in the warriors' bodies would break altogether...

However, creatures in this world didn't know much about the World Tree. Most of them had little knowledge about things in this cosmos. Only the Immortal Demon Clan, the God Clan, the Imperial Dark Tribe, and the Heavenly Monster Tribe had a better and clearer knowledge of the World Tree.

Only they knew that the World Tree was the nucleus of Desolate. Considering Desolate a unique living form, the roots of the World Tree pierced into the ground of Desolate while its top touched the sky. Its countless branches were the veins of Desolate and the World Tree was the God power Tree of Desolate.

After ten thousand years, the World Tree bore a Genesis Fruit. This kind of fruit was condensed by the nucleus of the World Tree. To Cang Yun, Haig, Audrey, and Shi Yan, the warriors that had fused with the Origin, the Genesis Fruit could be the nucleus of their co-soul...

If anyone of Cang Yun, Haig, Audrey, and Shi Yan could absorb the Genesis Fruit into their co-soul, the ancient continent that connected to them could be filled with energy rapidly. It could gather the remnant energy in outer space a hundred times faster!

The creatures of that ancient continent would be revived after being given the new, powerful competence!

In the River of Time in this vast universe, the God Clan, Immortal Demon Clan, Heavenly Monster Tribe, and Imperial Dark Tribe had taken turns to become powerful. In one era, only one of them could become the overlord. In fact, it had a close relationship with the Genesis Fruit!

The reason why the God Clan could subdue and destroy the Bloodthirsty Force ten thousand years ago was that the Chief of the God Clan who had also fused with the Origin of Ancient God Continent had taken the Genesis Fruit in Desolate. He had revived Ancient God Continent and boosted all the members of the God Clan!

At that time, the three ancient continents that were the cradles of the Heavenly Monster Tribe, the Imperial Dark Tribe, and the Immortal Demon Clan were like lamps running out of oil.

Without the external force to refill them once again, they could still recover, but it took a really long time. The Genesis Fruit could change all of these.

The core members of the four races and the elderly precursors all knew about the Genesis Fruit, which was born every ten thousand years in Desolate. This fruit could affect the position of the four races in the next ten thousand years in this universe!

They had a saying like this: Any race that could have the Genesis Fruit could rule the cosmos for ten thousand years!

It was really crucial!

Today, after ten thousand years, a new Genesis Fruit was born. The four ancient continents were now exhausted. They were all in need of this fruit to supply the vitality and the new boost for the entire race.

If Haig got the Genesis Fruit, the God Clan would still be the

overlords of this universe. Giving them ten thousand more years would allow them to seize the entire cosmos in their hands. They could even hunt the Heavenly Monster Tribe, Imperial Dark Tribe, and Immortal Demon Clan down to the last member!

If the Heavenly Monster Tribe, Imperial Dark Tribe, and Immortal Demon Clan wanted to rise again, they had to suppress the God Clan. To do that and become the next ruler of the universe, they had to take the Genesis Fruit!

Cang Yun, Haig, and Audrey gazed at the Genesis Fruit and accumulated energy to prepare for a battle to take the fruit.

Mia, Phelps, and eleven warriors of the God Clan stood by Haig and looked at Jiao Hai, Jiao Shan, Mo Fou, and Wu Feng coldly. Quietly, they had determined their opponents.

They had a bloody battle by the foot of the Holy Mountain. Both sides had to bear a significant loss and leave some corpses back there. The coming battle was crucial to the future of their entire clans. Everybody had to be cautious to gain the chance for their parties.

Cang Yun of the Heavenly Monster Tribe, Audrey of the Imperial Dark Tribe, and Haig of the God Clan was here. They were waiting for the moment for the Genesis Fruit to ripen. Still, there was one of the four races that hadn't arrived yet.

Audrey knew that Shi Yan had encountered something really bad. From Cecilia, Cang Yun understood that Shi Yan might have had some magical encounter. He had paid attention, but as the Genesis Fruit was almost ripe, he became restless.

As his Heavenly Monster identity was exposed, the relationship between him and Audrey shattered. When the battle happened, Audrey was going to make him her primary target. Cang Yun understood that when facing the Heavenly Monster Tribe, the God Clan and Imperial Dark Tribe were going to join hands despite their past resentment.

This had happened before.

Among the four great races, God Clan and Imperial Dark Tribe used to have a close relationship for a long time. When the Imperial Dark Tribe and the Heavenly Monster Tribe had a bloody war, God Clan would help the Imperial Dark Tribe to defeat the Heavenly Monster Tribe.

From that time, the Heavenly Monster Tribe had learned from experience. They discreetly created an alliance with the haughty Immortal Demon Clan. They had cooperated with the race that had never shaken hands with anyone else.

During the racial war, the Imperial Dark Tribe had depended on the God Clan's power and the God Clan had counted on them to attack the Immortal Demon Clan. They all had benefited from this alliance.

On the other hand, the Heavenly Monster Tribe and the Immortal Demon Clan, the other two of the four great races, one didn't know how to plot or plan a conspiracy while the other was too arrogant to join hands with anybody to resist their enemies. That was why they were often defeated. After so many years, the Heavenly Monster Tribe had finally recognized that they needed allies.

Before Cang Yun came here, he had talked to a precursor of the Immortal Demon Clan. He knew Shi Yan's existence. Right from the beginning, he had treated Shi Yan as his best ally.

However, right in the most critical time, his ally disappeared mysteriously. As he didn't know whether Shi Yan could make it or not, Cang Yun became restlessly worried.

"The Heavenly Monster Tribe should be eliminated first." Haig gave a faint smile and looked at Audrey. "Our two clans used to cooperate. We have a secret treaty. I thought you know about that, right?"

Audrey nodded, her cold eyes gazing at Cang Yun as she said, "I know the value of that treaty. The Heavenly Monster Tribe is always our clan's mortal enemy. I know what to do."

She pointed her spear at Cang Yun.

The Heavenly Monster Tribe and the Imperial Dark Tribe had a deep grudge. When she knew Cang Yun's real identity, she had made up her mind not to spare his life.

If it were Shi Yan instead of Cang Yun, it would be... much better. Audrey thought.

The Imperial Dark Tribe and the Immortal Demon Clan didn't have anything in relation. Although the Immortal Demon Clan was the arch-enemy of the God Clan and the Imperial Dark Tribe used to help the God Clan to deal with the Immortal Demon Clan, it was a very long time ago.

In this era, the God Clan was so strong. Although Haig was excellent, if she joined hands with Shi Yan, it wouldn't be a big burden. Anyway, ever since she knew that Shi Yan was from the Immortal Demon Clan, she thought of this idea.

It was too bad, Shi Yan didn't come...

Both Audrey and Cang Yun had to sigh because of this.

On the mountain where mist hovered above a wonderland grew a massive tree that had towered everything else. The Guiding Fruits hang in the tree branches started to ripen.

Haig and Audrey suddenly aimed at Cang Yun. They had established an agreement shortly. They wanted to kill Cang Yun first. This incident was beyond people's estimation.

"Didn't we want to destroy the God Clan?"

Cecilia walked to Sha Zhao, Jiao Hai, and Wu Feng. Seeing Audrey look at Cang Yun with her cold face, she frowned and hissed.

"Cang Yun isn't an ordinary individual. He's the mortal enemy of our Imperial Dark Tribe. I have to kill him first to ease my mind," said Audrey coldly. "I won't let you guys join this. Don't worry. Don't rush. After I destroy Cang Yun, I will do what I've promised you."

"Let's see the situation first," Haig turned around to order Mia and Phelps.

The members of the God Clan stepped back, waiting in silence with solemn faces.

Rattle! Rattle!

Some crispy noises arose when a bony figure appeared not far from Cang Yun.

"Harson!"

"Harson!"

Haig and Audrey hissed. The members of the God Clan and Cecilia's team also looked at the warrior who had just appeared with an odd face.

Even Cang Yun, Audrey, and Haig couldn't find where Harson had been hiding. In fact, after Harson had fought Shi Yan in the desert, he had gone missing. Mia, Phelps, and the warriors of the God Clan had tried to search for him. They got nothing.

They thought that Harson was dead.

However, right at the critical point of time, Harson reappeared strangely. The dangerous aura emitted from him was much denser than before!

"It's good that you came here in time. It seems that the Mighty Heaven wants to help our clan by giving us another ten thousand years of wealth and prosperity." Haig calmed down and smiled.

Although he didn't like Harson, he knew Harson was really strong. Seeing Harson at this moment, he felt relieved and happy.

He believed that with Harson here, he could take the Genesis Fruit, which would give the God Clan another ten thousand years of wealth!

He didn't see Harson's abnormality.

Chapter 1182: Crazy Harson!

Harson's sudden appearance had caught people's attention. Harson's motive would determine the trend of the coming battle.

The God warriors cheered up. Even Haig, Phelps, and Mia could ease their minds now. As they all knew how tremendous Harson was, they knew that Harson was strong enough to deal with Audrey or Cang Yun. With Harson's participation, the God Clan would definitely have the chance to harvest the Genesis Fruit, which would make them strong for the next ten thousand years.

However, Haig didn't see Harson's strange bearings...

After Harson appeared, he didn't look at Audrey or Cang Yun. His eyes were glued to Haig.

Harson's eyes became dark as if the white part of his eyes slowly turned black. Looking at him at this moment, everybody thought that they were watching something incredibly terrible.

"Harson!"

Mia called, her face tense and restless. "What's wrong with you?"

She was the first person to notice Harson's abnormality.

Many years ago in the deathtrap of the God Clan, Mia had seen this appearance of Harson: his eyes were completely dark and they had no sclera. Mia thought that Harson was dead and a Demogorgon had possessed him...

However, right after that moment, Harson had transformed from a wimpy kid to a bloodthirsty madman. He had killed everybody else except Mia. Harson could hardly recover later. But then, he had turned into a completely different person that Mia couldn't recognize.

After so many years, seeing Harson like that one more time, Mia felt her hair rising on the back of her head.

And only Mia could see Harson's abnormality.

Haig, Phelps, Audrey, and Cang Yun didn't see anything strange. They just frowned, looking at Harson and waiting for his next move.

"Watch Harson! Everybody be aware of him!" Mia shouted hoarsely all of a sudden.

Haig's pupils shrank.

Audrey and Cang Yun changed their faces in fear.

A terrifyingly evil energy surged like a rising tide. It grumbly burst out like an erupting volcano from Harson's body.

Rumble! Rumble!

Eighteen viscous blood light columns shot up to the air from his body. Each of them was as big as a towering tree that surrounded Harson.

A kind of energy that could distort the whole world diffused from Harson and affected the entire space inside the mountain.

"White Bone Blood Refining Ghost Grave!"

Haig, Mia, and the others couldn't help but shout. The group of the God Clan's warriors was scared and perplexed.

"Harson, what the heck are you doing?" Haig thundered as he was outraged. "I know you don't like me, but it's related to our entire clan. Even if you hate me more, just wait until we eliminate the opponents. We will put an end to our story. What are you going to do now?"

Attracting the geniuses of the significant star areas to the ancient continent so the God Clan could kill them at once was the plan that Haig had proposed. It was an important event to prove his leadership to the Elders of the God Clan. As long as his plan was successful, he could be sure about his Chief position of the God Clan in the near future.

For this purpose, Haig had been calmly planning everything. He could endure Harson's bad behaviors and he could even take a step back when he saw Harson in the ancient continent.

All was for his big goal.

However, as Harson was using the White Bone Blood Refining Ghost Grave at this moment, he was definitely out of his mind. This evil formation was going to collapse people's minds and make them kill each other.

Even the God warriors would kill each other because of this evil formation. Once it was activated, they couldn't stop.

Haig didn't know why Harson had to do that. Although Harson was insane and bloodthirsty, it was just to deal with others. He had never attacked warriors from the same clan.

However, today Harson looked utterly crazy. It seemed like he had lost his mind completely so he wasn't going to even spare his own people.

But the thing that made them more dumbstruck was that Harson didn't have any subordinate here with him and he still could use the White Bone Blood Refining Ghost Grave. Moreover, his power seemed to increase tremendously.

All the warriors of the God Clan became restlessly insecure.

They all knew how dangerous the evil formation of the Charteris family was. They knew that this family was the bloody lance of the God Clan who had destroyed the enemies of the God Clan everywhere. Today, Harson used his most dangerous evil formation to drag them to death. This thought had struck them out of their wits.

After Harson had emerged, he said nothing but directly used the White Bone Blood Refining Ghost Grave. Instantaneously, the tombstone appeared above his head and activated the evil formation.

Everybody felt their souls sinking deep into that bloody gravestone and no matter how hard they wiggled, they couldn't get out. Cang Yun, Haig, and Audrey weren't exceptions. Feeling the strange commotion of their soul altars, they couldn't hide their great fear.

It wasn't the first time that they were trapped in this evil formation.

Cang Yun had experienced it before. Audrey had also sunk in it when she neglected Shi Yan's advice and tried to get through the barrier. At that time, all of Harson's troopers were still alive and strong. However, the power of their formation at that time wasn't as strong as what he had now!

What did it mean?

It meant that after Harson had fought Shi Yan in the desert, his power had increased furthermore. He was incredibly strong!

Cang Yun and Audrey discolored in fright. They thought that this madman Harson was much tougher than Haig. His insanity and unpredictable movement were unidentified factors.

Harson sat cross-legged under the bloody stone grave. The towering blood columns stood by him, released viscous blood light, and created the blood sea where there was a lot of sinister energy that could twist minds, wear out people's wills, and erode their souls.

The other warriors began to lose their minds. Mo Fou and Wu Feng were panic-stricken. Gradually, they started to show their fangs.

Mia, Phelps and the warriors of the God Clan couldn't escape this trap. Shortly after, their eyes showed their madness. They started to attack the people standing next to them. They didn't recognize whether they were their clansmen or the best buddies.

Inside the formation, Cang Yun, Haig, and Audrey, the warriors

with the Origin, shouldn't have been affected. However, it was unknown why their soul altars, souls, and even God powers became restless while they were shrouded in the blood sea.

Although they were still sane, Harson's world had affected them. Their powers were restrained. They couldn't urge or use any ability.

Cang Yun, Haig, and Audrey discolored in fright when they recognized the situation.

The warriors who had fused with the Origin could swagger in this world as their powers Upanishads weren't often bound to natural principles. They had proven this in the ancient continent.

However, Harson's evil formation had affected them right now and retrained their abilities and energy. What was going on?

They all grimaced and tried to figure out how Harson did it.

"Desolate! It's the special magnetic field of Desolate! Oh Gosh, Harson has gotten the approval of Desolate!"

Cang Yun shouted. His clothes were torn and then turned into ashes when he transformed into a massive, majestic white tiger. His murderous, imposing aura diffused from his body. This tiger had the imperial mark of the Heavenly Monster Tribe with an astonishing dignity.

Cang Yun had transformed into his true form.

Cang Yun's words had made Audrey and Haig baffled before waking them up. Only Desolate's power could affect them. If Harson could do that, he must have received Desolate's approval or something magical. That was how he could use the evil formation to bind them.

Haig roared and turned into his Undying God Bod with fish-scale armor and spikes all over his body.

Different from Cang Yun's and Haig's transformation, Audrey's

soul altar spun and her graceful body faded out. Amazingly, she had become something magically unreal. She looked like a departed spirit or a reflection, which didn't seem tangible.

Making the God Body become nothingness was a strange but marvelous ability that only the purest Imperial Dark warriors could do. After their bodies had turned into oblivion, physical attacks couldn't touch them. Only soul attacks could affect them. And when speaking about soul attacks, the Imperial Dark Tribe didn't have a rival in this vast universe.

The body of nothingness was an exclusive power of the Imperial Dark Tribe. It was as strong as the Undying God Body, the Immortal Demon Body, and the true form of the Heavenly Monster Tribe.

After they realized that Harson was recognized by Desolate and that he had received something good from Desolate, Cang Yun, Haig, and Audrey had become stern. They all transformed to prepare their best to counter.

At the same time, Mia, Phelps, Mo Fou, Wu Feng, Jiao Shan, Jiao Hai, and the others were attacking each other unconsciously.

Their souls had fallen into the hands of the enemy.

While the other experts of different star areas were surrounding the World Tree, Harson interfered and sank them into madness.

Right now, Shang Ying Yue and Shi Yan were stilling dashing through the rock passage. Shi Yan had followed the magical life magnetic field to reach the World Tree. He wanted to know what was going on there.

The Ring Spirit of the Blood Vein Ring on his finger had sent him a simple advice: the World Tree bore the Genesis Fruit. Take it and absorb it into your co-soul.

However, the Ring Spirit didn't describe the World Tree or the Genesis Fruit. It just told him what to do and what his goal was. It

didn't tell him what benefits his goal could bring him.

Afterward, Shi Yan had tried to contact the Ring Spirit, but he got nothing in the end. He immediately noticed that it was in its critical time of fusing memories. It wasn't easy for the Ring Spirit to spare him a second and give him new instructions. He believed that the Ring Spirit wouldn't harm him so he had his new target.

Get the Genesis Fruit and fuse it with the co-soul!

He took Shang Ying Yue and moved wildly through the rock passages. While his soul felt that tremendous life energy fluctuation, the God power in his body surged like a flooding current.

Eventually, Shi Yan and Shang Ying Yue had almost reached the world inside the mountain where the World Tree grew.

He suddenly stopped and said sternly, "It doesn't feel right. You should stay here. Don't go with me."

"What? Why?" Shang Ying Yue frowned.

"White Bone Blood Refining Ghost Grave! It's Harson's White Bone Blood Refining Ghost Grave! It is much stronger than the time we'd encountered him!" Taking a deep breath, Shi Yan hissed, "Once you get there, your soul will collapse. You will become a wild beast that only knows how to kill until you die."

Shang Ying Yue's soft body shivered. She halted and remembered the situation that they had experienced. She felt a chill deep in her heart.

"You should be careful," she advised.

"Don't worry," Shi Yan darkened his face and entered the thick blood mist.

Chapter 1183: I'm Helping You...

A gory gravestone was floating in the middle of a viscous blood sea. Harson was sitting neatly under that gravestone.

Surrounding Harson were Haig, Audrey, and Cang Yun. However, they weren't in good condition. Although they had transformed, their auras and energy were disordered. Their spirit, soul, and Qi seemed to be bound and their souls were shivering continuously.

However, at least they were still sane and didn't fall into a slaughtering madness. They were still struggling to resist the evil energy invading their minds.

Phelps, Mia, Cecilia, Wu Feng, and the others had a worse situation. Because they didn't have the Origin, they had been dragged into insanity. Their eyes were garnet like they were starving beasts that saw fresh, warm meat. No one could control themselves anymore.

Seeing Cecilia, Shi Yan relaxed his tense nerves, but right after that, his face darkened.

It was the same White Bone Blood Refining Ghost Grave, but Shi Yan was affected. He was the only one that the White Bone Blood Refining Ghost Grave couldn't control.

Shi Yan had studied each of Xuan Shan's bones. He understood the evil formation and its working principles. At the same time, Shi Yan's Blood Soul Sea had the same effects as this formation. That was why the blood sea couldn't affect him.

He calmly walked to the center of the formation and approached Harson. "What do you want?"

"I'm helping you." Harson hadn't said a word since he had arrived in this area. He talked for the first time after he came here. His voice was low and pitiful like he was an evil spirit crying. Hearing

him, people felt so uncomfortable that they had goosebumps.

"Helping me?" Shi Yan was astounded.

"Right. I'm helping you eliminate your opponents. I will help you kill all of them. In Desolate, I will help you kill all the creatures present here. After we leave this place, I'll help you kill any race or clan and clean this entire world. You tell me. Am I helping you?" Harson chuckled evilly.

"I don't know what you're talking about," Shi Yan knitted his brows tightly.

"It seems like you haven't understood it. Because you're the heir of the Bloodthirsty's Master, you'll get to know what kind of responsibilities you need to shoulder later. Don't worry." Harson laughed evilly and said, "First, we should kill all the people here. Kill them all and leave no one. It's the responsibility you should take. I've helped you start it. You should end it now."

"End it?"

"Yes, kill all the people here."

"Including you?"

"If you want, you can do that. Of course, I'm not gonna let you do that easily."

Shi Yan quieted down.

Harson looked at him, his eyes showing many deep meanings. He didn't talk as if he was waiting for Shi Yan to consider.

After a long time, Shi Yan answered, "I don't know what you're talking about. I don't know what the successor of the Bloodthirsty's Master has to shoulder. But I can tell you one thing: I'm Shi Yan. I'm not controlled by anyone or bound to anything. I will do what I want to do. If I don't want to do something, I don't care about anybody's responsibility!"

Then, he walked pass Harson, approaching Cecilia who looked

disheveled and gathered his God power to grab her wrist.

The starlight chain tied Cecilia's graceful body and brought her out of the White Bone Blood Refining Ghost Grave. It brought her to Shang Ying Yue standing outside. Shang Ying Yue immediately took out the Icy Soul Cold Crystal and used its icy power to control wild Cecilia. Shang Ying Yue had to do that to prevent Cecilia from harming her.

While Cecilia was frozen, her extreme metal state ceased. She slowly recovered.

"Oh, you know how to take care of the glamor. Anyway, you're a little conservative, though." Harson grinned and shook his head, "It seems like I can't count on you. Your mind isn't strong enough. You can't complete the mission. I'll help you."

"Harson, you're a member of the God Clan. If you dare to act rashly, our clan will never spare your life!" Haig said coldly.

"Ha ha ha, I'm now not a God warrior anymore," Harson laughed and pounded his chest, crying. "Today, my body has the essence of Xuan Shan's bones. Xuan Shan was an Immortal Demon. What am I now?"

"Cross-breed!" Haig shouted.

Harson laughed crazily. The floating gory gravestone above his head created a world of blood and shrouded Haig directly.

"Haig, you aren't eligible to be the future leader of the God Clan. You're too calm and sane. There are many things that keep you behind when you want to do something. You mind your superior's opinions and you want admiration from your subordinates. You have too many restraints. Your heart is tied. At most, you can only keep the God Clan at its current power. You will never bring it a new future." Harson suddenly became so cold and he pressed each of his words. "Only I can bring the God Clan a new future! As long as I kill you, your co-soul with the Origin of the Ancient God

Continent will choose its new master. I'll become its new master!"

"You think you can kill me?"

Looking at the bloody tombstone approach him, Haig's eyes turned bright white like a burning white flame.

A brilliant white flame burst out from his entire body. The scale armor covering him turned silver-white, which was very frightening. Billions of light beams shot out from his glabella. His Light power Upanishad urged the power of Five Elements in earth and heaven to create the Light Divine Boat of the God Clan. Instantly, all the things binding him were cut off.

Haig could move freely again. Bright white flames burst out from his body as he was gathering earth and heaven energy. The energy fluctuating from him was beyond the power of anyone present here.

"I'm the leader of our clan designated by the Elders from the Book of Gods. From the day I was born, my life has resonated with Ancient God Continent. I'm the one who Ancient God Continent has chosen." Haig emerged above the blood sea and looked down at Harson and the others. He continued arrogantly, "Even when you were in your peak condition, the Charteris family didn't dare to let you fight with me. Do you know why? Because they know you will never defeat me. Although the Burning Purgatory power Upanishad of your family can boost your power by burning the soul and body, it's too bad... you still need a lot more to deal with me."

Thump! Thump! Thump! Thump!

Haig's heart beat frantically.

Every time his heart beat, Ancient God Continent from far away also twitched. Every expert of the God Clan in Ancient God Continent could recognize the vibes from the ground like a heartbeat. The Earth cracked in some area as if an earthquake was

about to happen.

However, the experts of the God Clan staying in the shrines built in Ancient God Continent who had their names written in the Book of Gods all had calm faces when they felt the tremors.

They even smiled happily.

If he could draw the consonance of the ancient continent, Haig's compatibility with the heaven flame Origin had become almost perfect. They knew how powerful Haig could be in this state.

Those extreme, famous experts of this universe knew how formidable Haig was currently. They understood that even if they came to fight Haig themselves, they could reluctantly subdue him but not kill him.

It was because Haig had fused with the ancient continent completely and because the ancient continent was never going to be destroyed.

In the God Clan's history, not many people could reach this step in the River of Time. If he could fuse and be one with the ancient continent, he could become immortal. He would never die and he could exist together with the ancient continent forever.

They praised Haig as a rare prodigy. Compared to another warrior who had fused with Ancient God Continent, his compatibility with the flaming Origin was much more thorough.

That warrior had taken the Genesis Fruit and brought ten thousand years of prosperity to the God Clan. He had helped Go Clan subdue the Bloodthirsty Force. However, although that warrior had high realm and profound power, he had to die because he couldn't fuse completely with the ancient continent.

Haig could surpass that warrior to achieve the goal he couldn't even he had had to spend his entire life. If Haig could wholly fuse with the ancient continent, he would never die.

It meant that the God Clan would have eternal prosperity.

Every time Haig's heart beat, the energy in his God Body became a bit stronger. It seemed like this process would never end.

Shi Yan didn't know where Haig's power came from.

But Audrey and Cang Yun knew it. Their faces grimaced as they were scared.

Drawing the energy of the ancient continent and transferring it to his body to counter the enemy were the signs of a perfect state of fusion with the flaming Origin. It was a miracle!

If Haig got the Genesis Fruit, which would help the Ancient God Continent gather the energy from outer space rapidly, he could continuously draw the energy of the ancient continent to become the most intimidating existence in this vast universe. Even the Incipient God Realm experts wouldn't be able to resist him. No one would be able to resist him.

Everybody knew that Haig was excellent and that he was the pride of the God Clan. However, they knew how formidable he was only when they fought him.

Compared to him, many geniuses in the vast universe were like the light of a firefly under the radiant sunlight that wasn't worth mentioning.

Shi Yan, Cang Yun, and Audrey wore stern faces. They were astonished by Haig's performance. If Shi Yan hadn't reached Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm and his soul, spirit, and Qi wasn't in its best condition, he would be subdued by Haig's intimidation.

Cang Yun and Audrey were affected...

"I know your fusion has reached this phase. If it were a thousand years ago or later, I'm sure I wouldn't be your opponent," Harson said distantly, "Unfortunately, it's the time when the ancient continent is at its weakest. Although your fusion is deep enough, how much energy could you borrow from the continent?"

Harson suddenly burst out laughing wildly. "Especially since it's

Desolate! It's not anywhere else in this cosmos! In this place, I can kill you!"

His God Body dried up quickly and made him look like a terribly evil man who had a body made of only bones. He didn't have a bit of flesh but a skin bag covering his skeleton. This image of Harson was so fearsome.

The skeleton of his body sounded of "crack." His ten fingers, which were like dry claws, made three magical hand seals. A gory claw emerged from under the blood sea, which had strange, evil drawings on the joints and knuckles. It brought together the power and the will that could destroy any creature. The claw was like a flower that swallowed Haig and his Light Divine Boat. It dragged him into a deep place of the blood sea.

Chapter 1184: The Cold Eye of a Bystander

Haig and his Light Divine Boat were dragged to a deep place in the blood sea. They disappeared altogether with the bone claw.

Harson was still floating under the bloody tombstone. His eyes were jet black and were strangely and coldly scanning people in the blood sea.

Cang Yun and Audrey were trying their best to resist the evil energy that was invading their souls. Cang Yun had transformed into the White Tiger and was lying on the ground. His massive body quivered as if he was gathering energy.

Audrey's slim body had turned into nothing. Like a departed spirit, she was floating and bobbing in the blood sea, which looked so unreal.

In this form, no physical attack could touch Audrey. The abilities of power Upanishad couldn't hurt her either. Unfortunately, this blood sea had the power to erode the soul. It could seep into her soul altar and attack her soul.

Anyway, Audrey had mastered the soul class power Upanishad. As she was congregating her power to resist the evil mind invasion, her eyes were always clear and bright. She didn't have any puzzled gleam.

She seemed to finally stabilize her condition.

In the blood sea, Phelps, Mia, and the other warriors of the God Clan were killing each other. Mo Fou, Wu Feng, Jiao Shan, and Sha Zhao had lost their minds completely. They couldn't tell if the others were their enemies or friends, so they just kept fighting until death.

People started to die in this strange land where the thick mist was hovering. Every time a warrior died, Shi Yan was startled as he gathered the Essence Qi from them.

Shi Yan looked at Harson, his face stern. He had quietly mobilized his power and was ready to counter any new incident.

Harson's black eyes still gazed at a place deep in the blood sea. He didn't pay attention to Audrey or Cang Yun. His primary target was Haig.

Haig had sunk into the blood sea, but the vitality from him was still robust!

Apparently, Haig was still alive and he was still gathering more power.

"Thump! Thump! Thump!"

Everybody could hear his heart beating vigorously!

After every beat, Haig could draw energy from the ancient continent to strengthen himself. If he had enough time to prepare, no one could estimate the level of his God power.

"You should kill them."

Harson rose his hand and pointed at Cang Yun and Audrey. Then, all of a sudden, he jumped into the blood sea. The gory tombstone had come with him. A tremendous blood wave abruptly rose. Energy columns in blood hue shot out and dyed this world crimson.

The ivory white divine light connecting the powers of Five Element emerged in a pentagonal formation and raised above the blood sea.

Haig stood in the center of the magical pentagonal formation like a heartless God. Flames danced in his eyes. A dark gold orb appeared in front of his glabella, which had a lot of lines and drawings. Vaguely, that orb was a miniature figure of Ancient God Continent that bounced accordingly to Haig's beating heart.

When the globe appeared in front of his glabella, Haig wasn't bound or affected by the blood sea anymore. His body had the

energy that would never cease.

"Your Burning Purgatory makes you pay with your flesh and soul to increase your power quickly. However, since I've fused with the ancestral star, I don't need to sacrifice anything to absorb the energy from the ancestral star to refill my body. You... what do you have to fight me?"

The divine pentagonal formation under Haig's body suddenly became dazzling as it released halos of radiant divine light. They moved and swirled around Haig continually.

Energy shot out fast under Haig's feet and created the power to seal this world. After his energy had diffused, the blood sea diluted and faded away. Slowly, everything had calmed down. Beams of Blood Qi have washed away and were destroying the evil mind-invading energy.

Shortly after, the entire blood sea had vanished besides the bloody gravestone above Harson's head.

Haig stood on the pentagonal divine formation as if he had put himself in a dreamy star domain where he was the God of the universe. Each move of his carried immense power of the ancient continent, which would last forever.

"Sky Cage!"

Haig closed his arms as if he had caught something in his palm and pressed it.

Everybody could see that when Haig closed his arms, the bloody gravestone above Harson's head was pressed smaller. It looked like a stone tablet that was contorted by the giant hand of an angel. Bones of Harson's skeletal body cracked as if they were about to shatter.

The dark red bones tore his skin and jutted out of his body under the pressure. Harson looked pitifully horrendous. He didn't look like either a human or a demon.

"Now you know why the Elders of our clan chose me instead of you?" Haig's face was cold and indifferent. He used a nonchalant voice to continue, "I am gifted. I am the chosen one by the ancestral star. Facing me, you are encountering the progress of an entire race. It's just in vain. You will never succeed."

"Boom! Boom! Boom!"

While talking, Haig pressed his hands together. Harson's bones broke entirely. His body deformed as if there were two mountains crushing him.

The bloody gravestone directly turned into a cluster of blood gas that exploded and then stormed into Harson's skeleton.

The warriors who were fighting slowly resumed their sanity. Some of them had terrible wounds that were deep to the bone. Some of them were now cold corpses or dried ones without a drop of water as if they have been weathered for years.

"What's going on?"

"Argh! That mad dog Harson again!"

"He didn't spare his own kind! Too heartless! He doesn't have a bit of humanity in his heart anymore!"

Warriors of different races cursed him in fright and rage. Mia, the one who had a close relationship with Harson, was also outraged. She glared at him maliciously.

Harson had stirred up a common hostility!

Cang Yun and Audrey had gotten rid of the restraint of the evil mind-invading power first. They exchanged looks and formed a strange tacit understanding.

ROAR!

Cang Yun roared like a wild tiger getting out of the cage. His murderous aura was released as sharp as a lance. Light flashed in his tiger eyes like torches. His iron-like body rolled and he attacked

Harson.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

Cang Yun dragged Harson's shattered body and tore him into pieces.

Audrey floated with her hollow body. The image of her soul altar emerged in her glabella, which was a dozen times smaller than the real one. Her soul altar looked like an exquisite crystal pendant where billions of soul threads gushed out and created a net that covered Harson's head. The soul threads squeezed and pulled, trying to crush Harson's soul altar.

Cang Yun and Audrey were mortal enemies. These two races had fought for so many years. They had never been calmly talking to each other.

However, because of Harson the madman, the two archenemies had joined hands to kill Harson and erase this unidentified factor.

Mia watched everything coldly. She saw Haig explode Harson's bones and Cang Yun tearing his body apart. Eventually, Audrey had used her soul ability to wind his soul altar. Mia stood calmly right from the beginning.

She found that Harson today wasn't the Harson she had known. Although Harson was wild and brutal, he would only treat his enemies that way. He would never attack his own kind. She knew that Harson still made mistakes. He hadn't grown up yet.

But currently, Harson wasn't a member of the God Clan anymore in her eyes. He was a maniac who didn't spare his fellows. He had become a brutal butcher that even Mia wanted to destroy.

She didn't agree with Harson. Looking at Haig, Audrey, and Cang Yun attack him, she didn't say a word to tell Haig to show mercy or ask the other warriors to help.

She thought that Harson shouldn't continue to live.

Everybody quieted down.

Shi Yan did the same.

However, his silence was different from the others. While he was staying quiet, his soul altar was ready. He had always paid attention to Harson's vital signs.

He thought that Harson wouldn't make something that big without a decent ending. The reason why he stood indifferently was that Harson hadn't died yet!

Shi Yan didn't know why he could feel a bigger danger from Harson. He knew that Harson had merged with Xuan Shan's will and bones. Besides the Death power Upanishad, he had mastered the Corpse Qi of Frederick. He could use the Corpse Qi to urge his God power and resurrect himself from death!

Shi Yan had seen it once!

He thought that Harson would resurrect once again because his soul altar hadn't been destroyed yet and although his bones were ground, they weren't burned to ashes.

Harson's blood hadn't vanished even one drop. His terrifying energy was still moving in his blood. Quietly, he was using the Corpse Qi to create another miracle...

But it wasn't what had scared Shi Yan.

Shi Yan could vaguely feel that this Holy Mountain, this World Tree inside the mountain, and even this ancient continent... had somehow favored Harson and used a method that only Harson could feel to transfer energy into his body.

Just like when Shi Yan's acupuncture points were gathering Essence Qi of the dead, which no one could recognize, Desolate was caring about Harson with its special treatment.

Haig didn't know it. Cang Yun and Audrey couldn't sense or guess. As the experts of the big star area kept silent with a cold

face, they all thought that Harson was dead upon looking at him.

"Audrey, we should eliminate the one from the Heavenly Monster Tribe," Haig reminded her all of a sudden.

"Good then," Audrey gently nodded. Her eyes now gazed at Cang Yun.

Cang Yun wasn't panicked. He guffawed and transformed back to his fat, human body. He appeared by Shi Yan, turning to him and squinting his small eyes. "You choose one between Haig and Audrey."

Haig didn't change his countenance.

Audrey darkened her face, talking coldly and darkly, "Shi Yan, this is a matter between the Imperial Dark Tribe and the Heavenly Monster Tribe. I hope you stay away from this."

"I'm curious," Shi Yan frowned, "If I stay aside, will you join Haig to kill Cang Yun?"

Audrey nodded.

"Then what?" Shi Yan sounded surprised. "Then you and I will join hands to kill Haig. And then we will have a brutal battle to take that Genesis Fruit?"

Audrey quieted down.

She had thought like that.

"Do you think it's practical?" Shi Yan felt funny. "Do you think Haig is that dumb to let me join hands with you and kill him? You think... that things would develop as you thought?"

"I know it isn't practical. You, Cang Yun, Haig and I... we're all here for the Genesis Fruit. Not all of us can get the fruit. Only one can do it. No one could say what would happen or how to arrange this."

Shi Yan suddenly jolted. He looked at the bones of Harson and sensed quietly. He immediately had a chill in his heart.

Chapter 1185: Replace the World!

Harson had turned into a pulp of broken bones and smashed flesh. However, something was changing subtly in that bloody mess.

If Shi Yan hadn't cultivated Death and Life power Upanishad and if he hadn't reached Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, he wouldn't have been able to see that tiny but magical change.

It seemed like a celestial hand was carefully and dedicatedly snatching the roles of Nature to help Harson modify and build up each of his fiber muscles. It was making him even more perfect!

Unbelievable!

The soul threads that had nailed Harson's soul altar were still pulling. However, they were bewitched by an unknown force. Thus, Audrey didn't recognize anything strange.

The net woven by the soul threads to squeeze off Harson's soul altar had become ineffective.

Somewhere in the Untold World, an energy had contacted Harson and helped him urge another power in his skeleton, the Corpse Qi, to deceive Audrey, Cang Yun, and Haig. It had given Harson a chance to resurrect!

Cang Yun, Haig, and Audrey thought that Harson was dead.

The other members of the God Clan and the outstanding warriors of the other star areas would never have thought that Harson was having a marvelous transformation.

In this area, only Shi Yan had cultivated Death and Life power Upanishad, which gave him a better sense of life magnetic field and life energy fluctuation. He could vaguely capture this tiny change...

He had two options now...

He could tell Cang Yun, Haig, and Audrey about this. He believed that they would forcefully kill Harson and utterly kill him.

Shi Yan was sure that even though the mysterious power had favored Harson, Harson wasn't going to be able to survive when Cang Yun, Haig, and Audrey attacked him at the same time.

He had another option: He could choose to protect Harson and give him time to finish his transformation and resurrect.

Shi Yan kept silent as he was absorbed in his thoughts as he was weighing pros and cons. He had to study Harson's resurrection case carefully to find the tendency that benefited him the most.

Harson wasn't a true member of the God Clan anymore. Shi Yan could tell that when he tried to kill Haig and Mia. At the same time, Harson seemed to not want to be on Shi Yan's side. He had something he had to fulfill and insist. Shi Yan didn't know from where he had this insistence.

Shi Yan didn't know whether Harson's insistence could be a threat to his future or not... but right now, Haig was too powerful. He wasn't so sure he could defeat this guy.

Shi Yan had chosen his option.

"If your Imperial Dark Tribe can join hands with the God Clan, ... I can cooperate with Cang Yun. The God Clan is the mortal enemy of my Immortal Demon Clan. When you joined him, you've become my enemy too." Shi Yan sighed and said to Audrey reluctantly. "Although I don't want it, I have to say that we're no longer each other's allies."

He nodded to Cang Yun and said, "I'm going to deal with Haig."

Cang Yun smiled happily.

Shi Yan turned around and looked at Wu Feng, Wu Bai, Jiao Shan, Jiao Hai, Sha Zhao, and Mo Fou. "You guys can choose to be with me and help resist Mia, Phelps, and the God warriors. I can focus only on Haig then. Of course, you guys can choose to stay on

Audrey's side."

"I'll follow you."

Wu Feng, Wu Bai, Jiao Shan, Jiao Hai, and Sha Zhao had always followed him, so they showed their attitude immediately.

After Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia had escaped the previous battle, of course, they wouldn't choose Audrey. They planned to follow Shi Yan always.

Fuller and the other warriors who had been with Audrey all the time hesitated for a while before saying sorry to Audrey. "We're sorry. We won't be friends with the God Clan. You've broken your promise when you joined Haig."

Audrey had a glum gleam in her eyes.

She finally recognized that while she didn't pay attention, Shi Yan had gained respect and admiration from other warriors. It turned out that Shi Yan had replaced her leadership in their minds.

"I can kill Harson. It's easier to kill you, you know." Haig mocked and shook his head disdainfully. "Being an Immortal Demon, you should try to live your life like a stray dog. You shouldn't be greedy for the Genesis Fruit. You aren't really practical, are you?"

Haig was still standing in the center of the divine pentagonal formation. The orb of the Ancient God Continent sparkled in front of his forehead while the flames were dancing in his eyes.

His heart didn't beat vigorously anymore, but it didn't mean that his energy was decreasing. Simply, he had gathered enough God power. He was now at his peak condition!

Crack! Crack! Crack!

Clear cracking sounds echoed from Shi Yan's bones. He had transformed into the Immortal Demon Body in just a blink of an eye. The blood Qi in his body surged massively. Each drop of his

Immortal Demon Blood was like a burning, erupting volcano that gave him the formidable power.

The acupuncture points of his entire body became like a big river or a deathtrap with torrential negative energy. Instantly, his body shriveled and his eyes became crimson. While his God power was rocketing, the starlight above his head twinkled and shone on his head. He looked like he was holding the entire starry sky on his head.

"Dazzling Light Bright World!"

Haig hissed, his eyes cold and indifferent. He didn't have any glimpse of human emotions. His sane condition frightened people.

The Light Divine Boat shot out billions of light beams. However, they weren't straight lines. They were meandering ones like a halo that grouped with each other to create thousands of light formations above his head. They were triangular, rectangular, pentagonal, hexagonal, and even octagonal formations with the power of Five Elements. They could perform magical abilities thoroughly.

Haig had used his Light power Upanishad to chain the powers of Five Elements. His Ethereal Extent could perform everything that this world has. Just like the Creator, Haig could destroy everything with a single thought in his mind.

This was the supernatural power that even the Incipient God Realm experts couldn't do.

Haig had adjusted the divine formations to mobilize many mountains and lakes here. Blocks of cracked soils, trees of the forest, and pieces of shattered land made a downpour and covered every single inch of space around Shi Yan.

Shi Yan's blood-red eyes became ferocious. As he knew Space power Upanishad, he recognized that Haig had confined the space around him. Haig's magical world had invaded Shi Yan's room. Shi

Yan couldn't use his Space power Upanishad because the area he was now in wasn't familiar land anymore.

It was the world that Haig had created by his divine light and the Five Elements power Upanishad. In this world, Haig was the sole God.

Unless he had smashed this world, he would be confined in every aspect when he fought Haig. He couldn't use his best abilities of each power Upanishad. Haig could know every single move of his even before he carried it out. Haig could kill him easily.

In this world, Haig was the God that could do everything. He could pour his energy endless into this world to do whatever he wanted.

Haig was using his own world to replace the real world. Even Incipient God Realm experts couldn't perform this intimidating power. Haig was worth being the future leader of the God Clan. Although he was at Ethereal God Realm, he was already formidable!

No wonder why he could defeat Harson.

Shi Yan finally took a real look at Haig's intimidation. He knew that Haig would be the most terrifying opponent of his life. If he couldn't defeat Haig, he would never ease his mind for the rest of his life.

"Space confinement! Use an unreal world to replace the real world!"

When Haig used his power Upanishad, it was like he was using the abilities of the eternal world. He could control the power of the universe and hold this entire space in his hands.

The other warriors could see Shi Yan and Haig staying in a fantasy world. They could see the two of them clearly, but they couldn't feel any energy impact. However, from every move of Shi Yan and Haig in that fantasy world, they knew that the two were

engaging in a fight.

When Mia's team saw Haig confining Shi Yan in his world, they were baffled. However, they woke up immediately and surged their God power to spin the soul altar and release the Ethereal Extent. Their battle with Wu Feng's team began.

"We shouldn't stay idle," Cang Yun faced the sky and roared. He turned into his White Tiger form, which was as big as a mountain. His energy was imposing and tyrannical as if he could destroy the world with only one touch.

Audrey snorted and floated up. The Dark God Imperial Throne emerged and connected to the fearsome abyss of the Underworld. She had summoned many ghosts and demons, the special creatures of the Underworld, which could move agilely as she wished like they were her real fingers.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue wore sad faces when they saw Shi Yan being confined in Haig's world. They wanted to help him, but they felt so helpless.

They knew Haig's intimidation. They knew that Haig was the strongest known warrior of this current generation. He was even stronger than his precursors. His power was formidable yet mysterious. Although they were impressed with Shi Yan's power, they couldn't help but feel heavy-hearted when Shi Yan was facing Haig directly.

Although Harson was very frightening recently and he had scared them out of their wit, Harson... was defeated. Haig had destroyed him.

As Shi Yan had fought Harson in the desert, in the two women's points of view, Harson would have the same capacity as Shi Yan because he had survived that battle. They deeply understood the meaning of this event.

The two were so worried about Shi Yan.

In Haig's world, there was light, earth and heaven with Five Elements. The Five Elements were the basis of the world; they could produce everything. Haig's world was independent like a real world.

Using Light power to chain the five powers Upanishads of Metal, Wood, Water, Fire, and Earth, Haig had proven his innate endowment. No one could compare to him. At the same time, his learning capacity was unique. No wonder why the Ancient God Continent favored him. He was the designated successor and the continent had proactively fused its Origin with his soul.

It was the recognition of earth and heaven for Haig.

In Haig's world, Shi Yan was bound. He couldn't use the power of earth and heaven, so he was left to use only the energy of his body to resist. Galaxies appeared above the thick blood sea. Shi Yan bobbed in the blood sea and spun his soul altar, using the negative energy to create an evil tornado to wreak havoc in this fantasy world.

His negative energy surged torrentially and filled with so many negative emotions. The deadly, brutal, desperate, fearful, destructive, resentful and bloodthirsty emotions from his tornado were much more formidable than what Harson had performed!

Moreover, as Shi Yan had used the Essence Qi of the dead he had just taken in through his acupuncture points directly without refining, the evil power of this attack became more terrifying.

When this kind of evil tornado attacked Haig's world, the power of negative moods had made this world look like doomsday. The void cracked and revealed space slits. It seemed like this world was about to crumble.

Haig had to gather the energy of the ancient continent and condense his God power in the body to pour into his world to maintain the balance. He had to mend it continuously.

Apparently, he had underestimated Shi Yan's power.

While he and Shi Yan were fighting, the entire scene was disorderly and chaotic. Cang Yun and Audrey were battling while Mia, Phelps, and the God warriors were fiercely fighting against Wu Feng and Sha Zhao's team.

No one paid attention to Harson.

The pulp of crushed flesh and broken bones had connected to each other and formed... a body.

It seemed like a hand in the Untold World was sewing Harson's body altogether and helping him refine his body dedicatedly.

Chapter 1186: Blood Sword Breaking Divine Boat

In the immense, misty world where the World Tree grew, almost all of the most outstanding prodigies of the current generation of the entire cosmos were fighting to the death with each other. They fought for the Genesis Fruit and for the next ten thousand years of prosperity for their clan.

This battle was very important to all of them. The winner would become King and the losers would have to kneel down in front of the victor for the next ten thousand years.

In the fantasy world created by Haig's power Upanishad, Shi Yan stood neatly in his blood sea. The blood sea rippled its viscous waves. Upon layers upon layers, it supported him floating above the red surface.

Brilliant outer space streamers crossed each other above his head like starlight chains drawing fantastic images in the sky. They were complex and mysterious, hiding the essence of the everlasting galaxy.

The blood mist hovered above the galaxy and the tornado of negative energy was wreaking havoc in this area.

Desperate, resentment, fearful, bloodthirsty and other negative feelings were examples of the endless evilness in people's minds. They could nibble their hearts and dirty their souls. They could send people to a cold, deadly silent prison, making them eternally consigned to damnation.

It was the Death Prison triggered by the Death power.

In Haig's world, the sea was crying and seething. The ground cracked and shattered. The mountains collapsed while the trees and forest were ground into powder. This world was gradually crumbling.

Shi Yan had used his power Upanishad to destroy this world and send it back to the starting point.

However, it wasn't that everything would turn out as he wanted.

When the fantasy world corrupted, the pure energy of Five Elements flooded in from the horizon, the void, and even the abyss. The cycle of energy was generated and running continuously. It forcefully re-created the order of earth and heaven. It made the earth flat, the mountain stable, and the shattered things intact one more time. Someone had seized the role of the Creature and gave everything a new life.

Shi Yan had used his power to destroy while Haig used his power to mend things. With this world as the battlefield and their power Upanishad the basis, they had tried their best to fight each other!

Shi Yan was destined to stay in a disadvantaged condition in this battle.

His enemy had controlled this battlefield and taken all the advantages and better conditions. Haig was the God of this world.

Every time things changed and every time Shi Yan congregated energy, it consumed the God power he had condensed in his God power Ancient Tree, the negative energy he had collected, and the combustion of his Immortal Demon Blood...

He couldn't collect a beam of earth and heaven energy here...

It was different to Haig.

In this world, Haig was the real God. He could gather earth and heaven energy as much as he wanted. He could continuously draw energy from the ancient continent to refill himself.

Even though Haig had to consume his energy, it was much easier for him compared to Shi Yan. If it was a battle of attrition, there was no doubt that Shi Yan would lose.

He couldn't risk his life with Haig.

While the mountains, lakes, and even the ground were changing, a shining divine boat tore the sky just like the Messenger of Light coming to clean the dark. Loud explosions reverberated.

Boom! Boom!

The Light Divine Boat had hundreds of thousands of magical formations carved on the body, which could join and combine into one entity. They carried the power of Five Elements and the in-depth meanings of earth and heaven.

The Divine Boat tore the sky to come and brought with it the threat to crush creatures, mountains, and everything. It attacked Shi Yan directly.

Galaxies created by Shi Yan's power were struck into pieces. The Light Divine Boat had cut the starlight chains, which prevented them to reconnect.

Even the crimson water of the blood sea started to evaporate when the holy light of the Light Divine Boat shone on it. The water sizzled and vaporized.

This Light Divine Boat represented Haig. It was the foundation of this World of Light. Its role was like the World Tree to Desolate. It was the root or the heart.

It wasn't wrong to say that the Light Divine Boat was this world itself. If the Divine Boat were damaged, this world would be cracked accordingly.

Shi Yan squinted. His blood red eyes had two drops of blood vibrating and it looked really frightening.

They were the garnet Immortal Demon Blood, which looked as beautiful as precious gemstones. Having them in his eyes, Shi Yan had mobilized and used all the Immortal Demon Blood in his body!

Haig appeared deep in the sky like the projection of a massive God observing the world underneath. He said indifferently, "Kill!"

Swish!

The Light Divine Boat was like a venomous snake sticking its tongue out. The pointy tip of the boat opened and revealed the wooden white teeth that were biting Shi Yan.

"Ah, not that easy."

Shi Yan smiled ferociously. His red finger stroked the Blood Vein Ring as gently as if he was touching his lover's skin. A strange emotion flashed in his eyes.

Bang!

The sound of a sharp weapon coming out of its sheath arose. A blood light pierced the sky and forcefully stabbed the Light Divine Boat.

The eyes on the broadsword opened. The incredibly evil energy flooded like the rising tide. The blood sword seemed to be able to break the horizon and this entire fantasy world. It stabbed the Light Divine Boat.

Swoosh!

The Light Divine Boat exploded. Beams of blood light bloomed and moved around like sharp blades cutting this world.

The world that Haig had created shattered in just a moment. The Light Divine Boat cracked. The sky was pierced through. Shi Yan returned to the real world in just a blink of an eye.

The giant gory broadsword was like a sharp, bloodthirsty saber of a Demogorgon, quietly floating above Shi Yan's head. A beam of blood light from the sword tip seemed to connect to this Holy Mountain.

Glug! Glug!

Blood started to ooze out of the majestic Holy Mountain, which the blood sword drank. Then, the destructive energy fluctuated from the blood sword and frightened everybody.

It was the will of eliminating all creatures!

This will came from the blood sword, the Holy Mountain, and from the deep area of this ancient continent.

The blood sword and the Holy Mountain had fused into one. It had triggered some kind of terrifying energy inside the mountain and made it bleed. The blood sword drank the blood from the mountain, which supplied the sword with surging, abundant energy at an unimaginable speed.

It seemed to be different from the way Haig drew energy from Ancient God Continent.

Everybody inside the mountain felt their hair rising. It seemed like the Holy Mountain had just woken up. They felt as horrible as if they were inside the stomach of an ancient beast.

This feeling was so real. It was so real that they even found the wall of the mountain twitching like real flesh...

Someone couldn't help but shout. They felt their soul get stuck, so they had to try their best to get rid of this place. No one wanted to stay here anymore.

Some of them appeared to have collapsed.

"What happened?"

Cecilia found this immense world covered with blood and even the viscous blood streaks were found in between the clouds. The smell was so nauseating.

She had joined hands with Shang Ying Yue to fight Mia. After their times of ascetic cultivation, their God power was more condensed and abundant even though their realm didn't advance.

When the two of them joined hands, they could subdue Mia and have time to watch around.

When they saw Shi Yan getting rid of Haig's world, they also saw him reappear not far from them with the blood sword floating

above his head.

Looking at the blood sword, Shang Ying Yue showed her fear and respect. However, Cecilia discolored. "He... He's the successor of the Bloodthirsty's Master!"

Cecilia was aghast.

Aside from her, when Mia, Phelps, Wu Feng, Mo Fou, and Sha Zhao saw the mark on the blood sword, they were dumbstruck and their faces were astounded.

Especially Audrey.

Her bright eyes showed her shock. Even her soul altar trembled when the big wave of astonishment swarmed over her mind.

No matter how hard she had imagined, she would have never known that Shi Yan's inheritance came from the Bloodthirsty's Master!

As soon as that man arrived, he had shadowed the four great races. He had made the experts of the four races follow him. That man... was the pole of the universe!

Every member of the four great races knew about an unidentified madman who suppressed the four races to rule this vast cosmos and created a new order.

His existence was mysterious and profound as if he was the law!

Haig showed his fear for the first time. He was afraid of this blood sword. Right when it emerged, this blood sword had pierced through his Light Divine Boat and tore the world he had created with great efforts.

How strong was that?!

He gazed at the sword and thought about a new plan. He intended to use the power he had hidden all the time.

Standing beneath the blood sword, Shi Yan checked Harson's situation. He discolored.

Harson had disappeared!

To be exact, he didn't see the mess of Harson's flesh and bones. Not even a single drop of blood.

He seemed to have disappeared into thin air.

Since everybody saw him turn his head to check Harson, they also turned to see Harson...

Everybody jolted up in fear and bewilderment. They looked around and tried to find something.

They were looking for Harson's remains.

They scanned every corner around and saw no trace of Harson. They all felt their hair rise.

His corpse... changed?

People were startled.

Only Shi Yan knew that it was actually the corpse that change. Harson had used Corpse Qi with an unknown force to resurrect.

But where did he go?

Shi Yan felt insecure when Harson didn't reappear. In some aspect, this young man was much tougher than Haig. He was crazier and more unreasonable. With the tremendous power support, he had become deadly dangerous.

Bang!

The blood sword sent him a strange sound when it suddenly shook and gave Shi Yan a peculiar feeling.

His blood sword somehow matched with the energy of the Holy Mountain. It looked like the sword had just answered the mountain. Shi Yan suddenly understood it. He lifted his head to look at the World Tree immersing in the thick clouds and then the Guiding Fruits. Eventually, his eyes stopped at the Genesis Fruit that had the shape of the ancient continent!

The Genesis Fruit now had a hazy blue halo... Eh, that halo... Someone touched it!

It was Harson!

Harson had seized the chance when people were fighting to climb on the World Tree and weaved through the Guiding Fruits. He was standing on the flaming crystal branches to wait for the Genesis Fruit to ripen.

The Genesis Fruit quickly drew the essence power of the World Tree. The crystal five-colored streamers moved like beautiful rivers through the branches towards the fruit. All of a sudden, the Genesis Fruit shook hard. It seemed like the fruit had just ripened and it was about to fall off the branch. Harson was waiting right under the fruit!

"Harson!"

"Harson!"

"Damn it!"

"He's still alive!"

Everybody boiled up. Their countenances changed in fear. Now they all glared at Harson with rage.

Cang Yun, Haig, and Audrey changed their target in just a blink. They moved like three meteors shooting towards Harson.

They didn't retain anything but they burst out their best and fiercest attack!

The three of them had tried their best to snatch the Genesis Fruit. With the Genesis Fruit in their hands, they could rule the universe for the next ten thousand years.

Chapter 1187: Sly Change!

Seeing Harson in this world once again had dragged people into their worst nightmares. Each of them was so restlessly insecure.

Especially Cang Yun, Haig, and Audrey!

They came here for the Genesis Fruit and for ten thousand years of prosperity for their clan. For this purpose, they could do anything.

However, Harson was standing right under the Genesis Fruit. He just needed to reach his hand out to take the fruit!

They would never show mercy!

The ice blue halos swirled around the Genesis Fruit. It was like the ancient continent was born again with the power of the Origin!

Shi Yan's co-soul sent him extreme vibes. He looked at the Genesis Fruit and couldn't control his excitement.

The vitality and energy seething in the Genesis Fruit could compare to the total energy of dozens of Incipient God Realm experts! It was incredible!

Nothing in this world, whether it was a matter or a crystal, could reach this level of tremendous energy!

If they got the Genesis Fruit, they would have the entire world and they could bring their clan back to the glory. It was common knowledge spread out among the four great races.

Sizzle!

A soft starlight like a ribbon shot to Harson brought the power of Space Upanishad.

Shi Yan was the last one who moved, but he appeared right next to Harson before Cang Yun, Audrey or Haig. Talking about speed, who could beat the ones who cultivate Space power Upanishad?

The Genesis Fruit now rippled with ice blue halos right in front of Harson. That immense halo had the power to calm down the mind. Shi Yan's hot-tempered state was comforted. He became placid.

Standing under the blue halo, Harson didn't look insane anymore. His eyes became clear as if he had returned to his teenage times before Xuan Shan had affected his soul. He looked pure and innocent as if he didn't have a dirty thought.

This was who Harson really was.

He looked up at the Genesis Fruit and mumbled something faithfully Shi Yan couldn't hear.

The Genesis Fruit swayed and released more ripples of ice blue light. It tangled as if it was about to fall off the branch.

"Stop him!"

Cang Yun, Audrey, and Haig shouted ear-piercingly and asked Shi Yan to stop or even kill Harson.

Everybody could see that the Genesis Fruit was about to fall and Harson was going to take it instantly.

Shi Yan remembered what the Ring Spirit had told him. He knew that the Genesis Fruit was crucial. He didn't hesitate or mind Harson's strange state. He extended one hand crossing over Harson's shoulder to grab the Genesis Fruit directly.

Strangely, Harson still remained in his faithful posture as he kneeled on the tree branch and lowered his head, murmuring something. He didn't stop Shi Yan's move.

His eyes were clear like a lake. It seemed like the ice blue halo of the Genesis Fruit had cleaned the evilness in his soul and brought him back to his youth.

But Shi Yan still had an extremely insecure feeling!

Harson looked like he was not harmful to humans and animals.

He looked so innocent without a dark thought...

However, Shi Yan could see that while the young man was murmuring, his body was shriveling! It was the Burning Purgatory power Upanishad! He was urging his power discreetly!

Boom!

A pale light shot out of Harson's head. It wound around Shi Yan's arm like a vine. It was the power that Harson had urged by burning his soul and body. It had both the Death energy and the Corpse Qi.

Shi Yan's arm eroded!

Chunks of meat fell off his bones. Shortly after, Shi Yan's arm had only bare bones and even his bones were being eroded.

That pale light moved around his arm and reached for his body.

Shi Yan felt his hair rising! Everything happened within a blink of an eye. It was so fast that he didn't react timely. When the flesh of his arm fell off, he finally reacted. He immediately urged the co-soul and used the heaven flame to resist that pale light.

His co-soul emerged from the soul altar. Harson's clear eyes brightened.

Harson who had kept his head low right from the beginning lifted his head and showed his bright but cold smile. His eyes were now jet black and it showed his brutal, bloodthirsty desire. He looked savage to the utmost.

This was the real Harson!

Everything he had just seen was just his disguise.

Shi Yan got it.

Harson looked at Shi Yan's co-soul and licked his lips greedily, "I want your Origin. You don't have faith. Your mind isn't strong and persistent enough. I should inherit the legacy of the Bloodthirsty's Master!"

Only the one who had fused with the Origin could take the Genesis Fruit. Harson had waited here to hunt the Origin. He wanted to use the Origin to be eligible to seize the Genesis Fruit. Shi Yan had fallen into his trap.

Cang Yun, Haig, and Audrey shouted ear-piercingly when the sounds of cracking bones echoed in their chest. Their moving bodies halted in the middle of the air. It seemed like an invisible hand had held them there.

Rattle! Rattle!

The World Tree slightly rattled. Its thick branches moved. The massive shade of the tree was like a demon that pressured people's souls.

Cang Yun, Haig, and Audrey hurried to stop Harson so they had urged their energy to the max level. Divine light flashed continuously in their bodies but they couldn't get rid of the constraint. They couldn't come close to Harson and Shi Yan even an inch.

From under the tree, Cecilia, Shang Ying Yue, and Mia had stopped fighting. They were looking at Audrey, Cang Yun, and Haig being held in the void and at Harson and Shi Yan up there with bewildered faces.

"It's Desolate!"

Shang Ying Yue shouted. She couldn't control her mood as she said, "It has chosen only Shi Yan and Harson! Only Harson and Shi Yan have gained its approval, so only they are eligible to fuse with the Genesis Fruit!"

Hearing her, everybody else understood it immediately.

In the desert, the Icy Soul Cold Crystal had pierced through Shi Yan's body as he had proactively taken all the damage to save Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue, which also helped him get Desolate's approval.

Right after that, they found brilliant crystals scattered here and there including the Icy Soul Cold Crystal, the Heart Water Crystal, and even the Essence Blood Crystal, the precious treasure that could recover the body of the Immortal Demon warriors quickly.

Apparently, Desolate had arranged everything when it chose Shi Yan.

Harson was its other choice.

After fighting Shi Yan in the desert, Harson knew the truth of his body. He knew that he wasn't a genuine God warrior anymore. With Xuan Shan's bones in his body and the stubborn, wild will of the Demon warrior in his soul, Harson wasn't himself anymore.

He had collapsed and wandered like a body without the soul in the desert. He cried and screamed, losing himself. He had fallen into bedevilment.

No one knew what Harson had experienced, but it was true that he had the approval of Desolate. Desolate took care of him. That was how he could reappear here with mightier powers.

It was obvious that Harson had just become a pulp of flesh and broken bones. If he could stand here once again, it wasn't his real power. Everyone knew that Desolate had chosen Harson too. Shi Yan and Harson would compete for the Genesis Fruit. They were the favored warriors. They had the chance to change the future.

Cang Yun, Haig, and Audrey were confined. They couldn't wiggle. It was Desolate's work. This place was the ancient continent and Desolate's kingdom. It could control every one of them.

Only Desolate could tie Cang Yun, Haig, and Audrey and make them the audience who couldn't join the competition.

Thus, Desolate had thrown them into the trash. It had confirmed that they weren't eligible to keep the Genesis Fruit. They were destined to fall into tragedy.

No one had continued fighting. Jiao Shan, Sha Zhao, Mia, and Cecilia had stopped. They wore fearful faces and their vision passed Haig, Audrey, and Cang Yun before fixing on Harson and Shi Yan.

Haig, Audrey, and Cang Yun were the favorite children of God. They were the hope of their clan and the most dazzling generation of this universe. All three of them had fused with the Origin.

However, these three were the losers in this competition for the Genesis Fruit. They didn't even have the right to join the game.

Quite the contrary, Shi Yan, a non-famous warrior, together with Harson the madman, had gained the approval. It was actually out of any warrior's expectation.

"Be careful!"

Shang Ying Yue suddenly shouted.

Harson was smiling darkly. Black light shot out of his eyes. He wanted to use his soul altar to tie down Shi Yan's co-soul. He wanted to refine the soul that Shi Yan had sealed and carved his soul to make himself the new master of Grace Mainland's Origin.

Only the warriors of the four great races could fuse with the Origin of the ancient continent. Harson could satisfy this condition. Today... he was even more qualified than anybody else. He had the bones of the Immortal Demon warrior in his God body. He was a true crossbreed.

The pale light of the new power that Harson had released was the combination of Death energy and Corpse Qi. The flaming Origin could stop it for now. Shi Yan's arm didn't have any bit of flesh except for the bone frame. He looked really scary. At the same time, Harson was trying to attack his co-soul to seize the Origin.

Unexpectedly, Harson had gained the upper hand.

"You should know your situation. Give me the co-soul and the Blood Vein Ring. If I become the successor of the Bloodthirsty's

Master, your host soul won't be destroyed. You can choose to follow me too." Harson looked at Shi Yan and smiled. "I'm also one of the candidates who the Blood Vein Ring had chosen. You've taken all the things that belonged to me. Without you, everything would have belonged to me! Only I can receive the inheritance of the Bloodthirsty's Master! You don't have faith. You don't have the fixation on destroying this world. You're not suitable!"

Harson laughed wildly. His soul altar released an evil force that sucked Shi Yan's co-soul like a magnet. His co-soul was shaken hard. Gradually, it left Shi Yan's soul altar.

The Genesis Fruit was ripe. It didn't fall off as some strange force was supporting it and making it float. It was waiting for one of the two, Shi Yan or Harson, to take it and have the power to change the structure of the world.

"I had never thought that you would be my rival."

Shi Yan had almost lost one arm. However, he didn't look hurt at all. His red eyes were like dripping blood. Looking at his co-soul floating away, he was strangely placid. He didn't take action but closed his eyes.

The soul altar emerged from his head. His body quieted down.

Harson also closed his eyes. His soul altar that was connected to his brain flew out just like Shi Yan's.

Shi Yan's co-soul floated between the two soul altars, watching the last competition.

Chapter 1188: The Collision of the Two Worlds!

Haig, Cang Yun, and Audrey lifted their head to watch while their God Bodies were confined. They couldn't move.

Under them were Cecilia, Phelps, Mia, the God warriors, and the experts of the big star areas. They all lifted their heads to watch the sky and saw the two eligible young men.

Shi Yan and Harson!

No one had thought that Desolate would accept these two. They thought that Haig and Audrey had better chances. However, the reality was too far away from their guess.

However, they suddenly could accept this fact...

As Shi Yan was a member of the Immortal Demon Clan with the Origin and the inheritance of the Bloodthirsty Force, such a character was eligible to get the Genesis Fruit.

Harson was the best warrior of his generation in the Charteris family of the God clan. His performance was extraordinary in Desolate. Somehow, he had surpassed Haig. Harson's characteristics included bloodthirstiness, brutality, heartlessness, and he was inhumane.

Such a character was no doubt the most extreme. No one could ignore him.

Thinking carefully, everyone knew that it was logical when Desolate recognized him.

Today, under the Genesis Fruit, the two of them were releasing their soul altars and fighting the last battle to seize the Genesis Fruit.

Everybody waited silently. They had stopped fighting each other to focus and see who would be the one that would change the

structure of this cosmos: Shi Yan or Harson.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

Shi Yan's bright Ethereal Extent arose behind his back. The dazzling suns, moons, and stars created the vast galaxies, which looked so real.

A crystal soul altar hovered in this galaxy-like Ethereal Extent as the core of its soul.

Sizzle! Sizzle!

A burning world like a purgatory emerged above Harson's head. It was his Ethereal Extent.

Harson's Ethereal Extent was filled with thick blood. The vivid red sky and the shattered, smoking mountains. It looked like burning hell.

His world had the energy of Death and Corpse Qi with endless burning intent.

Between the two Ethereal Extents was a co-soul with surging energy. It was shaking as it was struggling with two different auras.

The strange thing was that Harson's Ethereal Extent also had a strong suction force to the co-soul.

It was unbelievable to other people!

Even Shi Yan felt that it was strange. His co-soul had his Soul Seal and it was developed from the heaven flames. Usually, the co-soul listened to him.

In fact, it happened that way. He could control the co-soul as he pleased.

But it was different now.

Harson's appearance seemed to have given his co-soul another option. Harson somehow had a subtle connection with the co-soul.

He pondered and something popped up in his mind: Desolate!

Desolate was controlling everything discreetly. His co-soul had fused with the Origin of Grace Mainland, which had been detached from Desolate. So technically, it was part of Desolate! Desolate had the capacity to control his co-soul!

This place was especially the territory of Desolate. If Desolate chose Harson to fight Shi Yan, it would create a fair environment by cutting off his advantages.

As soon as he considered this possibility, he had an idea that he wanted to try to test his assumption.

He used the Devouring power Upanishad to urge the black hole and aimed at Harson's soul altar.

It was the power Upanishad of the Bloodthirsty's Master!

He had tested it before. No soul altar could resist the black hole. As long as it flew out of the body, the black hole could absorb it. This power Upanishad had brought him the marvelous benefit that he couldn't describe.

Right now, he was going to use it to deal with Harson!

A wild suction force came from the black hole and aimed at Harson.

Strangely, Harson wasn't affected. Both of his Ethereal Extent and soul altar were fine. They didn't even move.

It seemed like an invisible force had distorted his power Upanishad and made the Devouring power ineffective!

Shi Yan discolored in fear.

Then, he got it. He understood that Desolate had controlled everything.

The World Tree was just a part of Desolate. In this world, Desolate was the law and the principles of powers Upanishads! Desolate was the God and the way of virtue and justice!

Desolate was the fountainhead of the entire universe!

This conception made Shi Yan drop his jaw in awe. Who else besides Nature itself could deactivate the Bloodthirsty's Master's Devouring power Upanishad?

"You're right. Desolate is Nature. It's the way of virtue and justice. Desolate holds the fountainhead of powers Upanishads."

The Ring Spirit's voice arose timely in his soul. "All powers Upanishads, the truth, and essence of this world come from this planet. It's the greatest out of everything in nature. It's the law. And the most terrifying thing is that Desolate has consciousness and intelligence. It has the will of life that's different from anything else. No one knows what it thinks."

"Why does the blood sword seem to be similar to the holy mountain? And why could it make the mountain bleed?" Shi Yan hurried to ask.

"This Holy Mountain shields the World Tree. It was the body of the precursor from the Immortal Demon Clan. The sword in your hand was made of his spine. Of course, they have some connection," answered the Ring Spirit.

"Oh boy!" Shi Yan couldn't help but utter.

He knew that one hundred thousand years ago, the first generation of experts of the four ancient continents had come to this place and tried to refine Desolate and change the rule of Nature. It allowed themselves to create the way of virtue and justice.

Of course, the four of them had buried their bodies here.

The Incipient Extent of the God Clan's precursor had turned into a miniature version of the world that Shi Yan had taken and carved into his Ethereal Extent, which had boosted him to Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm.

The remains of the Holy Beast White Tiger of the Heavenly

Monster Tribe had turned into a mountain range, which Cang Yun had found and taken its essence.

The soul of the Imperial Dark Tribe's precursor had turned into an icy blue halo that covered Desolate and prevented any warrior from intruding. It had become Desolate's protection.

The God Body of the Immortal Demon Clan's precursor was refined. It became the Holy Mountain in the center, which was the armor of the World Tree.

The blood sword in his hand was surprisingly the spine of that Immortal Demon precursor. No wonder why it looked similar to the Holy Mountain and could even trigger the mountain.

If the blood sword was the spine of that precursor... who was the Bloodthirsty's Master? How could he control this sword?

When this thought emerged, Shi Yan's soul altar started to tremble. This thought had stirred up his mind to the point where he had almost lost connection with his Ethereal Extent.

It was because Harson's soul altar, which was controlling the Burning Purgatory, had approached him.

The terrifying power of things from Hell came from Harson's Ethereal Extent that forcefully intruded Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent and brought an apocalypse to his Ethereal Extent. Harson wanted to destroy Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent.

It was Harson's attack.

"Stay focused and deal with Harson first!" The Ring Spirit thundered in his head.

Shi Yan temporarily put aside his chaotic thoughts. He pulled himself together and became placid. Seeing Harson's earth-destroying purgatory arrive, Shi Yan immediately urged his soul altar to change the world he had controlled.

In his universe, the suns and moons released dazzling lights that

shined on the coming purgatory world.

Harson's world had a crimson, burning sky and the bleeding ground had many wounds. The mountains shattered while the sea was seething crazily. Countless meteors ignited and fell onto the ground inside Harson's world, attempting to destroy everything.

The meteors were hissing through the sky and then it plowed the ground and created many deeps ditches like the teeth of a comb. Lava surged from those ditches and tried to melt down everything.

It was doomsday.

Harson had caused this deadly catastrophe and sent it into Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent. He wanted to ruin Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent and turn it into ashes.

Harson stayed in his purgatory world, his soul energy fluctuation more terrifying. His soul altar also emitted tremendous energy fluctuations.

Harson had mastered his Burning Purgatory power Upanishad and this world was being burned down like doomsday, which was matched with his power Upanishad. It could provide him with endless energy!

Quite the contrary, as Shi Yan's galaxy with countless stars, got attacked by meteors, shattering mountains, and seas in Harson's world, he felt exhausted as if he couldn't endure it for a long time.

This was a battle between the soul altars where the Ethereal Extents wore each other out and used a world to destroy the other.

It was much more deadly and dangerous than using the body to fight!

From the ground, the other warriors could see the two Ethereal Extents like two projections in the sky. Watching the collisions happening above their heads, they held their breath and wore panic-stricken countenances.

This battle was so terrifying that it got beyond their imagination. Harson and Shi Yan's Ethereal Extents were colliding and attacking each other, giving them the scene of an apocalypse. They all thought that they would be obliterated.

"If Harson wins, his Ethereal Extent with the power of the doomsday will devour all of us," said Shang Ying Yue, her head lowered.

Everybody was shocked. The warriors became aghast and anxious. They quietly urged their power.

The fantasy worlds of mountains, seas, deserts, and forests emerged above their heads. They were ready for the oncoming battle.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

Shortly after, the suns and moons in Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent spun and moved into a magical formation. It looked like some divine formation.

Using the suns, moons, and stars as the basis and the Star power Upanishad as principles, the formation that Shi Yan created could shake the entire world!

Shi Yan's entire Ethereal Extent was changing. The suns, moons, and stars were moving into different marvelous patterns with the everlasting Star power.

"When the earth and heaven aren't extinguished and the stars are everlasting, I will never be taken down!"

A mutter echoed in Shi Yan's soul altar like an angel's statement that showed the assured faith that could shake the whole world.

Chapter 1189: The Burning Karma Flame

When earth and heaven and the stars aren't extinguished, I will never extinguish!

Shi Yan's voice was low-pitched at first. After he said these words, the echo reverberated unceasingly. The echo expanded and it was grumbling like thunderclaps that cracked the sky, reaching every corner of his world of the galaxy.

His words were like the hand of the Creator from the Mighty Heaven blooming in his magnificent galaxy.

The shattered world was repaired. The mountains and lakes reappeared. The sea calmed down. The ancient trees and floras were revived. Wherever his voice passed, his world had quieted down rapidly.

In his world with the galaxy, the suns and moons moved and carried out the will of earth and heaven, echoing his voice and giving it endless power.

It was the magical secret technique that snatched the right of the Creator. This world was his Ethereal Extent. He could do anything he pleased.

In this area, he could create the sky and earth, making water or fire. He could make the earthquake with his thoughts easily. When his soul altar spins, the Death and Life, Space, and Star power Upanishad took turns to appear and perform their best abilities.

The doomsday-like purgatory of Harson's Ethereal Extent halted. It was confined and even the apocalypse it brought was frozen.

"Impossible! How could it be?!"

Haig screamed. He had lost his placid visage and his eyes were filled with shock.

Mia, Phelps, and the God warriors were dumbstruck as if they

were watching something unbelievable. They dropped their jaws in awe.

Audrey, Cang Yun, and the others gawked as if they couldn't believe what they saw with their eyes.

They all looked at the new changes in Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent. The suns, moons, and stars in his Ethereal Extent were moving in some marvelous trajectories. They had generated countless mysterious and fantasy images. The other warriors could see the life cycle of the sun, moon, and star from birth to death. They could even see existing principles of other things in this world...

The sequences of images were projecting the cradle and development of creatures in the vast universe. They looked lively and incredibly surreal.

It was the world created by the Death and Life, Space, and Star power Upanishads. They had developed the entire life cycle of life from the beginning to the end.

What made Haig and the God warriors stunned was the change of the suns, moons, and stars. This change had the same effect with a lost secret technique of the God Clan's Light power Upanishad!

Even Haig, the genius using Light power Upanishad, couldn't decode this mysterious supernatural power. He couldn't get the essence of it. In principle, that supernatural power had been lost in the river of history. It shouldn't appear in this mortal world. However, it seemed like Shi Yan could use this power currently.

It was a big humiliation to Haig and his God clansmen!

How could Shi Yan use the essence power that Haig, the top warrior of the new generation of the God Clan, couldn't learn? How could they swallow this insult?

Most of the warriors couldn't stay calm. They felt surprised and their eyes were panic-stricken and misty.

Only one of them had sobered quickly. He acted as if he had

understood the reason. It was Cang Yun. From the remains of his Holy Ancestor, he seemed to know the secret of that ancient time. He knew the precursor of the God Clan who had buried his body here, his Incipient Extent becoming part of Desolate forever.

He could tell that Shi Yan had encountered the mysteries of that precursor's Incipient Extent. That precursor was the expert of the first generation of warriors that Ancient God Continent had given birth to. His soul had the essence of Light power Upanishad.

He got Desolate's approval indeed!

Cang Yun was stunned.

"It turns out that it's the Light Creator secret technique of our clan!"

Harson's dark and heavy voice sounded as if it came from somewhere far away. His soul moved on the soul altar above the Sea of Consciousness. His Sea of Consciousness looked like a thick, electric mesh-net that was connected to his Ethereal Extent, which was showing the doomsday!

Due to the change of the suns, moons, and stars, the wave of destroying Purgatory from Harson halted as it was invading Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent.

The attack of his apocalypse couldn't attack Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent more. Harson's soul was like it had just felt a lightning attack. It smoked and another power of evilness was generated in Harson's world.

Boom!

Harson's Ethereal Extent was being burned!

A fierce, unknown Karma Flame was burning and expanding at an incredible speed. This kind of karma flame could burn space, world, planets, and even the sea. Harson's Ethereal Extent was burned. Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent, which was being invaded also burned.

Shi Yan's soul began to weaken fast.

His soul was tamed with the flame. As his Ethereal Extent burned, his soul and soul altar were both affected. He couldn't endure this kind of powerfully destructive blaze.

This kind of flame had the power to destroy the world with evilness that nothing could extinguish.

No one knew when Harson got this flame, but they all panicked from seeing it.

Haig wasn't an exception. As his compatibility with the flaming Origin was beyond everyone else here, he discolored in fright after a slight sense. "This flame... has the aura of Desolate. It's the flame that Harson got from Desolate. It's also a heaven flame, the heaven flame of Desolate's Origin.

Only the ancient continent could give birth to the heaven flames of the Origin. As Desolate was the key ancient continent, it definitely could have heaven flames.

Harson got its heaven flame! Countless years had passed and only he had this glory. He got the heaven flame from Desolate. From some aspect, he could be deemed as having the Origin of Desolate. This was unbelievable!

Harson's Ethereal Extent was burning. The flame that could burn everything down was expanding. It reached Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent of galaxies.

Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent was brilliant like a real galaxy with suns, moons, and stars with mountains, lakes, and floras. However, it was burning by Harson's Karma Flame now. From Harson's burning Ethereal Extent, the flame was expanding.

And Shi Yan's soul altar was trembling hard. His host soul was a lamp in front of this strong wind. It flickered as if it was going to be extinguished in any minute. His situation was so critical.

The Ethereal Extent and the soul altar were the roots of a

warrior. They were much more important than the God Body. Once they burned down, the Seal and vestige of a warrior would be cleaned from this world. He would have no hope in resurrecting. If his body was destroyed, he could find another way to continue living. If the soul or the Ethereal Extent were destroyed, there was no way to be revived.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were watching Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent burning from the ground. As they didn't know what to do, they felt so restless and anxious.

All of a sudden, they soared up into the sky.

Right at that moment, two lights descended from the sky like meteors that hit them. Blood splashed from Shang Ying Yue's and Cecilia's bodies. They had no color in their faces. Their soul altars were weakened to the worst.

They fell on the ground like feathers. They looked so helter-skelter with blood on their bodies. It was... a punishment.

They surrounded Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue. They faced Mia, Phelps, and the other warriors of the God Clan. They were afraid that those experts would seize the chance and kill them.

"Hey?"

"Are you okay?"

Sha Zhao and Jiao Shan hurried to ask.

Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia had gotten hit once, but they seemed to lose all their power. They looked so feeble that they couldn't even talk.

Some of them wanted to participate in the battle up there, but seeing their situation, they felt so chilled inside. They immediately abandoned that thought. Looking at the sky, they were filled with fear and respect.

"Their conditions aren't good!" Wu Feng stormed over and said

with a dark face. "Take every pellet we have to give them. We must keep their God Bodies safe. As long as their God Bodies are filled with Blood Qi, they will have enough energy to remain their souls!"

After hesitating for a while, they then took out spirit herbs and medicines that they found in the ancient continent for several years to feed Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue.

The spirit herbs and medicine that they had preserved until now were all sacred products to refill the God power or Blood Qi. Their therapeutic efficacy was really amazing. After Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue were fed with pellets, some colors on their faces finally resumed and their wounds were secure.

Shi Yan's world was being burned down. His soul altar was spinning restlessly. His host soul was draining. He could even see Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia get struck and fall as they were trying to help him. They looked like they were dying.

He should be outraged.

However, he knew that rage couldn't do anything. He had to be calm to overturn this situation.

Shi Yan chose to press down his anger and to subside his negative moods. He tried to restrain his thoughts and find a way to break out of this situation...

The abilities of Death and Life, Star, and Space powers Upanishad emerged in his head. He wanted to search for a method to break this situation. As his soul altar was shaken and his Ethereal Extent was burned, his powers Upanishads were about to cease. He was going to lose control soon.

A cold air emerged in his head...

His mind flickered and his soul quietly drew something from his Ethereal Extent.

A pitch black bead was drawn out of a corner in the Ethereal Extent. It was the Poison-dipped Cold Bead and the soul's

crystallization of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. It was the extraordinarily poisonous and icy object. It could gather the toxins and only the heaven flames could refine it!

A plan quickly formed in his head.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

The cold and poisonous power of the Poison-dipped Cold Bead was urged. Shortly after, his Ethereal Extent had a new change. It felt like the real Departed Spirit Jellyfish was floating there and releasing the cold energy.

The Ethereal Extent's section that was being burned recovered after the icy power and the poison had entered. The icy and poisonous powers diffused in Shi Yan's Ethereal Extent.

However, the flames of the Origin were the nemesis of the Departed Jellyfish and its Poison-dipped Cold Bead. Harson's Karma Flame burst out, dissolving the poison and the cold energy from the bead.

However, Shi Yan had seized the chance when the energy of the Poison-dipped Cold Bead was dissolved to save his Ethereal Extent, his host soul, and the soul altar from the burning flame. He had a little bit of time to do something else.

Chapter 1190: The World Purifying Light!

In the world as bright as a galaxy, the suns, moons, and stars changed again. Billions of light beams from the suns, moons, and stars shot out and congregated into one column!

Billions of light beams from the suns, moons, and stars had fused into one column that was as big as an arm. That light column seemed to bring unlimited divine power. It was so dazzling that no one dared to observe it directly. No one even dared to use the Soul Consciousness to sense. This light column was the essence of the sunlight, moonlight, and starlight. It was some kind of utmost power in this world.

It was the World Purifying Light that could purify the dirty world and destroy the soul!

This World Purifying Light was the absolute power of the Star power Upanishad, which was carved in the soul of the precursor from the God Clan. It wasn't something that Shi Yan could suddenly figure out by himself.

The World Purifying Light shone on Harson's soul altar...

Swoosh!

His soul altar turned into ashes in just a blink of an eye. Harson's Seal of Life had turned into nothing. The burning Karma Flame disappeared shortly after.

It felt like a nightmare.

Shi Yan woke up.

The Ethereal Extent returned to his head. When Shi Yan's soul altar came back to its position, Shi Yan felt no vital signs from Harson.

Boom! Boom!

Harson's bones cracked and exploded before he sank into the

bottomless abyss. He disappeared shortly after.

There was no aura of Harson in this world anymore. There were no life energy fluctuations. The vestige of his life in this universe seemed to all be erased. It was... utter death.

Shi Yan checked his body and found that the Poison-dipped Cold Bead had been burned into ashes at that moment too. It wasn't in his Sea of Consciousness anymore. The last part of the Departed Spirit Jellyfish in this world no longer existed.

Rumble! Rumble!

The ancient continent transmitted terrifying tremors. The ground started to bob as an earthquake was coming. The mountains of the ancient continent collapsed inwardly and fell into an endless space of nothingness.

The Holy Mountain where they were standing was also shaking. The World Tree shrank and returned into the deep place in the earth core of the ancient continent. The Guiding Fruits fell off the tree and scattered near Mia, Phelps, Mo Fou, and the others.

The World Tree grew in the center of the Holy Mountain. After it had sunk into the core of the ancient continent, the Holy Mountain stood still.

The World Tree seemed to be the skeleton of the mountain. After it had disappeared, the mountain was like a body without a heart standing still in the middle of the ancient continent.

Haig, Cang Yun, and Audrey were freed. They looked at the sky above their heads.

Shi Yan had followed the World Tree and entered the core of the ancient continent. The Genesis Fruit disappeared altogether with him.

Many Guiding Fruits were floating by them. They were the keys to enter Desolate in the next ten thousand years. Haig and Audrey grimaced. They stood silently and watched the crystal branches of

the World Tree enter the earth. They could feel some energy from earth and heaven affecting them.

Cang Yun wasn't dispirited. Quite the contrary, he looked really calm and happy as if he had finally lifted up the heavy stone that was pressing on his chest.

Apparently, Shi Yan got the Genesis Fruit. Cang Yun thought that it was really good and it was his real purpose when he visited this ancient continent. His purpose of the trip to the ancient continent was to see Shi Yan taking the Genesis Fruit. No one could guess what he was thinking.

Cang Yun felt so good. He landed on the ground and glanced at Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue who was slowly recovering. Cang Yun took out a tree which looked like a miniature version of the World Tree. This tree looked fresh and green as if it was made of green jade. The life energy moved abundantly inside the tree and that astounded people.

"The Reincarnation Life Force Tree!"

Jiao Shan, Jiao Hai, and Sha Zhao screamed in surprised. They looked struck.

Cecilia and Cang Yun were so weak. They were astounded as they looked at that tree.

The Reincarnation Life Force Tree was a rare Origin Incipient Grade treasure. It could convert every kind of energy into life energy. It could change the God power or the cold energy of the Icy Soul Cold Crystal into vitality. It could resurrect people. There was a saying that unless someone had been turned into blood, he could use the Reincarnation Life Force Tree to recover!

It was a strange treasure that they only heard from legends. It was a priceless life-secure treasure, indeed.

Cang Yun's hand was like a knife that halved the tree. He handed the two pieces of the tree to Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue. He smiled,

"With this piece of the God tree, you guys will recover and you will be even stronger than before. Get well soon!"

Looking at the two pieces of the jade-like tree, Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia were overwhelmed by his unexpected favor. They couldn't speak.

Jiao Shan, Jiao Hai, Sha Zhao, and the others were bewildered. They didn't know why Shang Ying Yue had given Shang Ying Yue and Cecilia such a marvel of earth and heaven to recover. Their conditions were stabilized. They just needed time to recover.

It was just a waste when Cang Yun gave them the Reincarnation Life Force Tree. It made Jiao Shan's group speechless.

"When you see Shi Yan again, please help me tell him to remember the agreement between us. Tell him that I will go to Agate Star Area to meet him." Cang Yun said and then headed to the cave to get out of the mountain.

Most people didn't have a clue of what was going on.

Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue knew that Cang Yun wanted to give Shi Yan face by giving them the Reincarnation Life Force Tree to recover and improve their bodies.

Audrey descended from the sky, her face glum and her eyes dark without a beam of light. She said dispiritedly. "Shi Yan was dragged into the core of the ancient continent. He needs time to fuse with the Genesis Fruit. After that, he will leave the ancient continent. We will be... thrown out of here soon. We don't need to fight anymore."

Then, she left the mountain.

Jiao Shan signaled Jiao Hai and the others. Then, they supported Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue and followed Audrey.

Without the World Tree, this Holy Mountain became hollow like a person without the heart or skeleton. It was just a boring skin bag.

Jiao Shan, Jiao Hai, and the others had left. They left Haig, Mia, Phelps, and the warriors of the God Clan standing with their heads stooped and their spirits low as if their parents were all dead.

Haig landed between them, his face disheartened. He didn't have the majestic aura of the one who could conquer the world anymore. It was the first time he was defeated and this kind of defeat was some sort of humiliation to him.

He didn't even have the right to join the competition!

Being the Young Master of the Bradley family of the God Clan, he got the approval of Ancient God Continent as soon as he was born. It was destined that he would be the top warrior of his clan regarding power or experience.

At that time, Harson was the most outstanding warrior of his clan. The Charteris family didn't dare to let Harson fight him once. It was enough to prove his position and intimidation.

However, on this continent, the plan he had plotted failed.

Shi Yan had taken the Genesis Fruit which was a critical factor to the prosperity of his clan. They knew the meaning of the Genesis Fruit better than anyone else. The Genesis Fruit could have made Ancient God Continent gather the energy faster. Each member of the God Clan who was native to Ancient God Continent would have received benefits altogether.

Moreover, even the members of the God Clan in the other galaxies could have had some magical change in their soul altars because their ancestral planet would have been full of energy once again.

Each ancient continent was a metal core of belief to their native creatures. It could bring unimaginable benefits to one race. Once Ancient God Continent was filled with energy, which balanced the earth and heaven energy there, the Shrines of the God Clan built there would have marvelous changes. Members of the God Clan

could make themselves stronger through the shrines physically and mentally.

They used to get it so they knew the mysterious benefits they could get. It was enough to transform the entire race.

But Shi Yan had the Genesis Fruit now!

"Would our clan be subdued by the Immortal Demon Clan? Since he got the Genesis Fruit, Ancient Demon Continent would gather the remnants of energy from outer space faster to provide the Immortal Demon warriors with surging energy. They would be stronger shortly after."

Phelps muttered. He couldn't accept this fact.

However, they didn't know that Shi Yan had fused with the Origin of Grace Mainland, which was the ancestral planet of the Heavenly Monster Tribe! That was why Cang Yun was so generous!

The ones who were about to rise were the members of Heavenly Monster Tribe! Each member of this clan would be boosted with energy because Shi Yan had fused with the Genesis Fruit. The tribe that the Imperial Dark Tribe had subdued for years would rise dazzlingly one more time.

Unfortunately, Haig, Mia, and Phelps didn't know this.

"It's not that easy. Our God Clan has killed a lot of Immortal Demon warriors. They don't have many fellows alive. It's not easy for the four great races to reproduce. They can't get strong that quickly. We should just seize the chance before they could rise forcefully to destroy them. As long as we can eliminate them, we will still be the overlords of the cosmos."

Haig gritted his teeth, talking to his fellows in his dark, low voice.

Mia and Phelps sighed. They thought that they could only comfort their minds that way. The God Clan had been dominating for a long time. They would never let their clan decline.

"We should leave. We have to get out of this area and leave the continent." Pondering for a while, Haig continued, "Perhaps we still have time to clean up those fish before the ancient continent kicks us out..."

"They have Audrey. It's not easy," Mia shook her head.

Haig's failure had haunted them like a shadow in their minds. As Haig had lost his intimidation, Mia and Phelps thought that Harson, the one who had been destroyed tragically, was somehow more terrifying than Haig.

They had even thought that if Harson hadn't died, he would have been the new face of the God Clan's future. Since Haig wasn't eligible to join that final competition, they had looked down on him from that moment.

Haig was sensitive enough to feel the down moods of everyone. He became gloomier. He didn't talk more. He just silently walked to the cave to leave the Holy Mountain by himself.. Standing at the entrance of a cave and looking at the most mysterious space in this universe, he felt the reluctance of a loser.

Ice blue bubbles suddenly emerged from the nine-tiered blue sky and found the signals of life. They found the warriors by their life magnetic energy, captured them, and lifted them through the sky before leaving this ancient continent.

Besides Shi Yan, all of the other survivors on this ancient continent were delivered away. The atmosphere resumed its desolateness.

The ancient continent was sealed from now on.

Chapter 1191: The Structure of the World

A blue planet was by the edge of the dark universe. It was quietly spinning and showing the mountains, lakes, and sea on its surface. It looked like a beautiful picture with earth and heaven energy.

It was Grace Mainland.

Due to the planet's exhausted earth and heaven energy, Shi Yan had moved most of the warriors living on this continent to Agate Star Area. After they had left, earth and heaven energy here was almost used up. The plants and grass were yellowed. The ancient trees were dying. The forests had become deserts. A deadly desolateness took over the continent.

The ordinary people living on the continent were also affected by the change of earth and heaven energy. They started to have strange and rare diseases. Their longevity reduced massively.

Previously, even an ordinary human who didn't cultivate martial art and take in the earth and heaven energy could live seventy or eighty years without suffering from a major disease.

However, after Shi Yan had delivered the warriors away, the longevity of human beings on this continent had reduced to fifty and even a slight sickness could take their life away.

Their immune system was weakened unknowingly so they couldn't explain. They were able to die easily.

Normal people didn't know what had happened to their planet. They just knew that the environment where they dwelled had become much more difficult to live on. The air wasn't fresh. It had become polluted easily...

They didn't know that the main reason for all of these adversities was because of the earth and heaven energy running out. They would never know the real reason.

However, recently, they were startled to find the situation

change again. They saw ancient trees grow green buds; oases appeared in the deserted areas. The air became fresher. After each breath, people could feel much better.

Some sick people were healed magically. They glowed in good health. No sickness could kill them.

Many weakened people were strengthened unknowingly. Their feeble limbs became strong and even their crooked backs were straightened up once again...

The ocean and lakes became clear with many fishes and shrimps. The fishermen hailed at this miracle.

Many cities and towns in Quite Cloud Land, the Endless Sea, and Divine Great Land had the biggest crops ever. Everything they grew gave them a harvest that they could never have imagined. The crops that needed half a month were ripe after just two days.

In each corner of the continent, each area, each nation, and city, people gradually found the world changing.

Some low-realm warriors who stayed on this ancient continent found that their cultivation progressed faster. They could see that they could stabilize their minds and realm quickly. The earth and heaven energy in the world where they lived was increasing amazingly. They thought that it was a beautiful dream of theirs. No one could believe it was real.

They knew from their precursors that this continent used to have many experts who had left their homeland to the other star area.

Their precursors said that they hadn't had a hope of living in this land. It wasn't suitable for the warriors to cultivate. The reason why they stayed was that their realms were too low. They weren't eligible to leave.

They used to regret, whine, and be desperate.

Currently, the change of land under their feet had brought them to hope for a new life. It seemed like the Mighty Heaven had

opened a new door for them.

People were so thrilled. The shrines and temples in the entire Grace Mainland were packed with people. They came to show their gratitude to God. They thought that God didn't really abandon this land.

They had experienced despair and hopelessness. They had endured a lot of disasters. And now, seeing the world turning into what they had in their dreams, everybody burst out in tears.

They believed that God had heard them. They were now taken care of and protected.

In another dark star area so far away from Grace Mainland.

This place had no light, colors, or stars. It didn't even have any sound. It looked like a corner of the universe, which had been sealed for a long time.

It used to be a famous continent that was well known around the universe: Ancient Demon Continent.

The rough surface of the vast continent had countless holes and long gray rivers. The sky of this area was overcast year round. The entire continent had the dead aura of a senile, dying person. It seemed like the planet was about to become a dead star. It couldn't nurture any creature.

It was Ancient Demon Continent, one of the five ancient continents that were born at the dawn of this universe. By the edge of death, it was revived.

Anyway, its reviving speed was so slow. It was a hundred times slower than Grace Mainland.

In the dry sea, the yellowed forest and on the cracked soil, the thundering roars and howling rose. The noises were loud enough to shake the entire place.

The massive beasts as big as mountains emerged. Pythons, Three-

legged Gold Crows, Dragons, Unicorns, Phoenixes, and other kinds of beasts emerged. They were several thousand meters long, which made them look like the moving mountains.

They were the members of the Heavenly Monster Tribe and the purest bloodline of the Monster Clan. They were one of the Four Great Creatures of the world. They had unlimited God power as soon as they were born.

Many members of the Heavenly Monster Tribe were roaring and howling at the sky. They then transformed into their human bodies and became tens of thousands of times smaller. They had a human's upper body and a snake's tail, or a human body with a bird's head. Some had their bodies covered with flaming scales. And some even had red iron bodies. They looked strange and unique.

The members of the Heavenly Monster Tribe had transformed into their humanoid form to gather from different corners of Ancient Demon Continent. They congregated in a valley with many strange rocks.

This valley had many gray, brown, green, cyan rocks, which were carved into the statues of the giant Demogorgons with green faces and yellow fangs. They held weapons in their hands while they rolled their eyes and posed their terrifying, majestic makings. Seeing these statues, people couldn't help but bow in worship.

Even the members of the Heavenly Monster Tribe had to retrieve their brutal auras, showing their fear and respect for the Demogorgons here.

If Shi Yan could come here, he would have found a giant statue of the Demogorgon which was very similar to the Demogorgon phantom he had created from the negative energy.

The members of the Heavenly Monster Tribe appeared in the rocky forest where the statue stood in their human shape. They came and surrounded a formation surrounded by nine

Demogorgon statues. It was a round formation that was as big as a football court. It had many fine lines weaving with each other, glowing in a faint, cold halo. Those lines were wiggling like worms.

The energy waves that could clear the space emitted from that ancient formation. A bright silver vortex was slowly formed.

It was another space passage.

"Cang Yun did it," said a brawny man with a human head and a snake body. He had long, dark, green hair, which was with a closer look, created by thousands of small and thin snakes. Those snakes had their tails connected to his skull. He looked so fearsome indeed.

"God wants our Heavenly Monster Tribe to be strong!"

Another man shouted like a roaring dragon.

This clansman had a bird head connected to a human body. His head was a silver eagle head, which was cold and dark. It made people think that it was made of iron or steel.

"It's time to wake up the Holy Ancestor... Perhaps he has sensed the magical change even though he's sleeping. This Cang Yun kid isn't bad. He's worth our merit of teaching him for years. After the battle that year, our Heavenly Tribe will never bear the same loss. In the next ten thousand years, we will thrive!"

A member of the Heavenly Monster Tribe with flaming scales covered his body laughed crudely. He shouted and then jumped into the vortex.

The experts of the Heavenly Monster Tribe laughed and walked shoulder by shoulder. They entered the vortex. They were going to wake up their Holy Ancestor who had been sleeping for so many years. Their Holy Ancestor was going to bring this world a happy surprise.

Devil Blood Star, Agate Star Area.

Blood Devil, Gu Te, Bath, Ghost Hunter, Leona, and Fei Lan were waiting for something by the edge the star.

Everybody looked stern, waiting in silence. There seemed to be an invisible, unknown pressure applied to them.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The ear-piercing explosions echoed. Slowly, battleships started to pierce through the thick layers of clouds.

Those battleships looked shattered with bloodstains and patches on broken areas. Some damaged areas sounded squeaking as if its components were going to fall off at any minute.

Those battleships were massive with different flags. Some belonged to Potion and Tool Pavilion, Fighting League in Dark Shadow Ghostly Prison, and Divine Light...

Several thousand massive battleships carried around one million warriors of various clans and forces. Fu Wei, Bettina, An Yun, Zha Duo, and Timlin of the Potion and Tool Pavilion were there too.

On the Fighting League's side, they saw Feng Han the Hegemon, Xia Xin Yan of the Windstorm War Department, Feng Yan, Qi Ze, Miao Rong, and more.

The Master of the Divine Light, Zi Yao, Sana, and Ju Bo also emerged.

There were more forces, big and small, and the famous warriors of Agate Star Area.

They all looked like they had undergone all kind of adversities. On their battleships, the warriors looked pale; many of them had lost their limbs. Apparently, they just had a bloody battle, which they had lost.

This force was equal to half of the combined force of the entire Agate Star Area. They didn't stay in their respective regions but

crossed thousands of miles to the Devil Blood Star.

"Make a safe route!" Blood Devil shouted all of a sudden.

The experts of the Monster Clan scattered and arranged rest stops for the coming battleships. They were so busy.

Blood Devil, Gu Te, and Bath were the leaders of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan in Agate Star Area. They frowned and their faces were dark and glum.

The Ascot family, the Fernandez of the God Clan, and the Bai family of Dry Bone Star Area had joined hands to attack Agate Star Area for ten years. The Ascot family opened a space passage that they used to seal before. The massive army of the God Clan came in waves. They wanted to crush the Dark Shadow Ghostly Prison of Agate Star Area.

Feng Han's Fighting League was defeated shortly after. His warriors were killed. He didn't have the power to resist.

The God Clan scattered and attacked different areas of Agate Star Area. They hadn't had a defeat.

Leona commanded the new Blood Legion she had created from Monster Clan and Demon Clan to vanguard and storm Dark Shadow Ghostly Prison. It was the first time they made the God Clan pay a big price and temporarily hold their invasion.

In that battle, Leona had commanded the Monster and Demon warriors to destroy almost five thousand warriors of the Ascot family and the Bai family. All of them were at King God Realm and above!

Chapter 1192: The One Who has Disappeared for Ten Years...

It was the first defeat of the God Clan's great army since they had invaded Agate Star Area.

The Blood Legion commanded by Leona had stopped the God Clan and made them pause to adjust their force.

That battle had encouraged the fighting spirit of all warriors of Agate Star Area. More forces cheered up. The war in Agate Star Area didn't tilt to one side anymore.

However, in that battle, the Monster Clan and Demon Clan had to bear a big loss too. Several years after that, they could only take turns in joining the small battle and becoming the knife that continuously cut the body of the God Clan that gave them minor wounds.

Unfortunately, the aura of the God Clan was strong and brutish. They had many elite warriors. In addition to the Ascot family, the Fernandez family and the Bai family also came.

Two years ago, Leona fought the God Clan one more time. She produced a significant result of killing three thousand warriors of the God Clan. However, they had a bigger loss in that battle.

Leona's team had to retreat to defend Devil Blood Star. They had even smashed the Mother and Child Star Linking Formation that connected Dark Shadow Ghostly Prison and Devil Blood Star. They were afraid that the God Clan could track them down using that formation.

In the past two years, Leona, Monster Clan, and Demon Clan had been in Devil Blood Star. They were training their warriors for a short period...

Through these two years, the forces like Fighting League, Divine Light, Potion and Tool Pavilion, Fire Clan, and Ice Clan had formed

an alliance. They had joined hands and tried their best to resist the God Clan. They had battled God Clan at every corner of Agate Star Area.

Throughout these two years, each life star of Agate Star Area had become a battlefield. Every warrior of Agate Star Area had become a soldier.

The Agate Star Area had so many inspiring stories. The clansmen of different clans had used their lives to protect their homelands.

Many warriors decided to detonate their own soul altars to cause a bitter damage to the God Clan. To protect their children and families, they had shown their best valor and stormed towards the God Clan like a moth heading to a flame.

However, their enemy was too strong. In the past two years, the clansmen of different forces around Agate Star Area had to encounter the slaughtering every day, every second.

Half a year ago, Potion and Tool Pavilion had cooperated with Fighting League, Divine Light, Fire Clan, Ice Clan, and Wood Clan to ambush the God Clan. That battle had buried dozens of thousands of warriors.

After that battle, the alliance created by Potion and Tool Pavilion had failed. They couldn't stop the God Clan's invasion anymore and they continuously retreated and gave their large territories to God Clan.

The God Clan was able to swagger around and no one stood up to resist them anymore. Every time the others stepped back, the God Clan claimed another life star and closed their circle.

Now, two-thirds of Agate Star Area had fallen into the control of the God Clan. However, they hadn't relaxed and continued to plan for the final war.

The last place that stood still in Agate Star Area had a force to resist the great army of the God Clan. It was at Devil Blood Star

where the Monster Clan and Demon Clan were based.

Leona and the experts of the Monster Clan and Demon Clan had proven that only they could forcefully resist the God Clan's great army.

Thus, Potion and Tool Pavilion, Divine Light, and Fighting League couldn't help but gather here. They came to Devil Blood Star with the hope of joining the Monster Clan and Demon Clan to resist the God Clan.

After their battleships anchored in Devil Blood Star, leaders of the other forces proactively came to Blood Devil, Gu Te, and Bath. They looked so worried and a dark shadow was cast over them.

"We could only count on you guys."

Fu Wei was calm like an orchid, her white face filled with tiredness. As soon as she arrived, she bowed to greet Blood Devil, Bath, and Gu Te.

Right now, Fu Wei was the real Pavilion Master of Potion and Tool Pavilion. She had decoded the Canon of Potion and Tool Pavilion and merged it with her Ethereal Extent.

Recently, the reason that made Potion and Tool Pavilion the control center of the Union was that they had a lot of resources. They had created a lot of battleships and weapons for other forces.

Fu Wei alone had refined many Divine Grade weapons. Although they weren't as strong as Original Incipient Grade weapons, they had given new thoughts to Elders of the Potion and Tool Pavilion.

They seemed to find the method to refine the Original Incipient Grade weapons. However, they didn't have enough materials to try. All went for Fu Wei's merit and that Canon.

"It's awful that we can't contact Fiery Rain Star Area. I wonder what has happened to Yu Shan. Since we can't exchange information, we can't do many things and take risks," sighed Leona.

She had become the backbone of the union.

Whether it was the great leader of the Monster Clan, Demon Clan, or Fu Wei, the experts of the Divine Light and Fighting League had deemed this fearsome-looking woman as the new commander of Agate Star Area.

Leona had used each of her battles to prove her astounding commanding talents. The new Blood Legion she had commanded consisted of a bunch of true bloodthirsty soldiers. They were the only force that could strongly resist the iron shoes of the God Clan.

"The God Clan is also invading Fiery Rain Star Area. I think they don't have extra effort to care about us. We can't count on them." Fu Wei hesitated for a while and then said weakly, "Potion and Tool Pavilion used to have a connection to Fiery Rain Star Area. I heard that their situation isn't better than ours. To deal with them, the God Clan has mobilized two families..."

Hearing her, people all changed their faces.

"Five years ago, Benny went to Fiery Rain Star Area. We haven't heard anything from him. If he were here, it would be easier for me..." said Leona begrudgingly.

Hearing the name Benny, people had the strange light in their eyes, but they sighed right after that.

Five years ago, Benny had fought Leona once with the same amount of soldiers. Benny had lost that game slightly and he was able to trouble Leona a lot.

After that battle, Yu Shan and Xiao En strongly requested Benny to go with them to Fiery Rain Star Area because their situation was really dangerous at that time.

Blood Devil's team discussed for a while and then agreed to let Benny leave with Yu Shan and Xiao En.

They left with the elite squad of Fiery Rain Star Area. They wanted to go back to their homeland and strike the God Clan hard.

Then, they hadn't received any news from Benny ever since.

Leona knew Benny's talents. She thought that if Benny were here, he could share her load of pressure. She could have saved more energy to control the whole situation.

Although Fu Wei, Feng Han, and the others were really strong and they had many Incipient God Realm experts here, not many of them could help her in commanding the field.

"The army of the God Clan knows that we're in Devil Blood Star. They're after us. Soon, they will come here." Fu Wei was still calm. "We don't have much time. I've discussed with my team. All of us will listen to you. You can order and arrange us."

Everybody looked at Leona with hope.

"We can't stop them."

Leona shook her head and said honestly, "Our force isn't enough to stop the God Clan's invasion. If we face them directly, we will lose. And if we gather in one spot, they can capture us at once."

"Then what should we do?" asked Feng Han indifferently.

Leona looked at him and contemplated, "Even if we scatter, we will be destroyed one by one. If we gather, although we can damage the God Clan hard, none of us will survive. Fifty warriors at Ethereal God Realm can create a brute formation using their power Upanishad and can kill one First Sky of Incipient God Realm of our side. Most of the warriors of the God Clan understand using strange formations. They have years of experience. We don't have that kind of experience."

Everybody quieted down.

Now, they regretted that they hadn't sent the experts of their clans to Leona to train earlier. If the experts of the forces everywhere were trained for five or six years, they would have the competence to fight the God Clan.

But now... time wasn't waiting up for them.

"Staying in Agate Star Area, we can gather our forces for the final battle. I'm sure that we can damage the God Clan severely, but we won't win. We will all die."

Leona considered her words and said, "I heard that you guys have a secret space passage that you can use to escape. As long as you aren't in Agate Star Area when the war happens, you can be safe. Let's discuss and see what we should do."

The experts of the other forces had laid their hopes on Leona. They thought that she could lead everybody to resist the God Clan.

Today, listening to her, they felt that the truth was too harsh. They looked baffled as they thought about Leona's suggestion. They didn't dare to play with the future of their clans.

They left the hall and privately discussed it with the elders of their clans. They wanted to find a solution quickly.

"Potion and Tool Pavilion always has fast news. Do you have any information... about him?" Leona sudden asked. Pausing for a while, she continued, "It has been ten years. Precursor Shang Chen had predicted precisely. What he tells us happens. It has been ten years. If nothing bad happened, he should be here, right?"

Fei Lan and Ka Tuo behind her were startled. They focused on Fu Wei and listened...

Even Blood Devil, Bath, and Gu Te had put on their stern faces as they looked at Fu Wei.

They knew who Leona had just referred to.

Under people's yearning eyes, Fu Wei shook her head sadly. "We have no information at all."

Everybody looked extremely disappointed.

"If he was here, perhaps he would know how to save Agate Star Area and bring us hope. It's too bad that he isn't here. We can't

save Agate Star Area," concluded Leona.

She knew that Shi Yan was the successor of the Bloodthirsty's Master. She understood that even the Bloodthirsty Force had stayed hidden, their force was still really big and was hiding around the universe. Although she didn't know how strong this force was, she believed that if Shi Yan could gather them, they could easily teach the Ascot family, the Fernandez family, and the Bai family a lesson that they would never forget.

She strongly believed that the Bloodthirsty Force was still as strong as before. They were all waiting for their "King" and for the earth and heaven to designate them some mission.

Leona's words silenced people. They were all heavy-hearted.

The Devil Blood Star seemed to be covered by a thick layer of dark clouds. People felt like they didn't see the sun. The pressure from the God Clan was like a mountain that suffocated them.

But someone didn't feel that... Or, he wasn't human...

He was Ghost Hunter. Ghost Hunter came from Grace Mainland and he got the core inheritance in the Heavenly Monster Mountain Range.

Recently, he found that his energy, his power Upanishad, and even his body were having some transformation. It seemed like an angel was watching him and strengthening him every second! His competence enhanced rapidly!

He didn't know the reason, but he was sure that something magical had happened, which had resonated with his bloodline.

He had become stronger day after day.

He had even thought that the God Clan wasn't enough to scare him.

This unceasingly increasing power had given him belief and hope!

Chapter 1193: Awaken!

The icy blue planet moved like a massive meteor across the universe and dragged a long tail of red light. On its way, it had gathered energy from outer space.

It was Desolate, the ancient continent that never stopped moving.

It had drifted across star areas and never rested. It moved like a shuttle between regions of the cosmos. Because of its movement, not many people knew where it was.

The training after ten thousand years had ended. The warriors who had survived this time were kicked out of the planet. They had returned to their respective star areas through their own means.

Those people had harvested a lot of precious and rare items from Desolate. At the same time, they had an excellent chance to train their mentality and improve their competence.

But the most important thing was that they had brought news. An Immortal Demon warrior called Shi Yan had taken the Genesis Fruit from Desolate.

The news that the Immortal Demon Clan was about to rise one more time had spread out to big star areas at the speed of a rocket. It had shaken the forces around the universe.

Together with spreading news, the pressure that the God Clan had put on the other forces had somehow relaxed. People started to have new thoughts.

For the time being, the name Shi Yan had become a buzzing topic in the forces and clans around the star areas. People tried to investigate everything related to this name. They hated that they couldn't dig up the eighteen generations of his family. Even the forces of the God Clan were explicitly investigating the Immortal

Demon Clan's activities everywhere. They wanted to eliminate the Immortal Demon Clan completely before they could rise again.

The forces around the world became chaotic.

Unfortunately, not many people knew Shi Yan's profile and real identity. Also, they didn't know that their presumption of the rising of the Immortal Demon Clan was just a misunderstanding.

They assumed that since Shi Yan was a member of the Immortal Demon Clan, he must have fused with the Origin of Ancient Demon Continent. And because Ancient Demon Continent was the cradle of the Immortal Demon Clan, it was going to bless the members of the clan.

It was too bad that they were all wrong. The ones who benefited here were the Heavenly Monster Tribe.

Each warrior who had the bloodline of the Heavenly Monster Tribe in their bodies could sense the change happening inside their bodies!

It was like heaven had shown them a direction and blessed them. Their cultivation progressed faster and it was much easier to gather earth and heaven energy. Some warriors with the trace of Heavenly Monster Tribe's bloodline recognized the change, but they didn't know the reason.

Only the precursors of the Heavenly Monster Tribe knew that the chance for their clan to rise up had appeared. They started to operate in the corners of the cosmos.

However, they kept this secret and revealed nothing to anybody. They seized the chance to cultivate and accumulate energy.

Some families of the God Clan knew that Shi Yan came from Agate Star Area. They knew his connection with some forces in Agate Star Area.

Mia was the member of the Fernandez family and Phelps was the core member of the Ascot family. After they had returned to

Ancient God Continent, they immediately joined the operation in Agate Star Area and revealed Shi Yan's relationship with Agate Star Area.

The God warriors were nakedly invading Agate Star Area. They gathered more soldiers to march to Agate Star Area.

The reason why Fu Wei and Feng Han suffered a big defeat half a year ago was related to Shi Yan. However, they didn't know that. They didn't know that God Clan suddenly increased their forces because of Shi Yan who came from Agate Star Area. They didn't know that the God Clan wanted to finish Agate Star Area as soon as possible because of Shi Yan.

Agate Star Area had disconnected from the other big star areas in this universe for too long.

This conservative star area had sealed the space passages connected to the other star areas. For many years, they had lived in their world only and didn't want to connect the other communities.

If the connection had remained with the big star areas, the warriors there would have known how famous the name Shi Yan was and how it had attracted the clans of different planets.

They didn't know that the forces around the universe were searching this man and the star area he belonged in.

They still lived in their own world and struggled to resist the destructive invasion of the God Clan. They didn't know the changes in the world outside the barrier.

Desolate was like a meteor drifting around the cracks of the universe and flying away in the dark galaxy. It was like a shadow streak that no one could capture.

The Center of the Ancient Continent was sealed. No one could get in it anymore.

However, inside Desolate was a world of marvels. The place

called the fountainhead of powers Upanishads was always inside Desolate. It was the core of this planet and the greatest soul altar of the big races.

Only souls could enter this place and they had to be warriors who had fused with the heaven flames. They could come here to cultivate and comprehended their powers Upanishads.

In the long river of Time, all four ancient continents: Ancient Demon Continent, Ancient God Continent, Grace Mainland, and God-blessed Mainland produced the heaven flames after a specific period. Only the warrior who could fuse with all of the heaven flames of an era could get the Origin and make it the co-soul.

From one hundred thousand years ago, the four continents gave birth to different heaven flames after every ten thousand years. The heaven flames then scattered or fused with other warriors. In some eras, the heaven flames weren't all found, so no one was able to merge with the Origin like Shi Yan, Haig, Audrey, and Cang Yun.

In some eras, it was possible for only one warrior to fuse with all the heaven flames of an ancient continent. The other heaven flames of the other ancient continents could be fused with dozens of different warriors. After they died, the heaven flames were freed and they drifted around to find new masters.

The ancient times had created a lot of heaven flames with the power of the Origin. Anyone who had the heaven flames could use them to enter the inner part of Desolate: the fountainhead of power Upanishad.

However, only their souls could get there!

And today, a body was floating quietly in the fountainhead of powers Upanishads. Countless electric spears and flames were shooting around him. The flames and starlight rivers flashed and then disappeared. They all stored the essence of some power Upanishad.

His burned arm recovered without a mark.

He looked as if he was immersed in a deep sleep while he was bobbing in this place. However, the vitality in his body was vigorous and his soul energy was powerfully emitting.

After a very long time...

Today, his co-soul flew out of the soul altar with dancing heaven flames. His co-soul had a fruit inside. It acted as a heart, which transmitted formidable energy fluctuations. It was the seed of life that gave people a feeling of something with endless vitality.

As soon as the co-soul emerged, a colorful space crack appeared in the fountainhead of power Upanishad.

His co-soul flashed and then disappeared into the space crack. It moved through the distance between spaces to a continent and then fell.

It was nighttime so people couldn't see their fingers on Grace Mainland.

It was a brilliant meteor dragging a long tail of starlight that fell into the Heavenly Monster Mountain Range in the Endless Sea and entered the core of the earth and then got into a red lozenge crystal.

It was Shi Yan's co-soul.

Shi Yan's co-soul had his facial features, but it was burning like a flame. It entered the crimson lozenge crystal. This crystal was really massive. It hid in the core of the earth and connected to countless lakes, mountains, rivers, and volcanoes. It released frightening energy with a strong suction force.

Different kinds of energy that the naked eye couldn't see were attracted by the red crystal and gathered from everywhere. Slowly, they filled the sky, oceans, and surface of this continent and changed in quietly.

It was absorbing energy from outer space.

The rhombus crimson crystal had a five-colored fluid murmuring inside. It gave people the impression that something was alive.

Shi Yan's co-soul was like a fiery flame that moved around this five-colored fluid. The fruit that acted like a heart had many fine silky fibers that were like branches of the World Tree. It distributed the fluid and filled the rhombus crystal. It seemed to move some mysterious power and send it to this continent.

Shi Yan seemed to sink into a beautiful dream.

His dream was brilliant and colorful with beautiful lights. Those lights changed continuously and turned into a mountain, a sea, and creatures.

Meteors moved in this dreamy land and created a silver river or flames. Light flashed quickly and brought the truth of power Upanishad.

He could even see the surging blood sea where the meanings of Death power Upanishad hid. Layers of space had the power to confine everything. He could see the evolution of living beings, the death, and birth of the stars...

In that dream, he was just a nonchalantly onlooker who stood and watched the transformations of many things. He had something flash in his mind, which was like something very delicate that he couldn't grab. However, he was there and he had seen them all.

When the co-soul detached his soul altar, he felt so empty. But when it got into the crimson crystal inside Grace Mainland, he felt so sufficient. It was the feeling of having a home for his soul. A home of his own.

His brilliant Ethereal Extent was like a galaxy where his host soul stayed. It was his world that he had built with his faith. It was the home of the host soul.

The lozenge crimson crystal where the co-soul was staying was like its house. It was a strange world that only belonged to the co-soul where it became the only God. It could feel all the emotions, happiness, sorrow, love, anger, and other emotions of the creatures living here. It could draw the change of the weather with only a flick of his thoughts.

However, in Shi Yan's eyes, it was just a dream and a fantasy one.

His body floated silently in the fountainhead of power Upanishad, wandering in the strange dream. He had experienced many things. Gradually, his mind quieted down as he found himself getting out of this area.

An icy blue bubble appeared in the fountainhead of power Upanishad. It covered and delivered him through a space crack.

The bright light suddenly became so dazzling that nothing could compare it.

His body disappeared from the fountainhead of power Upanishad. He reappeared in Dark Shadow Ghostly Prison and fell into a space passage. When he appeared there, the space passage was sealed.

Shi Yan lay by the entrance of the space passage. He was surrounded by countless space passages like light caves, which connected to other stars area, but most of them were sealed.

It was the specific feature of Agate Star Area.

Shi Yan's consciousness resumed after a long sleep. His fingers twitched. Right after that, he retrieved his mind from the dreamy land. Then, he finally woke up and recognized who he was.

Shi Yan opened his eyes, which were deep and archaic. It would have given people a mournful feeling as if he had experienced countless ups and downs of earth and heaven.

After scanning the area, he knew where he was.

This place was in Agate Star Area. It was the Dark Shadow Ghostly Prison that had so many strange space passages.

Chapter 1194: Return

The images he had seen in the dream reflected once again in Shi Yan's head. The beautiful galaxy, the development of death and life, and the magnificent space had flashed one after another.

At the entrance of the space passage, Shi Yan was like an ancient tree that had existed for billions of years with the old vicissitude of life as if he had experienced living a hundred lives and thousands of changes in this world. It seemed like he had just returned to the ancient world.

It was the specific aura of Grace Mainland. Today, it was like milk in his soul. They were one now, which gave him a whole new aura. Although his spirit was still high and enthusiastic with vigorous life energy fluctuations, he had a different taste.

Standing there quietly, he was checking the new changes of his soul altar and the true meanings of the three powers Upanishad Death and Life, Space, and Star.

The brilliant, galaxy-like Ethereal Extent emerged and floated in the void behind his head with dazzling suns, moons, and stars. The stars in there had the most magical essence energy of the world that he could use to build a mountain, lake, or any creature if he liked.

Shi Yan was shaken.

His Ethereal Extent seemed to change and become the Incipient Extent, which gave him a feeling of a real thing. It was a benefit naturally gained after his powers Upanishads advanced and his soul was refined.

All of a sudden, Shi Yan recognized that while he didn't notice, his realm had advanced one more step. Now, he was just a step away from Incipient God Realm.

The scenes in the dream and the things he had seen were actually

what had helped him comprehending his power Upanishad. It provided him marvelous, indescribable advantages.

Anyway... Where was the co-soul?

Shi Yan was suspicious as he looked around bewilderedly.

Abruptly, a connection that had crossed the endless space was formed. His Soul Consciousness was dragged away to the strange land that was far away.

He had a strange feeling as if his soul was taken and drawn away in just a blink of an eye.

After this feeling disappeared, he found a massive crimson rhombus crystal in his soul. When his soul touched the crystal, he had established a subtle, marvelous connection with a world. He could hear the screams and prayers in the souls of the creatures living in that world. It seemed like he had a pair of heavenly eyes that could observe every corner or even the deepest places in people's souls.

The mountains, lakes, deserts, and oceans in this world were parts of his body. They could help transmit his Soul Consciousness billions of miles instantaneously.

He was indeed the God of this world.

After each second, this world had changed and it surged with energy. He could observe everything. He could create rain or draw the wind. He was the pulsation of this world...

Something exploded in his mind. He knew what had happened.

His host soul was still in his body. He was still himself, but his co-soul had gotten into the core of Grace Mainland. Since his co-soul had the Genesis Fruit, it had become the Soul Consciousness of Grace Mainland. Just like Desolate to the ancient continent, it could control the entire Grace Mainland!

It was like he was divided into two parts, one was his host soul

and his body, the other one was his co-soul and Grace Mainland. With the Origin of Grace Mainland, he was given the consciousness of Grace Mainland.

The co-soul had become the core of Grace Mainland. It stayed there to control and guard the planet. This ancient continent had become the Incipient God Realm of the co-soul that the co-soul could manage in silence.

The co-soul and the host soul were interlinked. Once a thought came, the two souls would resonate. Regardless of how far they were from each other, nothing could stand between them.

Before the Genesis Fruit had completely fused with Grace Mainland, the co-soul had to stay there to guard the progress and bring a new life to this exhausted continent. After many thoughts had crossed his mind, Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness returned.

He was still at the entrance of the space passage in the Shadow Ghostly Prison. However, his two souls contacted each other every second. He knew what was going on in both places. The co-soul and the host soul were like his two eyes without many differences.

His host soul and the realm of the body had reached the peak of Ethereal God Realm. He was just one step away from Incipient God Realm. And only he knew how domineering his real competence was.

Shi Yan temporarily put aside the magnificent features of the co-soul and Grace Mainland. He began to think about the current situation. This place was in Agate Star Area. He remembered that Shang Chen had predicted that within ten years, Agate Star Area would have to receive the biggest challenge. The God Clan would invade them and they could lose everything within one battle.

He knew what he should do.

In this chaotic space passage hub, Shi Yan took a walk around and found that the passages connecting Agate Star Area to the

other star areas had been sealed including the one leading to Fiery Rain Star Area. It was hard to pierce through.

The only thorough passage was the one connecting to Ancient God Continent, which was closed before. The entrance to that space passage had been broken wide open. It looked so deep with something like meteors moving through. Shi Yan could sense life energy fluctuations inside that space passage.

He immediately knew what had happened.

The God Clan had operated their invasion on a large scale. Their army had come here in waves. Could the experts of Agate Star Area be able to stop them?

He knitted his brows tightly.

Countless thoughts flashed through his head. Shi Yan suddenly remembered Shang Chen and Yang Tian Emperor.

The reason why he had entered the ancient continent was that of the Soul Rotting Aphis in Yang Tian Emperor's soul. Shang Chen had temporarily frozen him to control the situation. Shi Yan remembered his appointment with Shang Chen.

He calmed down and decided to find Shang Chen first. He got the Seven-colored Demonic Flower to save Yang Tian Emperor. After that, he was going to do the next thing.

His soul altar spun. An immemorial space energy fluctuated from his God Body.

He urged his power Upanishad and the two souls seemed to merge into one within a blink of an eye. He felt like he could directly absorb some kind of energy from Grace Mainland, which was so far from him now. This finding had struck him for a while. Sensing clearly, he found that it was just a hallucination.

Bewildered, he slowly understood it. The compatibility between his co-soul and the flaming Origin hadn't reached Haig's level.

If he could further fuse with the flaming Origin, he could do what Haig had shown him. Wherever he was, he could directly take in the power of the ancient continent. He would never need to worry about lacking energy. And for the time being, due to the Genesis Fruit inside Grace Mainland, the continent could give him endless energy!

He saw the new target.

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!

A light passage was built in front of him with his will and aura. It was a space bridge.

He stepped on the bridge and continuously used the Space power Upanishad to build more bridges. In just a blink, he could move billions of miles through the vast sea of stars, which was several hundred times faster than the fastest battleships!

Only the warriors who cultivated Space power Upanishad could leap through spaces at such fast speed!

He was at Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm and because of the abundant God power he had, he could continuously create space bridges.

If Zha Duo, the warrior who also cultivated Space power Upanishad, did the same thing, he could do it three or four times. After that, his God power would be used up and he would be no different from a sheep to be slaughtered.

Zha Duo didn't have a lot of God power like Shi Yan!

Shi Yan continuously created new space bridges to move through the stars at a speed that was even faster than a meteor or light.

As he had just reached Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, he could only move fast within one star area. If he could reach Incipient God Realm at a profound level, he could cross even an entire star area. He could use his supernatural power to create a space passage in any area to visit different star areas as he pleased.

At that time, even the universe was vast. He could take a walk or wander through the borderless sea of stars.

Crossing through spaces, Shi Yan felt a little tired. After moving through many life stars, he finally stopped by an area with many dead stars.

His countenance became heavy and stern.

From Shadow Ghostly Prison to here, he had crossed several life stars in one blink, which was billions of miles. Along the way, he had used the Soul Consciousness to sense and found no traces of living beings on those life stars. Not many of them had life energy fluctuations.

A small number of those life stars still had living beings. However, they were hiding deep inside the star. They were afraid of being discovered.

Only one life star had many life energy fluctuations. He sensed and found that it was the aura of the God Clan. He could see the battleships of the God Clan with some experts.

Shi Yan understood that the condition of the native forces in Agate Star Area wasn't really good. Otherwise, it wouldn't be like this. No strong force guarded this vast area. This spoke to the fact that the God Clan had successfully invaded Agate Star Area.

He calculated. He didn't strike the God Clan but he came to this area of dead stars as he had an appointment with Shang Chen.

He stopped by a barren, cold dead star and plunged into a cave leading deep down underground. Then, he found the profound triangle space formation that could connect to other spaces. This profound space formation was complex and marvelous. It had countless light dots hovering like a star map.

After he had reached Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm, he had a new conception of Space power Upanishad. His eyes were even keener.

He looked at the star map and smiled. His Soul Consciousness flickered as if he was fondling the star map.

Sizzle! Sizzle! Sizzle!

The entire space formation moved like a galaxy as he released a magical energy fluctuation, which disappeared into the core of the formation to deliver Shi Yan's message to another star area.

Looking at the message being delivered, Shi Yan sat down cross-legged and waited in silence, his face indifferent.

He observed that profound space formation and the materials that it was made out of. He used his Soul Consciousness to sketch the formation that looked like a star map in his head. Sometimes, he smiled as he understood something.

He found that with his realm, cultivation base, and the knowledge of Space power Upanishad, he could build a space passage that connected to other star areas when he got enough materials. Of course, he had the capacity to open the sealed space passages in Shadow Ghostly Prison too.

It was even easier.

If he wanted to build this kind of profound formation, he had to know the exact location of the target star area. He had to survey and certify the route of the space passage in the other star area to do that.

Looking at the marvelous formation, he had sketched the complex formation in his head, which was like drawing a star map and carving it into his memory. In the future, he could open space passages and wander around the big star areas. He believed that Agate Star Area wouldn't be so conservative anymore. It had to open to others.

He planned on turning Agate Star Area to a new page!

Chapter 1195: Sea Territory

Fantasy Mist Star Area was adjacent to Fiery Rain Star Area and Agate Star Area. It was the area covered with gray mist that could even block sunlight.

The strongest force of Fantasy Mist Star Area was Drifting Fire. It was a close-knitted league established by many big clans of Fantasy Mist Star Area to manage the entire star area. Because of the existence of Drifting Fire, Fantasy Mist Star Area hadn't had a war for a long time. The forces everywhere were united.

Unlike Agate Star Area, Fantasy Mist Star Area had connected closely to the galaxy. This place had an area called Sea Territory, which had many space passages leading to many other star areas.

The Sea Territory was similar to the chaotic space basin of Shadow Ghostly Prison. This place also had many life stars. These life stars had countless strangely shaped battleships. Some were made of beast bones while others looked like animals or even birds. Some of them looked like they were made of wood, which was so massive that they could reach even ten thousand meters. From a distance, they looked like gigantic asteroids.

Many battleships were anchored by the life stars or even hovering in the void. The Sea Territory was a busy area where many battleships moved in the hustle and bustle.

From time to time, the massive battleships moved out of the space passage connecting to other star areas. Clansmen from different clans screamed, laughed, and cheered as they were transporting different types of materials and unique ores of Fantasy Mist Star Area.

The Sea Territory was a big harbor of the star area that connected different big star areas. The battleships of different forces often visited the port to trade between the star stars.

Of course, being the gateway to Fantasy Mist Star Area, the Sea Territory was managed by Drifting Fire. The warriors of the force rode war chariots around and watched over warriors from other star areas to prevent any problem.

The Sea Territory was extremely rich and luxurious. Each of the life stars here was lively and busy. The biggest markets of Fantasy Mist Star Area scattered on those life stars. They welcomed the warriors of the major star areas and forces to trade massive amount of materials.

The biggest life star in Sea Territory was called Cloudy Water Star. The surface of this star had many buildings of major races. Some were conical and some were rocky. There were many wooden buildings that were designed like a bird's nest. The clansmen of different, various clans dwelled in those buildings.

Cloudy Water Star was the wealthiest planet in Sea Territory. Every day, one billion warriors went in and out and brought countless types of matters on several thousand battleships.

Cloudy Water Sea had the biggest market and the biggest auction house in the Sea Territory. Drifting Fire had controlled this star for years. To be exact, An Liya's family of Drifting Fire managed this star.

An Liya's family was one of the biggest clans of Drifting Fire. Shang Ying Yue's grandfather was one of the big leaders of Drifting Fire. Unfortunately, the Bai family had killed him. However, An Liya's family still held a high position in the hierarchy of Drifting Fire. An Liya was the top alchemist of Fantasy Mist Star Area. She was really famous as she was the golden banner for her family, which made all the clans of Drifting Fire respect her family.

In addition, An Liya got married to a good husband. Shang Chen was the Fate Traveller. He had wandered around the major star areas and always remained mysterious.

A long time ago, some families in Drifting Fire had seized the

chance and attempted to snatch Cloudy Water Star from An Liya's family since An Liya's father was murdered. Those families were really strong and many other members of Drifting Fire had chosen to stay idle to observe.

Cloudy Water Star was the most bustling star of the Sea Territory. It was the core center and the pillars of An Liya's family.

People thought that An Liya's family couldn't stand the attack and they would give up Cloudy Water Star to protect their family's force.

However, people were astounded when the leader of the family that wanted to rob Cloudy Water Star had died all of a sudden in the critical time. He was murdered.

That expert was at Second Sky of Incipient God Realm. It was one of the leaders of Drifting Fire.

An Liya was an alchemist, so her fighting competence wasn't really strong. At that time, Shang Ying Yue and Shang Qiu were still young and the power of their family was at the lowest point. Shang Chen wasn't in Fantasy Mist Star Area. No one knew where he was wandering.

No one knew what had happened.

But from that day onward, no one in Drifting Fire dared to challenge An Liya's family anymore. Her family still controlled Cloudy Water Star. Whether Shang Chen was here or not, no one dared to plot this star.

At that time, Drifting Fire had spread out a reasonable explanation. It said that Shang Chen had befriended with the most mysterious people and evils in the cosmos. It was that evil force who had helped An Liya's solve that problem while Shang Chen wasn't home.

A Second Sky of Incipient God Realm expert who was really strong in the organization of Drifting Fire was killed unknowingly.

No one could investigate this case and find the real murderer.

No one had the guts to seize or plot against Cloudy Water Star anymore.

Cloudy Water Star.

It was a vast land where many battleships in different shapes were anchored around the imposing buildings.

There was a majestic building made of icy cold rock situated at the center of the continent. It was protected with many barriers outside. There were King God Realm and Original God Real guards patrolling around. It was the private territory of An Liya's family. They were the real owners of Cloudy Water Star.

Inside a freezing chamber, Shang Ying Yue was sitting while Icy Soul Cold Crystals were planted around her. The energy of Icy Soul Cold Crystals had frozen the entire secret chamber.

This secret chamber that was several thousand square meters deep underground was now a world of snow and the ground was now made of ice crystals. There were four warriors in there talking to each other with low voices while observing Shang Ying Yue.

Shang Chen, Shang Qiu, and An Liya were Shang Ying Yue's closest loved ones. Besides them, there was a white-headed elder woman who was supporting herself with an icy jade staff. She had First Sky of Incipient God Realm cultivation base. This old woman was An Liya's mother, Shusia.

After Desolate had thrown Shang Ying Yue out of the planet, she had traveled through rough and bumpy space passages of other star areas to return to Cloudy Water Star in Fantasy Mist Star Area.

She briefed them on what had happened in Desolate and then declared that she wanted to cultivate in seclusion. She wanted to use the Original Incipient Grade materials that she had harvested

to cultivate here. She was taking in the power of the Icy Soul Cold Crystal and the Lightning Balls in her hands.

An Liya was very surprised when she heard that her daughter wanted to cultivate ascetically. After asking her, she knew that Shang Ying Yue wished to break through to Incipient God Realm.

An Liya was so happy. She gathered all the power of the family and asked the experts to come and guard the place.

Shusia, Shang Ying Yue's grandmother wasn't in Cloudy Water Star. However, she had dropped off her work in the headquarters of Drifting Fire to come here and protect her granddaughter.

As her father, Shang Chen was also dragged here by An Liya. The family members gathered in this secret icy chamber to protect Shang Ying Yue. They hoped that she could break to Incipient God Realm smoothly.

"Is she alright?" An Liya had a high updo hair bun, which added to her elegant, orchid-like bearings. She was frowning and she couldn't help but ask worriedly. Her beautiful eyes were fixed on Shang Ying Yue.

"Little Chen, you've cultivated Fate power Upanishad. Could you predict something?" Shusia squinted. She thrust her ice jade staff into the snowy ground, squeezing and crushing anxiously.

"Dad, my sister will be alright, right?" Shang Qiu also asked.

Breaking through to Incipient God Realm from Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm was a struggling battle that had a ninety percent rate of failure. Many had fallen in this step. Their soul altars shattered altogether.

It was hard for her family to not be tense. They knew that Shang Ying Yue was amazingly gifted and that she had a bigger chance to break through since she had been trained in Desolate. However, they were still very worried.

If she failed, her body would explode. It was the better case. In

the worst case, her soul altar could burn into ashes.

They had to be very careful.

As his wife, son, and mother in law were looking at him and waiting for his answer, Shang Chen forced a smile, "I've told you many times. I can't see the fate of the ones who are close to me. I can't predict what's going to happen. Please don't ask me."

These three had asked him the same question several hundred times. Although Shang Chen had a tough mind, he couldn't endure it.

An Liya, Shang Qiu, and Shusia looked discontented. They rolled their eyes at Shang Chen when An Liya hissed, "You useless old man. You can predict people's fates directly, but you can't know how your daughter will be. What's good for you to cultivate such a trash power Upanishad..."

Listening to his wife nagging, Shang Chen only gave a forced smile, pretending that he didn't hear anything. He squinted his eyes and waited in silence.

"After Little Yue came home, she looked different. When she mentioned that kid Shi Yan, she sounded a little awkward..." An Liya suddenly whispered.

Grannie Shusia squinted, her eyes searching Shang Chen. "Hey, Little Chen, how long will you continue to hide the story of that kid? You don't even want to tell your own family about that? Who is he? What's his identity?"

As she came late, she didn't have the chance to listen to the secrets of the ancient continent that Shang Ying Yue had told the others. Only Shang Chen and An Liya knew them, but An Liya didn't know the details. This grannie didn't know Shi Yan well.

"Hmm..." Shang Chen gave them another forced smile. He always felt helpless when he faced his family. "For the time being, I can't provide more information. Guys, give me more time. After I've

solved all the things, I will tell you. It's not a good thing for you guys to know many stories. It could bring trouble to the entire Drifting Fire."

Listening to him, An Liya, Shang Qiu, and Shusia discolored in fright.

"Is that kid's identity really terrifying?" Shusia's wrinkled face quivered. She waved her hand, her eyes anxious. "Then say nothing. My heart's not good. I can't bear a big surprise."

As they were a family, they knew that Shang Chen would never harm them. They also knew the cause of the mysterious death of the expert who was greedy for their fortune. They knew Shang Chen had secrets, which were extremely terrifying. They understood that Shang Chan wanted good things for them, so they didn't ask further.

"It's not the right time. When the right time comes, I will tell you the details," said Shang Chen.

"Then tell me. If our Little Yue has something with that kid, will it be good or bad for her?" asked An Liya earnestly.

Shang Chen frowned worriedly. He pondered for a while and then said, "If that kid can succeed, it will be our Little Yue's blessings and our family's blessings. But if he fails, it will be the biggest disaster. We will fall into disaster altogether. Sigh, I'm having a headache."

Swoosh!

All of a sudden, a dazzling silver light emitted from a drawing on the wall of the secret chamber and entered Shang Chen's body.

Shang Chen jolted up. He closed his eyes to sense and then said, "I'm so sorry. I can't wait for Little Yue. I have to go now."

"Why? What's more important than your daughter?!?" An Liya rolled her eyes.

"That kid has returned from Desolate. He sent me messages. It's really critical. I have to go now." Shang Chen sighed begrudgingly. He bowed to his wife and gave her a forced smile before leaving quietly.

Chapter 1196: World Famous

Inside the chilly, desolate dead star, the stone platform of the space formation made out of Empty Fantasy Crystals had lights weaving into a brilliant net.

Shortly after, a five-colored chunk appeared from the stone platform. A figure became clearer inside the halo like a reflection in the water until a real person emerged.

Shi Yan opened his eyes although he had been sitting here for a long time. He focused on the man who had just arrived. He frowned, "You're late."

Shang Chen smiled relaxedly. "Little Yue's about to break through to Incipient God Realm. As her father, I have to protect her. If I hadn't received your message, I would have stayed there to take care of her. I wouldn't have shown myself early."

"It seems like the experience she gained in Desolate has affected her realm deeply. She got many treasures from Desolate and her will also became stronger. She has a new understanding of Ice and Lightning power Upanishads. It's reasonable if she can break through." Hearing him mention Shang Ying Yue, Shi Yan had a tender smile in his eyes.

When he was fighting Harson to take the Genesis Fruit, Harson had almost burned down his Ethereal Extent. At that time, Cecilia and Shang Ying Yue had neglected their lives to help him.

Unfortunately, Desolate attacked both of them. They were hit by the meteors and they fell. They were wounded badly.

Cecilia's and Shang Ying Yue's deeds had touched him and made him feel warm. Although he didn't have a deep affection for them, he had a new point of view when talking about them now.

Shang Chen was sensitive enough to recognize the slight change in his countenance. He felt his mind sink as he thought it was

horrible.

Shang Chen didn't want his daughter Shang Ying Yue to have any relationship with Shi Yan. More than anyone else, he understood how dangerous Shi Yan was. He knew that Shi Yan was walking on a road that didn't have an exit. Unless he could eliminate all obstacles standing in his way, all kinds of struggles in this way could make him perish ten thousand times.

He didn't want his daughter to cry of such hurt. Also, he didn't want An Liya's family to get involved with this.

This kind of competition was related to the structure of the entire universe in the future. He couldn't see it through, so he didn't want his family to sink with Shi Yan in this mess.

"You've called me because of your Great Grandfather, right?" Shang Chen pulled himself together and asked in a low-pitched tone.

"I've found the Seven-colored Demonic Flower," Shi Yan nodded.

"I've sealed your Great Grandfather in the bitter glacier of the Evil North Zone. Shall we go now?"

"Yes."

"I'm going to show you the way. You'll make our way and bring me to jump through the spaces. We can move faster that way. I can also seize the time to brief you of the general situation of Agate Star Area."

"Alright."

Shang Chen showed him the direction and Shi Yan had to use his God power to build space bridges. He brought Shang Chen through billions of miles and many stars.

On their way, Shang Chen had told him the current situation of Agate Star Area in details. The dominating God Clan had invaded the star area as if no one lived here. This happened until Leona

commanded the Monster Clan and Demon Clan and tried to counter them. Gradually, the God Clan sent more experts and struck the forces of Potion and Tool Pavilion, Fighting League, and Divine Light.

Shang Chen told him the details as if he had witnessed everything with his own eyes.

Shi Yan's face darkened as he listened quietly. Whenever they passed by a life star, he would release his Soul Consciousness to survey the area.

Many life stars were in dead silence and life stars with strong life energy fluctuations were where the God Clan's army based.

Time flew quietly.

Today, Shi Yan and Shang Chen appeared in the North Zone of Agate Star Area as they landed on a cold planet. From outer space, this planet looked like a massive snowball with an extremely cold aura.

When they pierced through the atmosphere, they saw that the entire continent was covered in sparkling glaciers. There were so many icicles that many were like thick bushes of ice swords. Of course, it was chilled to the bone.

Shang Chen took Shi Yan to a remote glacier, broke it, and entered the inside of the iceberg. He then lifted the barriers that he had set up there.

At the center of an icy, blue rock was a lanky body with blood. It was Yang Tian Emperor.

He had been frozen here for many years. His entire body and even the brain and soul altar were frozen. He didn't have vitality anymore. He looked like an ice fossil.

"Give me the Seven-colored Demonic Flower," Shang Chen extended one hand.

Shi Yan didn't hesitate to give him the treasure that he had snatched from Mia.

Holding the Seven-colored Demonic Flower, Shang Chen became earnest. His arm easily pierced through the ice as he placed the flower that had a beautiful female face on Yang Tian Emperor's glabella. Shortly after, the demonic flower was frozen. It then shrank and got into Yang Tian Emperor's brain through a mark.

Surprisingly, that mark was the blood mark, the significant crest of the Bloodthirsty Force.

As soon as the demonic flower had entered Yang Tian Emperor's brain, his frozen Sea of Consciousness started boiling. Countless tiny Soul Rotting Aphids were hissing and screaming. They were terrified and trying to find a way to escape.

The demonic flower in Yang Tian Emperor's head sounded like a sobbing woman that made people compassionate.

Strangely, the tiny Soul Rotting Aphides were frozen and the female crying had broken their souls. They didn't have the power to resist.

While the demonic flower was crying, its energy burned. Gradually, it melted, turning into an ivory fluid and seeping into Yang Tian Emperor's soul altar. That fluid had a magical effect of cleaning the remains of the Soul Rotting Aphides.

Yang Tian Emperor now had green blood trickling from his eyes, nostrils, ears, and mouth. The tiny bodies of the Soul Rotting Aphides washed away together with this kind of green blood. After the aphids were cleaned, Yang Tian Emperor slowly recovered his insane mind.

His soul altar began to spin. His Despair power Upanishad was urged. After this kalpa, his realm terrifically advanced.

Rattle! Rattle!

The ice melted and water was dripping. Shortly after, Yang Tian

Emperor's shattered body emerged.

"He will need a long time to recover. His body has been damaged badly." Shang Chen looked at Shi Yan and said to him. "Although he has the Immortal Demon Blood and his recovery ability is powerful, his demon blood is limited. If he wants to fully recover, he has to accumulate demon blood sufficiently. This ability of his is far behind yours."

"It's alright. I'll make him recover faster and better."

A sharp stone emerged on Shi Yan's palm quietly. It looked like a gorgeous ruby with amazing Blood Qi. They could even see a wisp of blood detaching the stone.

Shi Yan placed that crimson stone on Yang Tian Emperor's left hand that had only one drop of Immortal Demon Blood trying to heal the wounds of his body...

As soon as the Blood Essence Crystal was placed on Yang Tian Emperor's hand, it connected to his veins. Many blood-red threads flew out, covering Yang Tian Emperor's body. Within several breaths, they had covered him completely, creating a blood cocoon.

Immense Blood Qi was released abundantly. The cocoon contained a lot of Blood Qi as if it was energy in the entire body of an Incipient God Realm expert.

"Blood Essence Crystal!"

Shang Chen hissed in surprise. He nodded as he knew that it was now pretty easy for Yang Tian Emperor to fully recover.

The Blood Essence Crystal was the top treasure of the Immortal Demon Clan. It could help condense Immortal Demon Blood faster. This stone was much more precious than Immortal Grass. As long as they had the Blood Essence Crystal, they could even revive from death unless their demon blood all burned.

Thus, healing the wounds wasn't a problem to this stone.

Shang Chen didn't worry about Yang Tian Emperor anymore, but his face was still stern. "I've told you the whole picture of Agate Star Area. What are you planning to do?"

"... What to do," Shi Yan contemplated and said solemnly. "Of course, we have to resist with force. Do you have any good idea?"

Currently, earth and heaven energy was filling Grace Mainland. However, it had been drained for a long time so it was going to take several years to recover until it became suitable for Incipient God Realm experts to cultivate again. He knew that he shouldn't move his friends and family back there right now.

Perhaps after dozens or even several hundred of years later, Grace Mainland would become a normal life star that could host most of the warriors.

After one hundred years, Grace Mainland would be full of earth and heaven energy. When that time came, it would become the dream place for warriors to cultivate other than Desolate. Then, Grace Mainland would bring him the most marvelous powers that he couldn't have imagined. If the ones who he cared stayed in Grace Mainland, they would receive concerns from the Mighty Heaven.

However, it was impossible now.

"The native forces of Agate Star Area are defeated. They have lost their fighting will. Of course, their real competence isn't as strong as the other three families of the God Clan." Shang Chen said frankly, "If nothing unexpected happens, the native forces of Agate Star Area will be cleared soon. The God Clan will claim this star area like they have claimed other star areas."

Shi Yan kept silent. He knew that Shang Chen was telling the truth.

"You should use your influence," Shang Chen suggested all of a sudden.

"My influence?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"Yeah, your influence. Your name Shi Yan is your influence!" Shang Chen's eyes were strange. "Do you know how famous you are in the major star areas?"

Shi Yan became bewildered.

"Sha Zhao is the new rising star of the Gu God Sect. He'll be designated as the leader of the Gu God Sect in the future. The trip to Desolate was his last training. If he can come out alive, he'll become the leader of the Gu God Sect. In addition, the Gu God Sect is the first ranked force of Hollow Fearsome Star Area. Even the God Clan doesn't dare to provoke them.

"The Jiao brothers, Jiao Shan and Jiao Hai, are the sons of the Head of the Jiao family. The Jiao family are the overlords of Sirius Star Area. After they come out of the ancient continent alive, one of them will become the future Head of the Jiao family.

"The Wu brothers, Wu Feng and Wu Bai, are from the main line of the Wu family in Prosaic Star Area. The fact that they could go to Desolate has proven their position in the family. They will become leaders of their family in the future too."

"Mo Fou is the nephew of Black Wind, an old freak in Black River Star Area. He's the genuine overlord of Black River Star Area. He has many disciples. That Black Wind freak is a living signboard."

"Fuller. . ."

Shang Chen observed Shi Yan and told him the identity of each name.

"Sha Zhao, Jiao Shan, Jiao Hai, Wu Feng, Wu Bai, Mo Fou, and Fuller represent the major star areas in this vast universe. They could have been eliminated in Desolate without you. Today, they have returned alive and received the approval from their family respectively. Their voices matter in their families. Also, the God Clan has created resentment with these forces..."

Pausing for a while, Shang Chen spoke with a smile, "The most important thing for them is to look for you. Sha Zhao, Jiao Shan, Wu Feng, and Mo Fou are finding you using their own channels. Even after you guys had left Desolate, you are still the leader in their minds."

Shi Yan was baffled.

Chapter 1197: Scheme Against the World!

How could he do that?

Shi Yan was baffled. He was inexplicably surprised. Instinctively, he shook his head, smiling and talking resolutely. "Impossible!"

As Sha Zhao, Jiao Shan, Wu Feng, and the others were outstanding prodigies of the strong force, they were the new generation of field commanders. Of course, they weren't stupid.

They were geniuses.

How could they lose their minds just because Shi Yan had saved them in the ancient continent? This wasn't right.

On Desolate, people had joined hands to save their lives from the God Clan. Since they had left Desolate, this precondition was gone. Why did they need to find Shi Yan?

Shi Yan didn't buy it.

Shang Chen smiled and said to him, "You don't know yourself yet."

"Please enlighten?" Shi Yan didn't have a clue.

"Of course, Sha Zhao, Jiao Shan, Wu Feng are searching for you and treating you as their leader because you have saved them. But it's not the main reason. The main reason is that you got the Genesis Fruit from Desolate. It's also because you're a member of the Immortal Demon Clan!" said Shang Chen in a low-pitched voice.

Shi Yan became stern.

"In fact, their situation isn't very different from the time they were on Desolate. The God Clan is still the biggest pressure to them. That clan will approach them. Even in here, they still need to unite and join hands with the forces of the major star areas to resist the God Clan!"

Shang Chen took a deep breath and then continued earnestly. "You've fused with Desolate. In the future, you'll become the God of the Ancient Continent. That continent will become the holy land of cultivation because of its abundant energy. If they can form friendships with you, their outstanding warriors can come to the ancient continent to cultivate in the future. They can get the advantages for ten thousand years! And you're an Immortal Demon warrior... Currently, rumors say that the God Clan will decline and the Immortal Demon Clan will rise again. In their eyes, you're the leader who will take the Immortal Demon Clan back to its glory!

"Moreover, you have the identity of the heir of the Bloodthirsty Force. You dummy. You don't know the world out there. You're a hot potato now. They're finding you because of you are valuable. Their gratitude is just an excuse they've made up to approach you."

Shang Chen could see the whole picture.

Shi Yan contemplated. After a long time, he reacted and agreed with Shang Chen. "I understand. What should I do?"

"Simple. If they want to go with you, you can borrow their forces. The God Clan is also their enemy. Currently, the God Clan's reputation is decreasing and the God warriors had attacked them on Desolate. If you call, they will answer," smiled Shang Chen.

"Haha, so I can untie the knot of Agate Star Area's situation?"

"You can strike the God Clan hard at Agate Star Area! If you manage it well, that battle will spread your name everywhere!"

"It's a little troublesome to contact them. We're too far away and I don't know their star areas."

"I'll handle it."

Puff!

Some transparent crystals appeared on Shang Chen's palm and piled up on each other. The crystals reflected Shi Yan's image. It looked like there was a bunch of Shi Yans moving into the crystal

cubes.

"These cubes are called Magic Image Crystal. You can record your image and message here. Just tell them that you need help. I'll hand each of these to them. I'm sure they wouldn't just stand and stare. They will come with their battleships."

Shang Chen smiled until his eyes narrowed. "I think they will be delighted to have a close relationship with you. They wouldn't find it a problem."

"Each of the passages connecting to Agate Star Area is closed. It's not as easy as you said, eh?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"Don't worry. Leave it to me," said Shang Chen.

Shi Yan looked at him bewilderedly. "Why are you so enthusiastic? Why are you helping me in all these ways? Do you owe me money?"

Shang Chen didn't know if he should cry or smile. He cursed under his breath and then talked coldly. "Agate Star Area is my homeland. I don't want it to be a vassal of the God Clan. And it's true that I owe Frederick a favor."

"Alright, let's do it."

After Shang Chen had arranged everything, Shi Yan didn't delay. He cooperated and recorded his call for help in the Magic Image Crystals and then handed them to Shang Chen.

"Your Great Grandfather needs more time to recover. You should stay here to protect him. I'm on this mission for you." Shang Chen seemed to have a good mood. He patted Shi Yan's shoulder and then left with a smile. After he got out of the icy star, he took out a hexagonal ice flying carriage from his Fantasy Sky Ring and moved like an icy meteor.

The ice on Yang Tian Emperor's body had melted. He was covered by a blood cocoon. Shi Yan could hear his strong heartbeat and feel his surging vitality.

Shi Yan sat quietly by him to sense the changes inside the blood cocoon. He finally eased his mind.

He knew that Yang Tian Emperor would recover quickly and his realm would advance further. The benefit that a Blood Essence Crystal had given him was unimaginable.

Shang Chen returned to the underground of the dead star. After hesitating for a while, he activated the profound space formation.

He entered the profound formation, but he didn't appear in Fantasy Mist Star Area. Instead, he was teleported to a dark abyss where he couldn't even see his ten fingers. It was the most mysterious area in this universe. Not many people knew about this place where there was no beam of light or wisp of earth and heaven energy. It was just a dark void.

The jet black abyss where Shang Chen visited, the most mysterious place in the universe, was the core holy land of the Bloodthirsty Force.

Two pairs of eyes emerged in this dark voice. One was cold, evil, and green. The other was as red as blood. They belonged to two experts. Their bodies were devoured by the darkness here, so only their eyes were visible.

Shang Chen's brown-gray eyes weren't significant here, but the other two could locate him precisely. The green and red eyes studied him.

"Shi Yan, get out," Shang Chen snorted and said to the green eyes. "Frederick, what does the Bloodthirsty Force want to do? Why do you want me to transmit everything? Why don't you show yourself?"

"I have to get out to do that!" The one with the green eyes had a voice filled with a death aura. While he was talking, even the atmosphere became colder

And it gave people a feeling of staying inside a tomb where a wailing ghost was licking their necks.

"How about Xuan He? Was he imprisoned too?" Shang Chen looked at the pair of blood-red eyes and shouted indignantly.

"Hey little buddy, you sound discontented," Xuan He guffawed bizarrely. "It's alright. After you give the kid the Guiding Fruit, you're done with Frederick. Yeah, you don't owe us anything. You can leave now. About Agate Star Area, hmm, it's too far. We won't mind it for the time being."

Hearing him, Shang Chen wore a sour face.

Agate Star Area was his homeland. Seeing this star area was stirred up earth-shakingly, he was more agitated than anyone else. Otherwise, he wouldn't have suggested Shi Yan many things. He even proactively received tasks, too.

In fact, Shi Yan wasn't born and grown in Agate Star Area. If he made up his mind and moved all the warriors related to him out of the area, he could dodge the conflict with the God Clan. But if he did that, Agate Star Area would be over. It wasn't what Shang Chen wanted to see. That's why he proactively joined this operation.

As Xuan He said that they didn't want to care about Agate Star Area, he had grabbed Shang Chen's weakest spot, which made him obedient.

"You evil!" Shang Chen gritted his teeth. "Spit it out. What else you want me to do? As long as it doesn't violate my principles, I'll fulfill everything for you."

"Ah-ha! That's good, right? Maybe we'll become family in the near future. Why do we need to care about tiny things, right?" Xuan His laughter was sinister and cunning. "Your daughter has something in his destiny with Shi Yan. Your power Upanishad can't predict your beloved one's life. I'll help you do that. Oh, yeah,

they would be... not bad at all."

Shang Chen paled. "Don't talk nonsense! I will never let my daughter have any relationship with that little brat!"

"Well, we'll talk about this later." Frederick knew Xuan He had an evil mouth and could stimulate Shang Chen until he vomited blood. Thus, he talked them out of it. "Talk about the business now. You met him. What did he say?"

Shang Chen told them about the conversation between him and Shi Yan.

Frederick and Xuan He listened to him in silence. The two pairs of green eyes and crimson eyes floated in the dark void like lanterns. They looked indeed evil and ghostly. In this absolute darkness, they were so terrifying when they kept silent.

After a long time, Xuan He said, "You don't need to do anything this time. Your intention is really good. You just carry it out then. Yeah, you should deliver his call for help to the big star areas. We will have some other arrangement which won't cause conflict with yours."

Shang Chen looked at the deep green eyes of Frederick.

"Yeah, this time, we won't bother you," said Frederick.

Shang Chen nodded. He left without saying anything further. He disappeared from this place using some strange method.

A long time after the man left, Xuan He said, "We could seize this chance to create a foundation. We need to use our force. If we participate in the war of Agate Star Area, we can boost him to the peak instantly."

"I have to contact that guy," Frederick nodded. It sounded like joints in his entire skeleton were cracking. "His Soul Control power Upanishad has helped him control many forces. We don't even know how wide his henchmen have been spreading. It's a good chance to check, though."

"Okay, I'll notify him and let him join Shang Chen discreetly. We will give people a big surprise." Xuan He smiled cunningly.

"Ask the Heavenly Monster Tribe to take action. This time, they've gained the best benefits. We must make them share some force too." Frederick contemplated and then continued, "I'm going to send someone to talk to those old men. If the Heavenly Monster Tribe wants to move to Grace Mainland, they have to shed some blood this time."

"Hmm, the force that Shang Chen is gathering, the force that guy is controlling, and the Heavenly Monster Tribe..." Xuan He guffawed evilly in the dark, which sounded like an owl hooting. "The Ascot family and the Fernandez family was buried in Agate Star Area this time. It was good though. If our kid wanted to make an impressive debut, he needed some famous people to bury them with. Otherwise, how could he become eye-catching?"

"Of course, it should be magnificently big! Haha!"

"Right! We will shake this entire universe! We will make them glue their eyes to Agate Star Area!"

The two conspirators laughed happily in the dark abyss.

Chapter 1198: There's a Force...

Hollow Fearsome Star Area.

By the Black Blood Ghost Pond of Gu God Star, Sha Zhao's ferocious face was focused. He was concentrating on making hand seals, his hands moving as if he was using the grinding mill.

The Black Blood Ghost Pond in front of him had black and viscous water that rose as he was urging it. Countless bugs and worms that naked eyes could see were screeching while tearing and devouring each other.

The Black Blood Ghost Pond was the important cultivating area to train toxic insects of the Gu God Sect. It opened only to the Elders and the Sect Master. The other disciples of the Sect could only visit this area when they celebrated the Sect anniversary after every one hundred years. It was the chance to eye the mysterious features of the place. Normally, this place was prohibited. No one was allowed to enter, let alone cultivate here.

Previously, Sha Zhao didn't have that right.

Ten years ago, he had spent a lot of efforts to get the Guiding Fruit to enter the ancient continent. He was just one of the outstanding warriors of the new generation. He didn't have a strong background.

Ten years later, he survived the ancient continent with a lot of treasures. At the same time, his cultivating attainment and power Upanishad advanced. He was just one step away from Incipient God Realm. He had become more powerful.

Sha Zhao had become an eye-catching character in the Gu God Sect.

The Black Blood Ghost Pond that was open exclusively to the Elders and the Sect Master opened to him for the first time.

Sha Zhao was cultivating the secretly imparted evil techniques of

the Gu God Sect. He was making countless bugs and worms eat each other to screen the most brutes. Then, he would use secret medicines to feed them and make them the Gu King!

He wasn't eligible to practice this secret technique before. However, after he had survived the ancient continent, most of the Elders had allowed him to start learning this technique. They gave him a copy of the textbook so he could learn it himself.

Sha Zhao's position and status in the Gu God Sect rose like a boat rising above the water. Many Elders who didn't have a good relationship with him now chased after him to make a good connection. They had even tried to win his favor. When he was cultivating the evil technique in the Black Blood Ghost Pond, they offered him useful gifts.

The toxic insects screeched and showed its fangs, swallowing others in the Black Blood Ghost Pond. Sha Zhao looked indifferent as he was using the power Upanishad in his soul altar to contact the insects and capture the most brutal ones.

Sizzle! Sizzle!

Two cockroach-like bugs suddenly screamed from afar and sent Sha Zhao's soul into alarm.

Sha Zhao frowned and paused his cultivating. He looked in a direction.

Shortly after, an old man who had a lot of infectious, swollen wounds on his face walked over with a bright smile. He was one of the Elders of the Gu God Sect. His name was Gale and he had a close relationship with Sha Zhao. "I got something for you."

Gale threw a Magic Image Crystal to Sha Zhao from a distance.

Sha Zhao darkened his face and said unhappily, "I told you to not disturb me when I'm cultivating except for..."

"It's the "except" thing that you said," continued Gale.

Sha Zhao's cold eyes brightened. He didn't pay attention to Gale anymore and just opened the Magic Image Crystal. He then saw Shi Yan and heard his voice.

He listened quietly. After the image in the cube disappeared, Sha Zhao stopped his cultivation and spoke to the old man, "Gale, I need a force. I want to enter Agate Star Area and fight the God Clan!"

"You should talk to the Sect Master yourself. Ah, right. I think it's not gonna be a problem," said Gale with a strange expression.

"Why do you say so?" Sha Zhao didn't understand.

"The Great Elder doesn't like you, you know that, right? But this time, he proactively asked the Sect to send our warriors to Agate Star Area. He wants to attack the God Clan too. His reason for this operation is that the God Clan had plotted to kill you on Desolate. He said that the God Clan didn't think the Gu God Sect was strong enough."

Gale didn't understand this event either. When he told Sha Zhao the details, he also looked bewildered.

Sha Zhao rubbed his head and felt a little amused. "Which game does he want to play?"

"I don't know, but I'm sure he's dead serious. He's gathering the troops now. He looks even more rushed than you," Gale waved his hand.

"I don't care about him. I'm going to talk to our Sect Master."

"The Sect Master watched the Magic Image Crystal. He agreed. He also assigned the army under your command. They're waiting for you to get out of here to start the operation," said Gale strangely.

"Oh gosh! What's going on? Why are they more enthusiastic than me? What did Shi Yan offer them?" Sha Zhao was baffled.

"Only God knows," Gale forced a smile.

Prosaic Star Area.

It was an extremely busy life star where people could find a one-thousand-square-mile arena. The area was so lively and noisy with the boiling crowd of dozens of thousands of warriors.

This arena hosted any kind of bloody battle that people could imagine. They had human and beast gladiators fighting against each other. They would have matches between humans and beasts, beasts against beasts, and warriors against warriors. This huge arena was divided into smaller blocks where many warriors were screaming and betting. It looked like a massive food market, indeed.

The women from different races with exposing dresses walked around to offer various types of wines and products. The smell of sweat, the screaming, and the roaring of beasts expanded continually.

This was a completely chaotic scene.

This was the life star that the Wu family had managed. The Wu family was the strongest force of Prosaic Star Area. They always favored using martial arts to create a whole new world.

Both the warriors and the ordinary residents of Prosaic Star Area were combative. Their most preferred entertainment activity was to visit different arenas to get thrilled by watching different kinds of bloody matches.

Inside the biggest arena, there was a skybox built on a high tower made of divine crystals. Wu Feng was lying on a big, soft bed there. The beautiful maids from the Sea Tribe, Dark Clan, and Water Clan were serving him with fruits and wine. He was having fun in the middle of white and soft flesh while watching the box-like arenas down there to cheer at the interesting matches with the

boiling crowd.

Some warriors at Ethereal God Realm from the Wu family were waiting, their faces arrogant.

Wu Feng's location was atop the arena. From here, he was like an archangel with extreme superiority, watching the creatures underneath his feet.

The Wu brothers controlled this arena. Wu Feng was the owner of this place.

"Young Master, someone delivered a Magic Image Crystal. He asked me to hand it to you." A haughty, brawny man stepped forward and kneeled in front of him, holding out a Magic Image Crystal. He was stooping and not watching Wu Feng's hands moving under the skirts of the beautiful maids from the Sea Tribe and Water Clan.

Wu Feng threw him a glance and impatiently took the Magic Image Crystal from his hand. He grunted, "Someone wants to ask me to do something. Again!"

After he had returned from the ancient continent, Wu Feng was appointed to be the successor of the Wu family. For the time being, the big forces in the Prosaic Star Area had squeezed themselves through the crowd to meet Wu Feng, giving him beautiful maids and precious cultivating materials. They just hoped that Wu Feng would remember their names.

Almost every day, people came to offer him great gifts to seek for a chance to talk to him.

He got used to it.

His subordinates also got used to it. Now, they treated the others with arrogant, understanding smiles.

The Wu family were the overlords of Prosaic Star Area. Once Wu Feng took over the control of his family, he became the most powerful man in Prosaic Star Area. He would never lack precious

treasures, cultivating materials, and beauties.

Being his subordinates, they also felt proud.

Wu Feng couldn't help but curse. He was still lying in the laps of the soft, white women. He opened the Magic Image Crystal leisurely.

Wu Feng jolted up. His impatient face was washed away. His eyes were now cold and dreadful ones he had when he was on Desolate. He pulled himself together as he muttered, "Shi Yan, big boss..."

All of his subordinates were bewildered. The beauties of different races sitting by him were astounded as they looked at him without a clear clue of what had just happened to him.

Wu Feng was the future leader of Prosaic Star Area. After he had returned from the ancient continent, he was always running wild everywhere. When people saw him, they had to bend their bodies or even kneel down. They wanted to win his favor. They had never seen Wu Feng giving his good face to anybody.

Shi Yan? Big boss?

His subordinates and the beautiful women were aghast. They couldn't believe that Wu Feng would respect anybody that much.

"Get out of here. All of you!"

Wu Feng snorted, his eyes terrifyingly dark and sinister. He glared at his troopers and then his venomous snake eyes raked through the women who were exposed by him. He sent them away impatiently.

They felt petrified as they ran away. They were worried that they would receive Wu Feng's anger. Before they left, they caught a glimpse of Wu Feng sitting neatly to listen to the Magic Image Crystal. It was just a stone, but Wu Feng still showed his respect and listened earnestly.

They were panic-stricken while wondering who that Shi Yan guy

was and what kind of magic he had that made Wu Feng that cautious.

It was almost at the same time that Jiao Shan, Jiao Hai in Sirius Star Area, and Mo Fou in Black River Star Area received the Magic Image Crystal.

They didn't act differently from Wu Feng and Sha Zhao. After they had received the Magic Image Crystal, they immediately talked to their clans and family and requested to send a force to Agate Star Area.

Magically, their clans and families didn't oppose their request. They immediately sent powerful corps to help them. They had cooperated so well that they made the others felt somehow incredible.

They even encountered some awkward situations.

For example, in Sha Zhao's force, the Great Elder of the Gu God Sect was really powerful. He was just a little below than the Sect Master. In the Gu God Sect, he was under just one warrior but above tens of thousands.

This Great Elder didn't like Sha Zhao. However, this time, he gave Sha Zhao a special concern. He even asked to take the army to fight the enemy himself. Even the Sect Master was surprised. He had to find Sha Zhao and ask if he had some secret agreement with the Great Elder or not.

Similarly, Mo Four's Grandfather was Black Wind the Freak. He had many disciples scattered around. In Black Water Star Area, Mo Fou's Grandfather was the highest existence and he was like the earliest ancestor of martial arts.

However, there was a guy who had never liked Mo Fou. He was the sworn brother of Mo Fou's Grandfather called Bai Ye Feng. This great-uncle always thought that Mo Fou was a bastard and a playboy who would never succeed. He opposed all of Mo Fou's idea

as if he couldn't stand the young man even for a second.

However, this time, when Mo Fou requested to bring their men into Agate Star Area, Bai Ye Feng didn't reject. Quite the contrary, he proactively gathered the force for Mo Fou and secretly helped him adjust the extremely dominating force. Mo Fou was stunned. He thought that his Grandfather had talked Bai Ye Feng into this.

When he asked his Grandfather, he knew that his grandfather hadn't done anything related to this. Mo Fou's grandfather also thought that Bai Ye Feng had changed.

To Mo Fou, Bai Ye Feng changing his attitude towards him was always a mystery.

Some similar events happened in the forces of Wu Feng, Jiao Shan, Jiao Hai, and Fuller. The superior experts who didn't get along well with them all agreed to send the warriors to help Shi Yan resist the God Clan. It was so strange as if they had all changed.

In the dark, it seemed like an invisible power was planning for everything.

The major star areas in this universe had received the call. So many battleships were roaring and heading in one same direction.

Chapter 1199: Experts Get Together

Sea Territory in Fantasy Mist Star Area.

Potter was standing in the deck of a slim battleship that looked like a fish. His face was heavy as he was continuously asking his subordinates for something.

Potter was the Great Chief of Drifting Fire. He controlled everything of Drifting Fire Union. The other chiefs only listened to his orders. He was the most powerful man in Fantasy Mist Star Area at Third Sky of Incipient God Realm.

However, Potter was having a severe headache at this moment.

The warriors under his command were also flustered. Each of them was holding a Sound Stone near their mouths, shouting and demanding to know the situation.

Potter had been staying in the headquarters of Drifting Fire. He was cultivating when he heard about the commotion in the Sea Territory. He hurried to get here through a secret teleport formation.

The current situation in the Sea Territory wasn't normal!

Recently, more and more battleships came to the Sea Territory. They carried warriors from different races. They all had surging murderous auras.

Listening to his subordinate's report, Potter was so restless. Right after that, he came to the site himself and summoned the chiefs of Drifting Fire. He wanted to know what was going on out there.

"Still don't know yet?" Potter thundered.

Francis was the one in charge of collecting intelligence related to Drifting Fire. With a severe countenance, he said, "We've identified some of them. We found battleships of the Wu family in Prosaic Star Area, battleships of the Gu God Sect from Hollow

Fearsome Star Area, battleships of the Jiao family from Sirius Star Area, and even battleships of Black Wind the Freak from Black River Star Area. Also, we saw Earth Sect's battleships from Earth Eye Star Area lead by Young Master Fuller and..."

Potter's face changed after Francis announced each name. The other chiefs of the Drifting Fire also grimaced.

The Wu family of Prosaic Star Area, the Gu God Sect of Hollow Fearsome Star Area, the Jiao family of Sirius Star Area, the Earth Sect of Earth Eye Star Area, and the force of Black Wind the Freak of Black River Star Area were the strongest forces in the universe.

Although Drifting Fire was strong, it couldn't beat these forces. Listening to the report of the possible enemies, the leaders of Drifting Fire became heavy-hearted.

"Oh gosh!" Potter scratched his head and said irritably. "Why did they gather in our Sea Territory? Do they have a conspiracy against our Fantasy Mist Star Area? Impossible. I didn't receive any information before this huge commotion. I didn't do anything that could cause grudges against others."

Everybody was down.

"They came with a huge number of battleships. Each force has around several hundred battleships with dozens of thousands of warriors at Original God Realm, Ethereal God Realm, and Incipient God Realm." Francis sounded like he wanted to cry. "With the force of our Fantasy Mist Star Area, I'm afraid that we can't endure them. If they join hands, they can even attack Ancient God Star Area."

The leaders of Drifting Fire were filled with terror.

"We can't just sit here and wait for them to kill us. Although they don't have any strange commotion now, we should get the situation first." Potter pondered for a while and then said, "I want to talk to them myself. Prepare for me."

"Yes sir!" replied Francis.

He immediately took out the Sound Stone to send a brief message. Many warriors of Drifting Fire also took action. They got on war chariots and flew to those battleships, asking to meet the leaders.

After one hour.

The leaders of Drifting Fire felt like they had a flame burning their hearts while they were waiting.

Francis lifted his head, his face stunned when he spoke to Potter, "They said that they just wanted to use our route. They won't linger and they don't want to waste their time to talk to us."

"Use our route?"

Everybody was stunned. They asked as they didn't have a clue. "What kind of route?"

The Sea Territory in Fantasy Mist Star Area wasn't the biggest space hub in the universe. Compared to the Sea Territory of Prosaic Star Area and Hollow Fearsome Star Area, it didn't have more space passages. The other star areas had almost all of the space routes that Fantasy Mist Star Area had.

Potter couldn't figure out what route they wanted to take in Fantasy Mist Star Area. He thought that it was just an excuse they had fabricated.

Then, the Sound Stone in his hand vibrated.

Potter quivered. He looked at the beautiful amber halo from his Sound Stone. He became serious immediately, "Precursor Shusia!"

The chiefs of Drifting Fire looked touched and fearful at the same time when they heard the name. They put on respectful faces and listened earnestly.

"Potter, don't be so surprised. The battleships of the other star areas come here not to aim at us. You have to keep the information

on the down low. Do not let the God Clan know this. They came to our Sea Territory to take the route to Agate Star Area. We're closer to Agate Star Area. Yeah, that's it. Don't do anything rash to get Drifting Fire in trouble," said Shusia who was Shang Ying Yue's grandmother.

Many warriors of Drifting Fire were astounded.

"What do you think about precursor Shusia's words?" Potter finally eased his worried mind.

People exchanged looks. They showed that they would listen to her words because Shusia wouldn't harm them.

"Then we just carry out this way. We must keep this secret, everyone. Try our best to facilitate them. Don't provoke them." Potter ordered his chiefs.

The others regarded him.

The secret chamber in the palace in the center of Cloudy Water Star.

The Icy Soul Cold Crystals had released an extremely cold aura that made the entire palace chilly to the bone. Shang Qiu shivered and clenched his jaw to endure the bitter cold atmosphere.

"Why did you make such a big commotion?" An Liya glared at Shang Chen. "The battleships of many forces are congregating in our Sea Territory. If we have any dispute with them, I'm afraid that we can't bear it."

Shusia frowned. She gave a dry cough and then said, "Little Chen, I'm an old woman. I can't bear such an attack. Tell me honestly... Are you sure that you can control them?"

Shang Chen shook his head. "I can't control them."

An Liya and her mother wore cold faces.

"Anyway, don't worry. They don't dare to act rashly in our Sea

Territory. Sha Zhao, Jiao Shan, and Wu Feng will control them."

Shang Chen looked at his daughter who was sitting still as if she was sealed by the ice. "Even if it's to give face to our Little Yue, they won't do anything bad."

"Because of that kid?" An Liya snorted.

Shang Chen nodded with a forced smile.

"Sha Zhao, Jiao Shan, Jiao Hai, Wu Feng, Mo Fou, and Fuller are the ones who will control their forces in the future. After they returned from the ancient continent, they've advanced to different levels. However, they've secured their status and positions in the clans. Do they really listen to that kid?" Shusia was surprised.

Although she belonged to the high echelon of Drifting Fire, she knew that Sha Zhao, Jiao Shan, and Wu Feng had reached the peak of power in their clans. They were going to become the real leaders in the future.

Would such characters respect and consider that kid as their leader?

Shusia felt funny.

But Shang Chen nodded and said, "They will listen to that kid. Otherwise, they wouldn't have come to our Sea Territory with the elite forces of their families."

"Do they actually want to get into Agate Star Area through our area? They want to help that kid fight the God Clan? How could it be?" An Liya shook her head continuously as she couldn't believe it.

"Of course, I won't deceive you. I've asked a guy to help me open the blocked space passage between our place and Agate Star Area personally. The reason why they linger here is to wait for other battleships from star areas that are further away. Once they gather sufficiently, they will depart immediately," said Shang Chen.

"Oh my God! The battleships are still coming! What do they want to do? Attack the ancestral star of the God Clan?" screamed Shusia.

Shang Chen could only give her a forced smile.

There was one sentence he hadn't said yet. He found that besides those forces, the Heavenly Monster Tribe and the Immortal Demon Clan were operating discreetly. Many mysterious forces and sects that had secluded for years also began to take action.

... The combined force of those forces made him panic. After this time, he knew how terrifyingly formidable the hidden Bloodthirsty Force was.

He looked at his daughter who was sitting still and whispering inwardly: Perhaps it wouldn't be a bad thing if she was with him.

A space bridge was opened. Two silhouettes flashed and then disappeared. A new space bridge was formed that delivered them like shuttles.

The distance between them and Devil Blood Star was shortened gradually.

"Great Grandpa, how does it feel to enter Ethereal God Realm?" Shi Yan turned around and asked smilingly.

"It seems like I have an endless source of energy that I can use at any time." Yang Tian Emperor was cold and stern. "The Blood Essence Crystals are more magical. The Immortal Demon Blood has replaced all of the blood in my body. The Immortal Demon Body is really powerful since it can enhance my overall competence by one more level."

The Soul Rotting Aphides in his brain were cleared; his soul altar spun vigorously once again. Although he was confined for many years, his consciousness hadn't ceased. In the desperate situation where he was certainly going to die, his realm had advanced amazingly.

He just needed energy and surging God power!

The Blood Essence Crystal was the top treasure that benefited the Immortal Demon warriors. It generated endless Blood Qi to help him replace blood and give the ability to transform into his Immortal Demon Body.

Currently, Yang Tian Emperor had reached Ethereal God Realm and he had just formed the Ethereal Extent. His Despair power Upanishad was indeed an extreme power that gave people a deadly threat.

"Your Blood Qi is abundant. You just need time to stabilize your Ethereal Extent. After that, you will find more marvelous features of your Ethereal Extent," said Shi Yan with a smile.

"Yeah, I can feel the changes. The Agate Star Area is in a critical time, but it's good for my realm anyway," said Yang Tian Emperor arrogantly.

That year, when Yang Tian Emperor bid farewell to Shi Yan, he had received the Despair Inheritance in Agate Star Area. After that, he had begun to challenge the warriors with higher realms than his. He had never been defeated. After each battle, he learned something new from the power of Despair. He had defeated many experts whose realms were higher than his.

The last opponent he met had a secret treasure that contained the Soul Rotting Aphides. Although he killed the enemy, the Soul Rotting Aphides invaded his brain.

Fortunately, Shang Chen had received instructions from the Bloodthirsty Force to seal his body. Otherwise, his soul altar would have been gnawed, which could have destroyed him utterly.

While talking, the two of them continued to move through the space bridges at speeds even faster than light. In a blink, they crossed several life stars. In a breath, they could travel trillions of miles.

A familiar star appeared in their sights. There were so many battleships of different forces that were anchored outside this star. Shi Yan could sense many auras that he had missed. He cheered up.

"Here we are!"

Shi Yan could relax now.

Chapter 1200: The King is Back!

Today, the Devil Blood Star was completely different from other days.

Many battleships were anchored outside the star. They were in many shapes and styles. Some were shattered. Some looked patched up as if they were just fixed after a terrible damage.

The warriors from different races and forces scattered around Devil Blood Star. They had packed and crowded this planet as much as they could. The number of creatures in Devil Blood Star had increased quickly. Big and small, they shared the place and cultivated.

Even before he had entered Devil Blood Star, Shi Yan found that the star was now heavily guarded. He could see many war chariots patrolling in the atmosphere. Soul Consciousness wove in the sky like a net.

Shi Yan felt like he couldn't even hide.

Apparently, Devil Blood Star had become the only hope of many forces in Agate Star Area. The forces and races from all around the world congregated here. They were preparing to fight against the God Clan.

During this time, Devil Blood Star had so many people that any type of character, good or bad, could be found. Even though they were under a massive pressure from the God Clan, many warriors on Devil Blood Star were hot-tempered. They could fight each other even after a word. The enormous pressure had almost cracked people's nerves. Today, they were standing on the edge and were about to collapse.

As soon as Shi Yan and Yang Tian Emperor appeared, a Monster warrior had spotted them. He screamed and rode his war chariot to approach them.

That Monster warrior was a member of Brutal Dragon Tribe. They met Shi Yan once. When he recognized Shi Yan, he was so happy that he had almost cracked. He controlled his war chariot faster to see him.

His war chariot carried many other warriors who were patrolling with him. Seeing his reaction, they were startled as they thought that he had just found something dangerous that made him crazy. They then watched Shi Yan with great caution. They were ready to capture him for an interrogation.

The Monster warrior yelled at his teammates. He had to explain to the warriors from the other forces for a while. Then, he washed his face and bent servilely to greet Shi Yan. "Finally, you're back, sir. Please get on the war chariot."

The warriors who he had told off dropped their jaws. This dude is a member of Brutal Dragon Tribe. Wasn't he always arrogant? Why was he servile to a human kid? Is he completely insane under the pressure of the God Clan?

Shi Yan just smiled and nodded to him before hopping onto the war chariot with Yang Tian Emperor.

The dragon warrior then shouted and took the wheel, madly riding the war chariot to the center of Devil Blood Star.

Blood Devil was soaking his entire body in the blood pond. He was using the torrential currents of the viscous blood in the pond to increase his Blood Qi.

Unfortunately, the effect of the blood pond was limited. The Blood Qi created from the blood pond couldn't help him condense more Immortal Demon Blood. He couldn't use the demon blood to wash his body. Thus, he couldn't promote the real intimidating power of the Immortal Demon warriors.

Gu Te and Bath of the Monster Clan stood by the blood pond.

They sighed from time to time as they didn't know what to do with the current situation.

Recently, more and more warriors from different clans came to take shelter at Devil Blood Star. The remaining warriors of the other forces had gathered here. They had almost taken over Devil Blood Star.

Those who had lost the battle with the God Clan in their life star didn't dare to stay anymore. They had traveled thousands of miles to seek shelter in Devil Blood Star.

The Fire Clan, the Ice Clan, the Wood Clan, and many other clans had united into one force before. They had guarded another area of Agate Star Area. However, the God Clan had defeated them. They had come here with the remaining shattered battleships that survived the terrifying war. Currently, all of them had arrived in Devil Blood Star.

For the time being, Devil Blood Star was packed.

Those warriors who suffered a tragic defeat had to bear enormous pressure. They felt so distressed and hopeless. Sometimes, they burst out like a bunch of crazy people. If someone provoked them, they wouldn't hesitate to slaughter the opponent in Devil Blood Star.

During this time, the forces and races sheltering here had lost several hundred warriors due to pointless disputes. They were on edge and easy to collapse. If they didn't have the ghost-like shadow of the God Clan in their minds, the issues here would have escalated to something that they could never fix.

The leaders of those forces and races were outstanding warriors who were very famous in Agate Star Area. Their position and status were even higher than that of Blood Devil and Bath.

After they had come here, many things happened that made Blood Devil, Bath, and Gu Te feel like their hands were tied. The

three of them couldn't control the others. Helplessly, they then saw that Devil Blood Star was gradually taken over.

Blood Devil wanted to break through to Third Sky of Incipient God Realm to use his intimidating power to control his planet once again. He had talked to Fu Wei of Potion and Tool Pavilion to confirm the God Clan's commotions continuously.

Gu Te and Bath came to the blood pond to find Blood Devil to discuss some important matters. Seeing Blood Devil cultivating, they didn't hurry to bother him and they just waited for him in silence.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The rumbling sounds of a war chariot came from above their heads. Besides the noise, they heard someone screaming strangely.

Gu Te became ferocious. He stood up and scolded, "Those damn outsiders think that Devil Blood Star is their backyard garden! The blood pond is the prohibited area. They dare to swagger here. Those motherf*ckers! We should expel them and let them live or die on their own!"

Bath was also enraged. He lifted his face and thunder.

A dragon roar echoed wildly and created terrifying sound waves that attacked that war chariot directly. Bath was outraged.

No one knew Gu Te and Bath had their power and realm increase recently and continuously even though they didn't do anything. Sometimes, after one night, they felt that their power had increased to another level.

They thought that it was just a hallucination. However, during the recent battles they had, they were startled to know that their overall competence had been enhanced vigorously.

It was also the reason why Blood Devil had to hurry to go to the blood pond and cultivate.

Until now, the friendship between Blood Devil, Bath, and Gu Te was really good and their overall competences weren't much different. After many years, it was always like that.

However, when Blood Devil fought with Bath and Gu Te, he felt he didn't have enough power. He was the first one who had recognized Bath and Gu Te getting much stronger. He had even asked them if they had cultivated the secret technique or swallowed any panacea of the Monster Clan.

When Blood Devil heard Bath and Gu Te said that they didn't do anything, he couldn't stand still anymore. He had to train harder in the blood pond.

He could recognize the pressure from Bath and Gu Te. Anyway, Bath and Gu Te had the same pressure, which wasn't less than what Blood Devil had.

Bath and Gu Te often talked to Ghost Hunter. Recently, they found that Ghost Hunter's Qi, spirit, and soul had changed subtly every day and he couldn't hide his increasing power. Bath and Gu Te could feel the intimidation from Ghost Hunter.

The sound waves shot to the sky and carried the wild and brutal power that could smash the war chariot instantly.

"Hey! Hey!"

The Brutal Dragon warrior on the war chariot discolored. Seeing the sound wave attacking, his scalp felt so numb.

Warriors of the different forces discolored in fright.

After Shi Yan and Yang Tian Emperor got on the war chariot, Shi Yan asked them to find Blood Devil immediately. The Brutal Dragon warrior knew Blood Devil was cultivating in the blood pond. As he knew Shi Yan's identity, he had broken many rules of Devil Blood Star and took him directly there.

The warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion and Divine Light on war chariot were so worried. They didn't know what Brutal Dragon

warrior wanted to do.

And... Here comes trouble! Bath had struck directly from the blood pond. He wanted to smash this war chariot.

"Don't worry."

Shi Yan was still calm. He opened his mouth to spurt out a starlight ball. The brilliant starlight ball spun and impacted upon the sound wave immediately.

A dragon roar reverberated that shook the entire place.

The starlight ball shattered instantly. Billions of light dots shot out like a sprinkle.

Bath's sound wave impacted with the starlight ball and then dissolved.

"Who dares to act rashly in the blood pond? Don't you know that it's the prohibited land? I don't care who you are! You have to bear the consequences!" As Bath saw his attack being dissolved, his face darkened as he shouted.

People on the war chariot were filled with fear. The warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion and Divine Light were desperate. They knew that it was a tragic death if they messed up with that old dragon. They knew how savage the Brutal Dragon and the Evil Dragon leaders were. They also knew how ferocious those two old dragons were.

"Bath, you're still hot-tempered." Shi Yan laughed.

As Bath grimaced, he was stunned when he heard Shi Yan's laughter. It sounded familiar. When the war chariot came closer, he finally saw Shi Yan. Bath jumped up and laughed, "Oh f*ck, the kid is back!"

Gu Te also beamed an honest smile.

The two old dragons immediately soared up into the sky and landed grumbly on the war chariot. They grabbed Shi Yan by

his shoulder and took him to the ground. They had even rubbed his skin and squeezed his muscles curiously.

The other warriors of Potion and Tool Pavilion and Divine Light gawked. They looked at Shi Yan as if they were watching a monster.

"Greetings, Chief, precursor Bath." The Brutal Dragon warrior bowed to them respectfully.

Gu Te waved his hand and dismissed the others impatiently. "Go away. Don't linger here to irritate me."

"Yes, Sir!"

The Brutal Dragon warrior rode the war chariot, roaring and flying away.

"Who's that?"

"Yeah, the two precursors of the Monster Clan seem to know him well? What's going on? Who's he?"

"What is his identity?"

The Brutal Dragon warrior wore a cold and arrogant face. He glanced at the other and snorted, "He's the one who had disappeared for ten years."

Everybody was shocked.

"Leona's Master?"

"Of course, he is!"

"Oh boy, he's back!"

Everybody became thrilled. They jumped off the war chariot and attempted to bring the news to their superiors.

They were all excited.

Today, Leona was very famous. She was even more famous than Blood Devil, Gu Te, and the other leaders of the forces around the star area. However, Leona listened to a mysterious man and he was

a legend.

Ten years ago, they first encountered the God Clan. He was the one who had sealed the God Clan's space passage and seized the Departed Spirit Jellyfish. He had become a legend of Agate Star Area. After several victories from Leona, the rumors about this legendary character had become more of a fantasy.

Today, he was back.

When they were hopeless and in need of a force the most, the legend that had disappeared for ten years returned to Devil Blood Star!

Table of Contents

[God Of Slaughter](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1101: Hand in Hand](#)

[Chapter 1102: The General Situation of the Sea of Stars](#)

[Chapter 1103: Upset a Plan](#)

[Chapter 1104: The Brilliant Star Fruit Tree](#)

[Chapter 1105: Awkward Exposition](#)

[Chapter 1106: Change Again and Again](#)

[Chapter 1107: Refine the Fruit Tree](#)

[Chapter 1108: The Five Great Territories](#)

[Chapter 1109: Is He Really Strong?](#)

[Chapter 1110: Are you All Mistaken?](#)

[Chapter 1111: Unvalued Little Fish...](#)

[Chapter 1112: Destroy](#)

[Chapter 1113: Hidden Dragon Tying Sky](#)

[Chapter 1114: Needlepoint vs Spearhead](#)

[Chapter 1115: Pressing Earth and Heaven's Prestige.....](#)

[Chapter 1116: Break the Barrier!](#)

[Chapter 1117: Hold Hostage!](#)

[Chapter 1118: What Does it Matter to Me?](#)

[Chapter 1119: A Move to Change All](#)

[Chapter 1120: Shed All Pretense of Cordiality!](#)

[Chapter 1121: Prevail](#)

[Chapter 1122: The Servant Flower and the Master Flower](#)

[Chapter 1123: Getting Serious!](#)

[Chapter 1124: Prepare the Ambush](#)

[Chapter 1125: Why Me All the Time?](#)

[Chapter 1126: The Fearful Formation Under the Lake.](#)

[Chapter 1127: Stealth](#)

[Chapter 1128: The Sudden Incident](#)

[Chapter 1129: Instant Kill!](#)

[Chapter 1130: Use the Old Trick Again](#)

[Chapter 1131: Achieve his Desire](#)

[Chapter 1132: Who is the Backbone?](#)

[Chapter 1133: Predestined Mortal Enemy](#)
[Chapter 1134: Great Responsibility](#)
[Chapter 1135: Cross the Border](#)
[Chapter 1136: The Four Great Creatures](#)
[Chapter 1137: Heavenly Monster Tribe and Imperial Dark Tribe](#)
[Chapter 1138: Join Hands](#)
[Chapter 1139: Deadlock](#)
[Chapter 1140: The Scarlet Flaming Heart](#)
[Chapter 1141: Refine the Ethereal Extent](#)
[Chapter 1142: Little Fatty](#)
[Chapter 1143: A Samsara](#)
[Chapter 1144: The Charteris Family](#)
[Chapter 1145: White Bone Refining Blood Ghost Grave](#)
[Chapter 1146: Trust](#)
[Chapter 1147: Turn Earth and Heaven Around](#)
[Chapter 1148: Seize Power!](#)
[Chapter 1149: It's the First One!](#)
[Chapter 1150: The Bloody Bone Has a New Owner](#)
[Chapter 1151: Immortal Body!](#)
[Chapter 1152: Frantic Showdown!](#)
[Chapter 1153: The World of Five-colored Light](#)
[Chapter 1154: Burning Purgatory](#)
[Chapter 1155: Cang Yun won't Get the Worst of it](#)
[Chapter 1156: Desolate](#)
[Chapter 1157: Someone Lives, Someone Dies](#)
[Chapter 1158: Fusing Three Heaven Flames](#)
[Chapter 1159: Refine the Ancient Continent?](#)
[Chapter 1160: It's Watching You...](#)
[Chapter 1161: Invest All the Affection](#)
[Chapter 1162: The Cradle of Mazes](#)
[Chapter 1163: The Eight Great Chiefs](#)
[Chapter 1164: A Separate-spatial Battle!](#)
[Chapter 1165: Capture the Heart](#)
[Chapter 1166: Desolate's Generous Gifts](#)
[Chapter 1167: Healing!](#)
[Chapter 1168: Show the Inferior Face to the Enemy](#)
[Chapter 1169: The Icy World](#)
[Chapter 1170: Real Competence!](#)
[Chapter 1171: Resurrected?](#)

[Chapter 1172: Harson's Riddle...](#)
[Chapter 1173: Who You Used to be?](#)
[Chapter 1174: The Remains of the Holy Beast White Tiger](#)
[Chapter 1175: After Five Years!](#)
[Chapter 1176: Wonderland](#)
[Chapter 1177: It Seems Like a Dreamland](#)
[Chapter 1178: The Third Sky of Ethereal God Realm](#)
[Chapter 1179: Destination](#)
[Chapter 1180: The Genesis Fruit](#)
[Chapter 1181: The World Tree](#)
[Chapter 1182: Crazy Harson!](#)
[Chapter 1183: I'm Helping You...](#)
[Chapter 1184: The Cold Eye of a Bystander](#)
[Chapter 1185: Replace the World!](#)
[Chapter 1186: Blood Sword Breaking Divine Boat](#)
[Chapter 1187: Sly Change!](#)
[Chapter 1188: The Collision of the Two Worlds!](#)
[Chapter 1189: The Burning Karma Flame](#)
[Chapter 1190: The World Purifying Light!](#)
[Chapter 1191: The Structure of the World](#)
[Chapter 1192: The One Who has Disappeared for Ten Years...](#)
[Chapter 1193: Awaken!](#)
[Chapter 1194: Return](#)
[Chapter 1195: Sea Territory](#)
[Chapter 1196: World Famous](#)
[Chapter 1197: Scheme Against the World!](#)
[Chapter 1198: There's a Force...](#)
[Chapter 1199: Experts Get Together](#)
[Chapter 1200: The King is Back!](#)